THE PUBLISHER TO THE READER.

[As given in the original edition.]

The author of these Travels, Mr. Lemuel Gulliver, is my ancient and intimate friend; there is likewise some relation between us on the mother’s side. About three years ago, Mr. Gulliver growing weary of the concourse of curious people coming to him at his house in Redriff, made a small purchase of land, with a convenient house, near Newark, in Nottinghamshire, his native country; where he now lives retired, yet in good esteem among his neighbours.

Although Mr. Gulliver was born in Nottinghamshire, where his father dwelt, yet I have heard him say his family came from Oxfordshire; to confirm which, I have observed in the churchyard at Banbury in that county, several tombs and monuments of the Gullivers.

Before he quitted Redriff, he left the custody of the following papers in my hands, with the liberty to dispose of them as I should think fit. I have carefully perused them three times. The style is very plain and simple; and the only fault I find is, that the author, after the manner of travellers, is a little too circumstantial. There is an air of truth apparent through the whole; and indeed the author was so distinguished for his veracity, that it became a sort of proverb among his neighbours at Redriff, when any one affirmed a thing, to say, it was as true as if Mr. Gulliver had spoken it.

By the advice of several worthy persons, to whom, with the author’s permission, I communicated these papers, I now venture to send them into the world, hoping they may be, at least for some time, a better entertainment to our young noblemen, than the common scribbles of politics and party.

This volume would have been at least twice
as large, if I had not made bold to strike out innumerable passages relating to the winds and tides, as well as to the variations and bearings in the several voyages, together with the minute
descriptions of the management of the ship in storms, in the style of sailors; likewise the account of longitudes and latitudes; wherein I have reason to apprehend, that Mr. Gulliver may be a little dissatisfied. But I was resolved
to fit the work as much as possible to the general capacity of readers. However, if my own ignorance in sea affairs shall have led me to commit some mistakes, I alone am answerable for them. And if any traveller hath a curiosity to see the whole work at large, as it came from the hands of the author, I will be ready to gratify him.

As for any further particulars relating to the author, the reader will receive satisfaction from the first pages of the book.

RICHARD SYMPSON.

A LETTER FROM CAPTAIN GULLIVER TO HIS COUSIN SYMPSON.

WRITTEN IN THE YEAR 1727.

I hope you will be ready to own publicly, whenever you shall be called to it, that by your great and frequent urgency you prevailed on me to publish a very loose and uncorrect account of my travels, with directions to hire some young gentleman of either university to put them in order, and correct the style, as my cousin Dampier did, by my advice, in his book called “A Voyage round the world.” But I do not remember I gave you power to consent that any thing should be omitted, and much less that any thing should be inserted; therefore, as to the latter, I do here renounce every thing of that kind; particularly a paragraph about her majesty Queen Anne, of most pious and glorious memory; although I did reverence and esteem her more than any of human species. But you, or your interpolator, ought to have considered, that it was not my inclination, so was it not decent to praise any animal of our composition before my master HOUYNHNM: And besides, the fact was altogether false; for to my knowledge, being in England during some part of her majesty’s reign, she did govern by a chief minister; nay even by two successively, the first whereof was the lord of Godolphin, and the second the lord of Oxford; so that you have made me say the thing that was not. Likewise in the account of the academy of projectors, and several passages of my discourse to my master
HOUYHNHNM, you have either omitted some material circumstances, or minced or changed them in such a manner, that I do hardly know my own work. When I formerly hinted to you something of this in a letter, you were pleased to answer that you were afraid of giving offence; that people in power were very watchful over the press, and apt not only to interpret, but to punish every thing which looked like an INNUENDO (as I think you call it). But, pray how could that which I spoke so many years ago, and at about five thousand leagues distance, in another reign, be applied to any of the YAHOOOS, who now are said to govern the herd; especially at a time when I little thought, or feared, the unhappiness of living under them? Have not I the most reason to complain, when I see these very YAHOOOS carried by HOUYHNHNMS in a vehicle, as if they were brutes, and those the rational creatures? And indeed to avoid so monstrous and detestable a sight was one principal motive of my retirement hither.

Thus much I thought proper to tell you in relation to yourself, and to the trust I reposed in you.

I do, in the next place, complain of my own great want of judgment, in being prevailed upon by the entreaties and false reasoning of you and some others, very much against my own opinion, to suffer my travels to be published. Pray bring to your mind how often I desired you to consider, when you insisted on the motive of public good, that the YAHOOOS were a species of animals utterly incapable of amendment by precept or example: and so it has proved; for, instead of seeing a full stop put to all abuses and corruptions, at least in this little island, as I had reason to expect; behold, after above six months warning, I cannot learn that my book has produced one single effect according to my intentions. I desired you would let me know, by a letter, when party and faction were extinguished; judges learned and upright; pleaders honest and modest, with some tincture of common sense, and Smithfield blazing with pyramids of law books; the young nobility’s education entirely changed; the physicians banished; the female YAHOOOS abounding in virtue, honour, truth, and good sense; courts and levees of great ministers thoroughly weeded and swept; wit, merit, and learning rewarded; all disgracers of the press in prose and verse condemned to eat nothing but their own cotton, and quench their thirst with their own ink. These, and a thousand other reformations, I firmly counted upon by your
encouragement; as indeed they were plainly 
deducible from the precepts delivered in my 
book. And it must be owned, that seven 
months were a sufficient time to correct every 
vice and folly to which YAHOOs are subject, 
if their natures had been capable of the least 
disposition to virtue or wisdom. Yet, so far 
have you been from answering my expectation 
in any of your letters; that on the contrary you 
are loading our carrier every week with libels, 
and keys, and reflections, and memoirs, and 
second parts; wherein I see myself accused of 
reflecting upon great state folk; of degrading 
human nature (for so they have still the 
confidence to style it), and of abusing the 
female sex. I find likewise that the writers of 
those bundles are not agreed among 
themselves; for some of them will not allow 
me to be the author of my own travels; and 
others make me author of books to which I 
am wholly a stranger.

I find likewise that your printer has been 
so careless as to confound the times, and 
mistake the dates, of my several voyages and 
returns; neither assigning the true year, nor the 
true month, nor day of the month: and I hear 
the original manuscript is all destroyed since 
the publication of my book; neither have I any 
copy left; however, I have sent you some 
corrections, which you may insert, if ever there 
should be a second edition: and yet I cannot 
stand to them; but shall leave that matter to 
my judicious and candid readers to adjust it as 
they please.

I hear some of our sea YAHOOs find fault 
with my sea-language, as not proper in many 
parts, nor now in use. I cannot help it. In my 
first voyages, while I was young, I was 
instructed by the oldest mariners, and learned 
to speak as they did. But I have since found 
that the sea YAHOOs are apt, like the land 
one, to become new-fangled in their words, 
which the latter change every year; insomuch, 
as I remember upon each return to my own 
country their old dialect was so altered, that I 
could hardly understand the new. And I ob-
serve, when any YAHOO comes from London 
out of curiosity to visit me at my house, we 
neither of us are able to deliver our conceptions 
in a manner intelligible to the other.

If the censure of the YAHOOs could any 
way affect me, I should have great reason to 
complain, that some of them are so bold as to 
think my book of travels a mere fiction out of 
mine own brain, and have gone so far as to 
drop hints, that the HOUYHNHNMS and 
YAHOOs have no more existence than the
inhabitants of Utopia.

Indeed I must confess, that as to the people of LILLIPUT, BROBDINGRAG (for so the word should have been spelt, and not erroneously BROBDINGNAG), and LAPUTA, I have never yet heard of any YAHOO so presumptuous as to dispute their being, or the facts I have related concerning them; because the truth immediately strikes every reader with conviction. And is there less probability in my account of the HOUYHNHNMS or YAHOOOS, when it is manifest as to the latter, there are so many thousands even in this country, who only differ from their brother brutes in HOUYHNHNMLAND, because they use a sort of jabber, and do not go naked? I wrote for their amendment, and not their approbation. The united praise of the whole race would be of less consequence to me, than the neighing of those two degenerate HOUYHNHNMS I keep in my stable; because from these, degenerate as they are, I still improve in some virtues without any mixture of vice.

Do these miserable animals presume to think, that I am so degenerated as to defend my veracity? YAHOO as I am, it is well known through all HOUYHNHNMLAND, that, by the instructions and example of my illustrious master, I was able in the compass of two years (although I confess with the utmost difficulty) to remove that infernal habit of lying, shuffling, deceiving, and equivocating, so deeply rooted in the very souls of all my species; especially the Europeans.

I have other complaints to make upon this vexatious occasion; but I forbear [abstain] troubling myself or you any further. I must freely confess, that since my last return, some corruptions of my YAHOO nature have revived in me by conversing with a few of your species, and particularly those of my own family, by an unavoidable necessity; else I should never have attempted so absurd a project as that of reforming the YAHOO race in this kingdom: But I have now done with all such visionary schemes for ever.

APRIL 2, 1727
PART I.
A VOYAGE TO LILLIPUT.

CHAPTER I.

[The author gives some account of himself and family. His first inducements to travel. He is shipwrecked, and swims for his life. Gets safe on shore in the country of Lilliput; is made a prisoner, and carried up the country.]

My father had a small estate in Nottinghamshire: I was the third of five sons. He sent me to Emanuel College in Cambridge at fourteen years old, where I resided three years, and applied myself close to my studies; but the charge of maintaining me, although I had a very scanty allowance, being too great for a narrow fortune, I was bound apprentice to Mr. James Bates, an eminent surgeon in London, with whom I continued four years. My father now and then sending me small sums of money, I laid them out in learning navigation, and other parts of the mathematics, useful to those who intend to travel, as I always believed it would be, some time or other, my fortune to do. When I left Mr. Bates, I went down to my father: where, by the assistance of him and my uncle John, and some other relations, I got forty pounds, and a promise of thirty pounds a year to maintain me at Leyden: there I studied physic two years and seven months, knowing it would be useful in long voyages.

Soon after my return from Leyden, I was recommended by my good master, Mr. Bates, to be surgeon to the Swallow, Captain Abraham Pannel, commander; with whom I continued three years and a half, making a voyage or two into the Levant, and some other parts. When I came back I resolved to settle in London; to which Mr. Bates, my master, encouraged me, and by him I was recommended to several patients. I took part of a small house in the Old Jewry; and being advised to alter my condition, I married Mrs. Mary Burton, second daughter to Mr. Edmund Burton, hosier, in Newgate-street, with whom I received four hundred pounds for a portion.

But my good master Bates dying in two years after, and I having few friends, my business began to fail; for my conscience would not suffer me to imitate the bad practice of too many among my brethren.
Having therefore consulted with my wife, and some of my acquaintance, I determined to go again to sea. I was surgeon successively in two ships, and made several voyages, for six years, to the East and West Indies, by which I got some addition to my fortune. My hours of leisure I spent in reading the best authors, ancient and modern, being always provided with a good number of books; and when I was ashore, in observing the manners and dispositions of the people, as well as learning their language; wherein I had a great facility, by the strength of my memory.

The last of these voyages not proving very fortunate, I grew weary of the sea, and intended to stay at home with my wife and family. I removed from the Old Jewry to Fetter Lane, and from thence to Wapping, hoping to get business among the sailors; but it would not turn to account. After three years expectation that things would mend, I accepted an advantageous offer from Captain William Prichard, master of the Antelope, who was making a voyage to the South Sea. We set sail from Bristol, May 4, 1699, and our voyage was at first very prosperous.

It would not be proper, for some reasons, to trouble the reader with the particulars of our adventures in those seas; let it suffice to inform him, that in our passage from thence to the East Indies, we were driven by a violent storm to the north-west of Van Diemen’s Land. By an observation, we found ourselves in the latitude of 30 degrees 2 minutes south.

Twelve of our crew were dead by immediate labour and ill food; the rest were in a very weak condition. On the 5th of November, which was the beginning of summer in those parts, the weather being very hazy, the seamen spied [made out] a rock within half a cable’s length of the ship; but the wind was so strong, that we were driven directly upon it, and immediately split. Six of the crew, of whom I was one, having let down the boat into the sea, made a shift to get clear of the ship and the rock. We rowed, by my computation, about three leagues, till we were able to work no longer, being already spent with labour while we were in the ship. We therefore trusted ourselves to the mercy of the waves, and in about half an hour the boat was overset by a sudden flurry from the north. What became of my companions in the boat, as well as of entre mis colegas. Así, consulté con mi mujer y con algún amigo, y determiné volverme al mar. Fui médico sucesivamente en dos barcos y durante seis años hice varios viajes a las Indias Orientales y Occidentales, lo cual me permitió aumentar algo mi fortuna. Empleaba mis horas de ocio en leer a los mejores autores antiguos y modernos, y a este propósito siempre llevaba buen re- puesto de libros conmigo; y cuando desem- barcábamos, en observar las costumbres e inclinaciones de los naturales, así como en aprender su lengua, para lo que me daba gran facilidad la firmeza de mi memoria.

El último de estos viajes no fue muy afortunado; me aburrió del mar y quise que- darme en casa con mi mujer y demás fami- lia. Me trasladé de la Old Jewry a Fatter Lane y de aquí a Wapping, esperando en- contrar clientela entre los marineros; pero no me salieron las cuentas. Llevaba tres años de aguardar que cambiaran las cosas, cuan- do acepté un ventajoso ofrecimiento del capitán William Pritchard, patrón del Antelope, que iba a emprender un viaje al mar del Sur. Nos hicimos a la mar en Bristol el 4 de mayo de 1699, y la travesía al prin- cipio fue muy próspera.

No sería oportuno, por varias razones, molestar al lector con los detalles de nue- tras aventuras en aquellas aguas. Baste de- cirle que en la travesía a las Indias Orien- tales fuimos arrojados por una violenta tempestad al noroeste de la tierra de Van Diemen. Según observaciones, nos encon- trábamos a treinta grados, dos minutos de latitud Sur. De nuestra tripulación murie- ron doce hombres, a causa del trabajo ex- cesivo y la mala alimentación, y el resto se encontraba en situación deplorable. El 15 de noviembre, que es el principio del ve- rano en aquellas regiones, los marineros columbraron entre la espesa niebla que rei- naba una roca a obra de medio cable de distancia del barco; pero el viento era tan fuerte, que no pudimos evitar que nos arras- trase y estrellase contra ella al momento. Seis tripulantes, yo entre ellos, que habia- mos lanzado el bote a la mar, maniobra- mos para apartarnos del barco y de la roca. Remamos, según mi cálculo, unas tres lle- guas, hasta que nos fue imposible seguir, exhaustos como estábamos ya por el es- fuerzo sostenido mientras estuvimos en el barco. Así, que nos entregamos a merced de las olas, y al cabo de una media hora una violenta ráfaga del Norte volcó la bar- ca. Lo que fuera de mis compañeros del
those who escaped on the rock, or were left in the vessel, I cannot tell; but conclude they were all lost. For my own part, I swam as fortunate directed me, and was pushed forward by wind and tide. I often let my legs drop, and could feel no bottom; but when I was almost gone, and able to struggle no longer, I found myself within my depth; and by this time the storm was much abated. The declivity was so small, that I walked near a mile before I got to the shore, which I conjectured was about eight o’clock in the evening. I then advanced forward near half a mile, but could not discover any sign of houses or inhabitants; at least I was in so weak a condition, that I did not observe them. I was extremely tired, and with that, and the heat of the weather, and about half a pint of brandy that I drank as I left the ship, I found myself much inclined to sleep. I lay down on the grass, which was very short and soft, where I slept sounder than ever I remembered to have done in my life, and, as I reckoned, about nine hours; for when I awakened, it was just daylight. I attempted to rise, but was not able to stir: for, as I happened to lie on my back, I found my arms and legs were strongly fastened on each side to the ground; and my hair, which was long and thick, tied down in the same manner. I likewise felt several slender ligatures across my body, from my arm-pits to my thighs. I could only look upwards; the sun began to grow hot, and the light offended my eyes. I heard a confused noise about me; but in the posture I lay, could see nothing except the sky. In a little time I felt something alive moving on my left leg, which advancing gently forward over my breast, came almost up to my chin; when, bending my eyes downwards as much as I could, I perceived it to be a human creature not six inches high, with a bow and arrow in his hands, and a quiver at his back. In the mean time, I felt at least forty more of the same kind (as I conjectured) following the first. I was in the utmost astonishment, and roared so loud, that they all ran back in a fright; and some of them, as I was afterwards told, were hurt with the falls they got by leaping from my sides upon the ground. However, they soon returned, and one of them, who ventured so far as to get a full sight of my face, lifting up his hands and eyes by way of admiration, cried out in a shrill but distinct voice, HEKINAH DEGUL: the others repeated the same words several times; but no I then knew but what the man that saved me from the ship, I found myself much inclined to sleep. I lay down on the grass, which was very short and soft, and slept sounder than ever I remembered to have done in my life, and, as I reckoned, about nine hours; for when I awakened, it was just daylight. I attempted to rise, but was not able to stir: for, as I happened to lie on my back, I found my arms and legs were strongly fastened on each side to the ground; and my hair, which was long and thick, tied down in the same manner. I likewise felt several slender ligatures across my body, from my arm-pits to my thighs. I could only look upwards; the sun began to grow hot, and the light offended my eyes. I heard a confused noise about me; but in the posture I lay, could see nothing except the sky. In a little time I felt something alive moving on my left leg, which advancing gently forward over my breast, came almost up to my chin; when, bending my eyes downwards as much as I could, I perceived it to be a human creature not six inches high, with a bow and arrow in his hands, and a quiver at his back. In the mean time, I felt at least forty more of the same kind (as I conjectured) following the first. I was in the utmost astonishment, and roared so loud, that they all ran back in a fright; and some of them, as I was afterwards told, were hurt with the falls they got by leaping from my sides upon the ground. However, they soon returned, and one of them, who ventured so far as to get a full sight of my face, lifting up his hands and eyes by way of admiration, cried out in a shrill but distinct voice, HEKINAH DEGUL: the others repeated the same words several times; but no
mes, but then I knew not what they meant. I lay all this while, as the reader may believe, in great uneasiness. At length, struggling to get loose, I had the fortune to break the strings, and wrench out the pegs that fastened my left arm to the ground; for, by lifting it up to my face, I discovered the methods they had taken to bind me, and at the same time with a violent pull, which gave me excessive pain, I a little loosened the strings that tied down my hair on the left side, so that I was just able to turn my head about two inches. But the creatures ran off a second time, before I could seize them; whereupon there was a great shout in a very shrill accent, and after it ceased I heard one of them cry aloud TOLGO PHONAC; when in an instant I felt above a hundred arrows discharged on my left hand, which, pricked me like so many needles; and besides, they shot another flight into the air, as we do bombs in Europe, whereby many, I suppose, fell on my body, (though I felt them not), and some on my face, which I immediately covered with my left hand. When this shower of arrows was over, I fell a groaning with grief and pain; and then striving again to get loose, they discharged another volley larger than the first, and some of them attempted with spears to pierce. I thought it the most prudent method to lie still, and my design was to continue so till night, when, my left hand being already loose, I could easily free myself: and as for the inhabitants, I had reason to believe I might be a match for the greatest army they could bring against me, if they were all of the same size with him that I saw. But fortune disposed otherwise of me. When the people observed I was quiet, they discharged no more arrows; but, by the noise I heard, I knew their numbers increased; and about four yards from me, over against my right ear, I heard a knocking for above an hour, like that of people at work; when turning my head that way, as well as the pegs and strings would permit me, I saw a stage erected about a foot and a half from the ground, capable of holding four of the inhabitants, with two or three ladders to mount it: from whence one of them, who seemed to be a person of quality, made me a long speech, whereof I understood not one syllable. But I should have mentioned, that before the principal rian decir. El lector me creerá si le digo que este rato fue para mí de gran molestia. Finalmente, luchando por libertarme, tuve la fortuna de romper los cordellos y arrancar las estacillas que me sujetaban a tierra el brazo izquierdo—; pues llevándomelo sobre la cara descubrí el arbitrio de que se habían valido para atarme—, y al mismo tiempo, con un fuerte tirón que me produjo grandes dolores, ató algo las cuerdecillas que me sujetaban los cabellos por el lado izquierdo, de modo que pude volver la cabeza unas dos pulgadas. Pero aquellas criaturas huyeron otra vez antes de que yo pudiera atraparlas. Sucedido esto, se produjo un enor-me vocerío en tono agudísimo, y cuando hubo cesado, oí que uno gritaba con gran fuerza: Tolpo phonac. Al instante sentí más de cien flechas descargadas contra mi mano izquierda, que me pinchaban como otras tantas agujas; y además hicieron otra descarga al aire, al modo en que en Europa lanzamos por elevación las bombas, de la cual muchas flechas me cayeron sobre el cuerpo — por lo que supongo, aunque yo no las noté— y algunas en la cara, que yo me aper-suré a cubrirme con la mano izquierda. Cuando pasó este chaparrón de flechas oí lamentaciones de aflicción y sentimiento; y hacía yo nuevos esfuerzos por desatar-me, cuando me largaron otra andanada mayor que la primera, y algunos, armados de lanzas, intentaron pincharme en los costados. Por fortuna, llevaba un chaleco de anteño que no pudieron atravesar. Juzgué el partido más prudente estarme quieto acostado; y era mi designio permanecer así hasta la noche, cuando, con la mano izquierda ya desatada, podría libertarme fácilmente. En cuanto a los habitantes, tenía razones para creer que yo sería suficiente adversario para el mayor ejército que pudieran arrojar sobre mí, si todos ellos eran del tamaño de los que yo había visto. Pero la suerte dispuso de mí en otro modo. Cuando la gente observó que me estaba quieto, ya no disparó más flechas; pero por el ruido que oía conoci que la multitud había aumentado, y a unas cuatro yardas de mí, hacía mi oreja derecha, oí por más de una hora un golpear como de gentes que trabajasen. Volviendo la cabeza en esta dirección tanto cuanto me lo permitían las estacillas y los cordellos, vi un tablado que levantaba de la tierra cosa de pie y medio, capaz para sostener a cuatro de los naturales, con dos o tres escaleras de mano para subir; desde allí, uno de ellos, que parecía persona de calidad, pronunció un largo discurso, del que yo no comprendí una silaba. Olvidaba consignar que esta persona principal, an-
person began his oration, he cried out three times, LANGRO DEHUL SAN (these words and the former were afterwards repeated and explained to me); whereupon, immediately, about fifty of the inhabitants came and cut the strings that fastened the left side of my head, which gave me the liberty of turning it to the right, and of observing the person and gesture of him that was to speak.

He appeared to be of a middle age, and taller than any of the other three who attended him, whereof one was a page that held up his train, and seemed to be somewhat longer than my middle finger; the other two stood one on each side to support him. He acted every part of an orator, and I could observe many periods of threatenings, and others of promises, pity, and kindness. I answered in a few words, but in the most submissive manner, lifting up my left hand, and both my eyes to the sun, as calling him for a witness; and being almost famished with hunger, having not eaten a morsel for some hours before I left the ship, I found the demands of nature so strong upon me, that I could not forbear showing my impatience (perhaps against the strict rules of decency) by putting my finger frequently to my mouth, to signify that I wanted food. The HURGO (for so they call a great lord, as I afterwards learnt) understood me very well. He descended from the stage, and commanded that several ladders should be applied to my sides, on which above a hundred of the inhabitants mounted and walked towards my mouth, laden with baskets full of meat, which had been provided and sent thither by the king’s orders, upon the first intelligence he received of me. I observed there was the flesh of several animals, but could not distinguish them by the taste. There were shoulders, legs, and loins, shaped like those of mutton, and very well dressed, but smaller than the wings of a lark. I ate them by two or three at a time, about the bigness of musket bullets.

They supplied me as fast as they could, showing a thousand marks of wonder and astonishment at my bulk and appetite. I then made another sign, that I wanted drink. They found by my eating that a small quantity would not suffice me; and being a most ingenious people, they slung up, with great dexterity, one of their largest

tes de comenzar su oración, exclamó tres veces: Langro dehul san. (Estas palabras y las anteriores me fueron después repetidas y explicadas.) Inmediatamente después, unos cincuenta moradores se llegaron a mí y cortaron las cuerdas que me sujetaban al lado izquierdo de la cabeza, gracias a lo cual pude volverme a la derecha y observar a la persona y el ademán del que iba a hablar.

Parécía el tal de mediana edad y más alto que cualquiera de los otros tres que le acompañaban, de los cuales uno era un paje que le sostenía la cola, y aparetaba ser algo mayor que mi dedo medio, y los otros dos estaban de pie, uno a cada lado, dándole asistencia. Accionaba como un consumido orador y pude distinguir en su discurso muchos períodos de amenaza y otros de promesas, piedad y cortesía. Yo contesté en pocas palabras, pero del modo más sumiso, alzando la mano izquierda, y los ojos hacia el sol, como quien lo pone por testigo; y como estaba casi muerto de hambre, pues no había probado bocado desde muchas horas antes de dejar el buque, sentí con tal rigor las demandas de la Naturaleza, que no pude dejar de mostrar mi impaciencia —quizá contraviniendo las estrictas reglas del buen tono — llevándome el dedo repetidamente a la boca para dar a entender que necesitaba alimento. El hurgo — así llaman ellos a los grandes señores, según supe después — me comprendió muy bien. Bajó del tablado y ordenó que se apoyasen en mis costados varias escaleras; más de un centenar de habitantes subieron por ellas y caminaron hacia mi boca cargados con cestas llenas de carne, que habían sido dispuestas y enviadas allí por orden del rey a la primera señora que hice. Observé que era la carne de varios animales, pero no pude distinguirlos por el gusto. Había brazuelos, perras y lomos formados como los de carne ro y muy bien sazonados, pero más pequeños que alas de calandria. Yo me comía dos o tres de cada bocado y me tomé de una vez tres panecillos aproximadamente del tamaño de balas de fusil.

Me abastecían como podían buenamente, dando mil muestra de asombro y maravilla por mi corpulencia y mi apetito. Hice luego señas de que me diesen de beber. Por mi modo de comer juzgaron que no me bastaría una pequeña cantidad, y como eran gentes ingeniosísimas, pusieron en pie con gran destreza uno de sus mayores barriles y
hogsheads, then rolled it towards my hand, and beat out the top; I drank it off at a draught, which I might well do, for it did not hold half a pint, and tasted like a small wine of Burgundy, but much more delicious. They brought me a second hogshead, which I drank in the same manner, and made signs for more; but they had none to give me. When I had performed these wonders, they shouted for joy, and danced upon my breast, repeating several times as they did at first, HEKINAH DEGUL. They made me a sign that I should throw down the two hogsheads, but first warning the people below to stand out of the way, crying aloud, BORACH MEVOLAH; and when they saw the vessels in the air, there was a universal shout of HEKINAH DEGUL. I confess I was often tempted, while they were passing backwards and forwards on my body, to seize forty or fifty of the first that came in my reach, and dash them against the ground. But the remembrance of what I had felt, which probably might not be the worst they could do, and the promise of honour I made them—for so I interpreted my submissive behaviour—soon drove out these imaginations. Besides, I now considered myself as bound by the laws of hospitality, to a people who had treated me with so much expense and magnificence. However, in my thoughts I could not sufficiently wonder at the intrepidity of these diminutive mortals, who durst venture to mount and walk upon my body, while one of my hands was at liberty, without trembling at the very sight of so prodigious a creature as I must appear to them. After some time, when they observed that I made no more demands for meat, there appeared before me a person of high rank from his imperial majesty. His Excellency, having mounted on the small my right leg, advanced forwards up to my face, with about a dozen of his retinue; and producing his credentials under the signet royal, which he applied close to my eyes, spoke about ten minutes without any signs of anger, but with a kind of determinate resolution, often pointing forwards, which, as I afterwards found, was towards the capital city, about half a mile distant; whether it was agreed by his majesty in council that I must be conveyed. I answered in few words, but to no purpose, and made a sign with my hand that was loose, putting it to the other (but over his excellency’s head for fear of hurting him or his train) and then to my own head and
body, to signify that I desired my liberty. It appeared that he understood me well enough, for he shook his head by way of disapprobation, and held his hand in a posture to show that I must be carried as a prisoner. However, he made other signs to let me understand that I should have meat and drink enough, and very good treatment. Whereupon I once more thought of attempting to break my bonds; but again, when I felt the smart of their arrows upon my face and hands, which were all in blisters, and many of the darts still sticking in them, and observing likewise that the number of my enemies increased, I gave tokens to let them know that they might do with me what they pleased. Upon this, the HURGO and his train withdrew, with much civility and cheerful countenances. Soon after I heard a general shout, with frequent repetitions of the words PEPLOM SELAN; and I felt great numbers of people on my left side relaxing the cords to such a degree, that I was able to turn upon my right, and to ease myself with making water; which I very plentifully did, to the great astonishment of the people; who, conjecturing by my motion what I was going to do, immediately opened to the right and left on that side, to avoid the torrent, which fell with such noise and violence from me. But before this, they had daubed my face and both my hands with a sort of ointment, very pleasant to the smell, which in a few minutes, removed all the smart of their arrows. These circumstances, added to the refreshment I had received by their victuals and drink, which were very nourishing, disposed me to sleep. I slept about eight hours, as I was afterwards assured; and it was no wonder, for the physicians, by the emperor's order, had mingled a sleepy potion in the hogsheads of wine.

It seems, that upon the first moment I was discovered sleeping on the ground, after my landing, the emperor had early notice of it by an express; and determined in council, that I should be tied in the manner I have related, (which was done in the night while I slept;) that plenty of meat and drink should be sent to me, and a machine prepared to carry me to the capital city.

This resolution perhaps may appear very bold and dangerous, and I am confident would not be imitated by any prince in
Europe on the like occasion. However, in my opinion, it was extremely prudent, as well as generous: for, supposing these people had endeavoured to kill me with their spears and arrows, while I was asleep, I should certainly have awaked with the first sense of smart, which might so far have roused my rage and strength, as to have enabled me to break the strings wherewith I was tied; after which, as they were not able to make resistance, so they could expect no mercy.

These people are most excellent mathematicians, and arrived to a great perfection in mechanics, by the countenance and encouragement of the emperor, who is a renowned patron of learning. This prince has several machines fixed on wheels, for the carriage of trees and other great weights. He often builds his largest men of war, whereof some are nine feet long, in the woods where the timber grows, and has them carried on these engines three or four hundred yards to the sea. Five hundred carpenters and engineers were immediately set at work to prepare the greatest engine they had. It was a frame of wood raised three inches from the ground, about seven feet long, and four wide, moving upon twenty-two wheels. The shout I heard was upon the arrival of this engine, which, it seems, set out in four hours after my landing. It was brought parallel to me, as I lay. But the principal difficulty was to raise and place me in this vehicle. Eighty poles, each of one foot high, were erected for this purpose, and very strong cords, of the bigness of packthread, were fastened by hooks to many bandages, which the workmen had girt round my neck, my hands, my body, and my legs. Nine hundred of the strongest men were employed to draw up these cords, by many pulleys fastened on the poles; and thus, in less than three hours, I was raised and slung into the engine, and there tied fast. All this I was told; for, while the operation was performing, I lay in a profound sleep, by the force of that soporiferous medicine infused into my liquor. Fifteen hundred of the emperor’s largest horses, each about four inches and a half high, were employed to draw me towards the metropolis, which, as I said, was half a mile distant.

About four hours after we began
our journey, I awaked by a very ridiculous accident; for the carriage being stopped a while, to adjust something that was out of order, two or three of the young natives had the curiosity to see how I looked when I was asleep; they climbed up into the engine, and advancing very softly to my face, one of them, an officer in the guards, put the sharp end of his half-pike a good way up into my left nostril, which tickled my nose like a straw, and made me sneeze violently; whereupon they stole off unperceived, and it was three weeks before I knew the cause of my waking so suddenly. We made a long march the remaining part of the day, and, rested at night with five hundred guards on each side of me, half with torches, and half with bows and arrows, ready to shoot me if I should offer to stir. The next morning at sunrise we continued our march, and arrived within two hundred yards of the city gates about noon. The emperor, and all his court, came out to meet us; but his great officers would by no means suffer his majesty to endanger his person by mounting on my body.

At the place where the carriage stopped there stood an ancient temple, esteemed to be the largest in the whole kingdom; which, having been polluted some years before by an unnatural murder, was, according to the zeal of those people, looked upon as profane, and therefore had been applied to common use, and all the ornaments and furniture carried away. In this edifice it was determined I should lodge. The great gate fronting to the north was about four feet high, and almost two feet wide, through which I could easily creep. On each side of the gate was a small window, not above six inches from the ground: into that on the left side, the king’s smith conveyed four-score and eleven chains, like those that hang to a lady’s watch in Europe, and almost as large, which were locked to my left leg with six-and-thirty padlocks. Over against this temple, on the other side of the great highway, at twenty feet distance, there was a turret at least five feet high. Here the emperor ascended, with many principal lords of his court, to have an opportunity of viewing me, as I was told, for I could not see them. It was reckoned that above a
hundred thousand inhabitants came out of the town upon the same errand; and, in spite of my guards, I believe there could not be fewer than ten thousand at several times, who mounted my body by the help of ladders. But a proclamation was soon issued, to forbid it upon pain of death. When the workmen found it was impossible for me to break loose, they cut all the strings that bound me; whereupon I rose up, with as melancholy a disposition as ever I had in my life. But the noise and astonishment of the people, at seeing me rise and walk, are not to be expressed. The chains that held my left leg were about two yards long, and gave me not only the liberty of walking backwards and forwards in a semicircle, but, being fixed within four inches of the gate, allowed me to creep in, and lie at my full length in the temple.

CHAPTER II.

[The emperor of Lilliput, attended by several of the nobility, comes to see the author in his confinement. The emperor’s person and habit described. Learned men appointed to teach the author their language. He gains favour by his mild disposition. His pockets are searched, and his sword and pistols taken from him.]

When I found myself on my feet, I looked about me, and must confess I never beheld a more entertaining prospect. The country around appeared like a continued garden, and the enclosed fields, which were generally forty feet square, resembled so many beds of flowers. These fields were intermingled with woods of half a stang, (1) and the tallest trees, as I could judge, appeared to be seven feet high. I viewed the town on my left hand, which looked like the painted scene of a city in a theatre.

I had been for some hours extremely pressed by the necessities of nature; which was no wonder, it being almost two days since I had last disburdened myself. I was under great difficulties between urgency and shame. The best expedient I could think of, was to creep into my house, which I accordingly did;
and shutting the gate after me, I went as far as the length of my chain would suffer, and discharged my body of that uneasy load. But this was the only time I was ever guilty of so uncleanly an action; for which I cannot but hope the candid reader will give some allowance, after he has maturely and impartially considered my case, and the distress I was in. From this time my constant practice was, as soon as I rose, to perform that business in open air, at the full extent of my chain; and due care was taken every morning before company came, that the offensive matter should be carried off in wheel-barrows, by two servants appointed for that purpose. I would not have dwelt so long upon a circumstance that, perhaps, at first sight, may appear not very momentous, if I had not thought it necessary to justify my character, in point of cleanliness, to the world; which, I am told, some of my maligners have been pleased, upon this and other occasions, to call in question.

When this adventure was at an end, I came back out of my house, having occasion for fresh air. The emperor was already descended from the tower, and advancing on horse-back towards me, which had like to have cost him dear; for the beast, though very well trained, yet wholly unused to such a sight, which appeared as if a mountain moved before him, reared up on its hinder feet: but that prince, who is an excellent horseman, kept his seat, till his attendants ran in, and held the bridle, while his majesty had time to dismount. When he alighted, he surveyed me round with great admiration; but kept beyond the length of my chain. He ordered his cooks and butlers, who were already prepared, to give me victuals and drink, which they pushed forward in a sort of vehicles upon wheels, till I could reach them. I took these vehicles and soon emptied them all; twenty of them were filled with meat, and ten with liquor; each of the former afforded me two or three good mouthfuls; and I emptied the liquor of ten vessels, which was contained in earthen vials, into one vehicle, drinking it off at a draught; and so I did with the rest. The empress, and young princes of the blood of both sexes, attended by many ladies, sat at some distance in their chairs; but upon the accident that happened to the
His features are strong and masculine, with an Austrian lip and arched nose, his complexion olive, his countenanc/\-\-e erect, his body and limbs well proportioned, all his motions graceful, and his deportment majestic. He was then past his prime, being twenty-eight years and three quarters old, of which he had reigned about seven in great felicity, and generally victorious. For the better convenience of beholding him, I lay on my side, so that my face was parallel to his, and he stood but three yards off; however, I have had him since many times in my hand, and therefore cannot be deceived in the description. His dress was very plain and simple, and the fashion of it between the Asiatic and the European; but he had on his head a light helmet of gold, adorned with jewels, and a plume on the crest. He held his sword drawn in his hand to defend himself, if I should happen to break loose; it was almost three inches long; the hilt and scabbard were gold enriched with diamonds. His voice was shrill, but very clear and articulate; and I could distinctly hear it when I stood up. The ladies and courtiers were all most magnificently clad; so that the spot they stood upon seemed to resemble a petticoat spread upon the ground, embroidered with figures of gold and silver. His imperial majesty spoke often to me, and I returned answers: but neither of us could understand a syllable. There were several of his priests and lawyers present (as I conjectured by their habits), who were commanded to address themselves to me; and I spoke to them in as many languages as I had the least smattering of, which were High and Low Dutch, Latin, French, Spanish, Italian, and Lingua Franca, but all to no purpose. After about two hours the court retired, and I was left with a strong guard, to prevent the impertinence, and probably the malice of the rabble, who were very impatient to crowd about me as near as they durst; and some of them had the impudence to crowd about me as near as they durst;
to shoot their arrows at me, as I sat on
the ground by the door of my house,
whereof one very narrowly missed my
left eye. But the colonel ordered six
of the ringleaders to be seized, and
thought no punishment so proper as to
deliver them bound into my hands;
which some of his soldiers accordingly
did, pushing them forward with the
butt-ends of their pikes into my reach.
I took them all in my right hand, put
five of them into my coat-pocket; and
as to the sixth, I made a countenance
as if I would eat him alive. The poor
man squalled terribly, and the colonel
and his officers were in much pain,
especially when they saw me take out
my penknife: but pronto les
tranquilicé, pues mirando amablemente y
cortando en seguida las cuerdas con que
el hombre estaba atado, lo dejé suavemen-
te en el suelo, donde él al punto echó a
correr. Hice lo mismo con los otros, sa-
cándolos del bolsillo uno por uno, y ob-
servé que tanto los soldados como el pue-
blo se consideraron muy obligados por
este rasgo de clemencia, que se refirió en
la corte muy en provecho mio.

Towards night I got with some
difficulty into my house, where I lay on
the ground, and continued to do so about
a fortnight; during which time, the
emperor gave orders to have a bed
prepared for me. Six hundred beds of
the common measure were brought in
carriages, and worked up in my house;
a hundred and fifty of their beds, sewn
together, made up the breadth and
length; and these were four double:
which, however, kept me but very
indifferently from the hardness of the
floor, that was of smooth stone. By the
same computation, they provided me
with sheets, blankets, and coverlets, to-
erable enough for one who had been so
long inured to hardships.

As the news of my arrival spread
through the kingdom, it brought
prodigious numbers of rich, idle, and
curious people to see me; so that the
villages were almost emptied; and great
neglect of tillage and household affairs
must have ensued, if his imperial
majesty had not provided, by several
proclamations and orders of state,
against this inconvenience. He directed
that those who had already beheld me
should return home, and not presume to
la desvergüenza de dispararme flechas
estando yo sentado en el suelo junto a la
puerta de mi casa. Con una de ellas estu-
vo en nada que me atinase al ojo izquier-
do. Entonces el coronel hizo coger a seis
de los cabecillas, y pensó que ningún cas-
tigo seria tan apropiado como entregar-
los atados en mis manos, lo que ejecutá-
ron, en efecto, algunos de sus soldados,
empujándolos con los extremos de las pi-
cas hasta que estuvieron a mi alcance. Los
cogi a todos en la mano derecha, me metí
cinco en el bolsillo de la casaca, y en cuan-
to al sexto hice como si fuese a comérme
vivo. El pobre hombre gritó despavorido,
y el coronel y sus oficiales mostraron gran
disgusto, especialmente cuando me vie-
pron sacar mi cortaplumas; pero pronto les
trajicé, pues mirando amablemente y
cortando en seguida las cuerdas con que
el hombre estaba atado, me dejé suavemen-
te en el suelo, donde él al punto echó a
correr. Hice lo mismo con los otros, sa-
cándolos del bolsillo uno por uno, y ob-
servé que tanto los soldados como el pue-
blo se consideraron muy obligados por
este rasgo de clemencia, que se refirió en
la corte muy en provecho mio.

Llegada la noche encontré algo incó-
moda mi casa, donde tenía que echarme
en el suelo, y así tuve que seguir un par
de semanas; en este tiempo el empera-
dor dio orden de que se hiciera una cama
para mí. Se llevaron a mi casa y se arma-
aron seiscientas camas de la medida co-
rriente. Ciento cincuenta de estas camas,
unidas unas con otras, daban el ancho
y el largo; a cada una se superpusieron tres
más, y, sin embargo, puede creerme el
lector si le digo que no me preocupaba
en absoluto la idea de caerme al suelo,
que era de piedra pulimentada. Según el
mismo cálculo se me proporcionaron sa-
banas, mantas y colchas, bastante bue-
nas para quien de tanto tiempo estaba
hecho a penalidades.

La noticia de mi llegada, conforme
fué extendiéndose por el reino, atrajo a
verme número tan enorme de personas
ricas, desocupadas y curiosas, que las po-
blicaciones quedaron casi vacías; y se hu-
biera llegado a un gran descuido en la
labranza y en los asuntos domésticos si
Su Majestad Imperial no hubiese provei-
do por diversos edictos y decretos de
gobierno contra esta dificultad. Dispuso
que los que ya me hubiesen visto se vol-
viesen a sus casas y que nadie se acercase
come within fifty yards of my house, without license from the court; whereby the secretaries of state got considerable fees.

In the mean time the emperor held frequent councils, to debate what course should be taken with me; and I was afterwards assured by a particular friend, a person of great quality, who was as much in the secret as any, that the court was under many difficulties concerning me. They apprehended my breaking loose; that my diet would be very expensive, and might cause a famine. Sometimes they determined to starve me; or at least to shoot me in the face and hands with poisoned arrows, which would soon despatch me; but again they considered, that the stench of so large a carcass might produce a plague in the metropolis, and probably spread through the whole kingdom. In the midst of these consultations, several officers of the army went to the door of the great council-chamber, and two of them being admitted, gave an account of my behaviour to the six criminals above-mentioned; which made so favourable an impression in the breast of his majesty and the whole board, in my behalf, that an imperial commission was issued out, obliging all the villages, nine hundred yards round the city, to deliver in every morning six beeves, forty sheep, and other victuals for my sustenance; together with a proportional quantity of bread, and wine, and other liquors; for the due payment of which, his majesty gave assignments upon his treasury:—for this prince lives chiefly upon his own demesnes; seldom, except upon great occasions, raising any subsidies among his subjects, who are bound to attend him in his wars at their own expense. An establishment was also made of six hundred persons to be my domestics, who had board-wages allowed for their maintenance, and tents built for them very conveniently on each side of my door. It was likewise ordered, that three hundred tailors should make me a suit of clothes, after the fashion of the country; that six of his majesty’s greatest scholars should be employed to instruct me in their language; and lastly, that the emperor’s horses, and those of the nobility and troops of guards, should be frequently exercised in my sight, to a la mía en un radio de cincuenta yardas sin permiso de la corte, con lo cual obtuvieron los secretarios de Estados considerables emolumentos.

En tanto, el emperador celebraba frecuentes consejos para discutir qué parti- do había de tomarse conmigo, y después me aseguró un amigo particular —persona de gran calidad que estaba, según fama, tanto como el que más, en los secretos de Estado— que la corte tenía numerosas preocupaciones respecto de mí. Temían que me libertase, que mi dieta, demasiado costosa, fuera causa de carestías. Algunas veces determinaron matarme de hambre, o, por lo menos, disparamarme a la cara y a las manos flechas envenenadas que me despacharían pronto; pero luego consideraban que el hedor de un tan gran cuerpo muerto podía desatar una peste en la metrópoli y probablemente exten- derla a todo el reino. En medio de estas consultas, varios oficiales del ejército llegaron a la puerta de la gran Cámara del Consejo, y dos de ellos, que fueron admitidos, dieron cuenta de mi conducta con los seis criminales antes menciona- dos, conducta que produjo impresión tan favorable para mí en el corazón de Su Majestad y en el de toda la Junta, que se despachó una comisión imperial para obligar a todos los pueblos situados den- tro de un radio de novecientas yardas en torno de la ciudad a entregar todas las mañanas seis bueyes, cuarenta carneros y otras vituallas para mi manutención, junto con una cantidad proporcionada de pan, de vino y de otros licores. En pago de todo ello, Su Majestad entregaba asig- nados contra su tesoro: porque sépase que este príncipe vive especialmente de su fortuna personal y sólo rara vez, en grandes ocasiones, levanta subsidios entre- sus vasallos, que están obligados a auxiliarle en las guerras a expensas de sí propios. Se dictó también un estatuto para que se pusieran a mi servicio seis- cientos personas, que disfrutaban dietas para su mantenimiento y pabellones con- venientemente edificados para ellas a ambos lados de mi puerta. Asimismo se ordenó que trescientos sastres me hicie- sen un traje a la moda del país; que seis de los más eminentes sabios de Su Ma- jestad me instruyes en en su lengua, y, por último, que a los caballos del empe- rador y a los de la nobleza y tropas de guarda se los llevase a menudo a verme para que se acostumbrasen a mí. Todas
accustom themselves to me. All these orders were duly put in execution; and in about three weeks I made a great progress in learning their language; during which time the emperor frequently honoured me with his visits, and was pleased to assist my masters in teaching me. We began already to converse together in some sort; and the first words I learnt, were to express my desire “that he would please give me my liberty;” which I every day repeated on my knees. His answer, as I could comprehend it, was, “that this must be a work of time, not to be thought on without the advice of his council, and that first I must LUMOS KELMIN PEFFO DESMAR LON EMPESO;” that is, swear a peace with him and his kingdom. However, that I should be used with all kindness. And he advised me to “acquire, by my patience and discreet behaviour, the good opinion of himself and his subjects.” He desired “I would not take it ill, if he gave orders to certain proper officers to search me; for probably I might carry about me several weapons, which must needs be dangerous things, if they answered the bulk of so prodigious a person.” I said, “His majesty should be satisfied; for I was ready to strip myself, and turn up my pockets before him.” This I delivered part in words, and part in signs. He replied, “that, by the laws of his kingdom, I must be searched by two officers; and that, of his officers; that he knew this could not be done without my consent and assistance; and he had so good an opinion of my generosity and justice, as to trust their persons in my hands; that he knew this could not be done without my consent and assistance; and he had so good an opinion of my generosity and justice, as to trust their persons in my hands; that whatever they took from me, should be returned when I left the country, or paid for at the rate which I would set upon them.” I took up the two officers in my hands, put them first into my coat-pockets, and then into every other pocket about me, except my two fobs, and another secret pocket, which I had no mind should be searched, wherein I had some little necessaries that were of no consequence to any but myself. In one of my fobs there was a silver watch, and in the other a small quantity of gold in a purse. These gentlemen, having pen, ink, and paper, about them, made an exact inventory of every thing they saw; and when they had done, desired I would set them down, that they might deliver it to the emperor. This inventory estas disposiciones fueron debidamente cumplidas, y en tres semanas hice grandes progresos en el estudio del idioma, tiempo durante el cual el emperador me honraba frecuentemente con sus visitas y se dignaba auxiliar a mis maestros en la enseñanza. Ya empezamos a conversar en cierto modo, y las primeras palabras que aprendí fueron para expresar mi deseo de que se sirviese concederme la libertad, lo que todos los días repetía puesto de rodillas. Su respuesta, por lo que pude comprender, era que el tiempo lo traería todo, que no podía pensar en tal cosa sin asistencia de su Consejo, y que antes debía yo LUMOS KELMIN PEFFO DESMAR LON EMPESO: esto es, jurar la paz con él y con su reino. No obstante, yo sería tratado con toda amabilidad, y me aconsejaba conquistar, con mi paciencia y mi conducta comedida, el buen concepto de él y de sus súbditos. Me pidió que no tomase a mal que diese orden a ciertos correctos funcionarios de que me registrasen, porque suponía él que llevaría yo conmigo varias armas que por fuerza habían de ser cosas peligrosísimas si correspondían a la corpulencia de persona tan prodigiosa. Dije que Su Majestad sería satisfecho, porque estaba dispuesto a desnudarme y a volver las faltriqueras delante de él. Esto lo manifestó, parte de palabra, parte por señas. Replicó él que, de acuerdo con las leyes del reino, debían registrarme dos funcionarios; y aunque él sabía que esto no podría hacerse sin mi consentimiento y ayuda, tenía tan buena opinión de mi generosidad y de mi justicia que confiaba en mis manos las personas de sus funcionarios añadiendo que cualquier cosa que me fuese tomada me sería devuelta cuando saliera del país o pagada al precio que yo quisiera ponerle. Tomé a los funcionarios en mis manos y los puse primeramente en los bolsillos de la casaca y luego en todos los demás que el traje llevaba, excepto los dos de la pretina y un bolsillo secreto que no quise que me registrasen y en que guardaba yo alguna cosilla de mi uso que a nadie podía interesar sino a mí. Por lo que hace a los bolsillos de la pretina, en uno llevaba un reloj de plata, y en el otro una pequeña cantidad de oro en una bolsa. Aquellos caballeros, provistos de pluma, tinta y papel, hicieron un exacto inventario de cuanto vieron, y cuando hubieron terminado me pidieron que los bajase para ir a entregárselo al emperador. Este inventario,
I afterwards translated into English, and
is, word for word, as follows:

“IMPRIMIS. In the right coat-
pocket of the great man-mountain”
(for so I interpret the words
QUINBUS FLESTRIN,) “after the
strictest search, we found only one
great piece of coarse-cloth, large
enough to be a foot-cloth for your
majesty’s chief room of state. In the
left pocket we saw a huge silver
chest, with a cover of the same me-
tal, which we, the searchers, were
not able to lift. We desired it should
be opened, and one of us stepping
into it, found himself up to the mid
leg in a sort of dust, some part
whereof flying up to our faces set
us both a sneezing for several times
together. In his right waistcoat-
pocket we found a prodigious bun-
dle of white thin substances, folded
one over another, about the
bigness
of three men, tied with a strong ca-
bble, and marked with black figures;
which we humbly conceive to be
writings, every letter almost half as
large as the palm of our hands. In
the left there was a sort of engine,
from the back of which were exten-
ded twenty long poles, resembling
the pallisados before your majesty’s
court: wherewith we conjecture the
man-mountain combs his head; for
we did not always trouble him with
questions, because we found it a
great difficulty to make him
understand us. In the large pocket,
on the right side of his middle
cover” (so I translate the word
RANFULO, by which they meant my
breeches,) “we saw a hollow pillar
of iron, about the length of a man,
fastened to a strong piece of timber
larger than the pillar; and upon one
side of the pillar, were huge pieces
of iron sticking out, cut into strange
figures, which we know not what to
make of. In the left pocket, another
engine of the same kind. In the
smaller pocket on the right side,
were several round flat pieces of
white and red metal, of different
bulk; some of the white, which
seemed to be silver, were so large
and heavy, that my comrade and I
could hardly lift them. In the left
pocket were two black pillars
irregularly shaped: we could not,
without difficulty, reach the top of them, as we stood at the bottom of his pocket. One of them was covered, and seemed all of a piece: but at the upper end of the other there appeared a white round substance, about twice the bigness of our heads. Within each of these was enclosed a prodigious plate of steel; which, by our orders, we obliged him to show us, because we apprehended they might be dangerous engines. He took them out of their cases, and told us, that in his own country his practice was to shave his beard with one of these, and cut his meat with the other. There were two pockets which we could not enter: these he called his fobs; they were two large slits cut into the top of his middle cover, but squeezed close by the pressure of his belly. Out of the right fob hung a great silver chain, with a wonderful kind of engine at the bottom. We directed him to draw out whatever was at the end of that chain; which appeared to be a globe, half silver, and half of some transparent metal; for, on the transparent side, we saw certain strange figures circularly drawn, and though we could touch them, till we found our fingers stopped by the lucid substance. He put this engine into our ears, which made an incessant noise, like that of a water-mill: and we conjecture it is either some unknown animal, or the god that he worships; but we are more inclined to the latter opinion, because he assured us, (if we understood him right, for he expressed himself very imperfectly) that he seldom did any thing without consulting it. He called it his oracle, and said, it pointed out the time for every action of his life. From the left fob he took out a net almost large enough for a fisherman, but contrived to open and shut like a purse, and served him for the same use: we found therein several massy pieces of yellow metal, which, if they be real gold, must be of immense value.

“Having thus, in obedience to your majesty’s commands, diligently searched all his pockets, we observed a girdle about his waist made of the lar; con dificultad alcanzábamos a su extremo superior desde el fondo del bolsillo. Una de ellas estaba tapada y parecía toda de una pieza; pero en la parte alta de la otra aparecía un objeto redondo, blanco, dos veces como nuestra cabeza de grande, aproximadamente. Dentro de cada uno había cerradas la presión de su vientre. Del de la derecha minado por nuestras órdenes, tuvo que enseñarnos el Gran-Hombre-montaña, pues sospechábamos que pudieran ser máquinas peligrosas. Las sacó de sus cajas y nos dijo que en su país tenía por costumbre afeitarse la barba con una de ellas y cortar la carne con la otra. Había dos bolsillos en que no pudimos entrar: los llamaba él sus bolsillos de pretina, y eran dos grandes rajas abiertas en la parte superior de su media cubierta, pero que mantenía cerradas la presión de su vientre. Del de la derecha colgaba una gran cadena de plata, con una extraordinaria suerte de máquina al extremo. Le ordenamos sacar lo que hubiese sujeto a esta cadena, que resultó ser una esfera la mitad de plata y la otra mitad de un metal transparente, porque en el lado transparente vimos ciertas extrañas cifras, dibujadas en circunferencia, y que creíamos poder tocar, hasta que notamos que nos detenía los dedos aquella substancia diáfana. Nos acercó a los oídos este aparato, que producía un ruido incesante, como el de una aceña. Imaginamos que es, o algún animal desconocido, o el dios que él adora; aunque nos inclinamos a la última opinión, porque nos aseguró —si es que no le entendimos mal, ya que se expresaba muy imperfectamente— que rara vez hacía nada sin consultarlo. Le llamaba su oráculo, y dijo que señalaba cuándo era tiempo para todas las acciones de su vida. De la faltriquera izquierda sacó una red que casi bastaría a un pescador, pero dispuesta para abrirse y cerrarse como una bolsa, y de que se servía justamente para este uso. Dentro encontramos varios pesados trozos de metal amarillo, que, si son efectivamente de oro, deben tener incalculable valor.
hide of some prodigious animal, from which, on the left side, hung a sword of the length of five men; and on the right, a bag or pouch divided into two cells, each cell capable of holding three of your majesty’s subjects. In one of these cells were several globes, or balls, of a most ponderous [weighty] metal, about the bigness of our heads, and requiring a strong hand to lift them; the other cell contained a heap of certain black grains, but of no great bulk or weight, for we could hold above fifty of them in the palms of our hands.

“This is an exact inventory of what we found about the body of the man-mountain, who used us with great civility, and due respect to your majesty’s commission. Signed and sealed on the fourth day of the eighty-ninth moon of your majesty’s auspicious reign.

CLEFRIN FRELOCK, MARSI FRELOCK.”

When this inventory was read over to the emperor, he directed me, although in very gentle terms, to deliver up the several particulars. He first called for my scimitar, which I took out, scabbard and all. In the mean time he ordered three thousand of his choicest troops (who then attended him) to surround me at a distance, with their bows and arrows just ready to discharge; but I did not observe it, for mine eyes were wholly fixed upon his majesty. He then desired me to draw my scimitar, which, although it had got some rust by the sea water, was, in most parts, exceeding bright. I did so, and immediately all the troops gave a shout between terror and surprise; for the sun shone clear, and the reflection dazzled their eyes, as I waved the scimitar to and fro in my hand. His majesty, who is a most magnanimous prince, was less daunted than I could expect: he ordered me to return it into the scabbard, and cast it on the ground as gently as I could, about six feet from the end of my chain. His majesty, who is a most magnificent prince, was less daunted than I could expect: he ordered me to return it into the scabbard, and cast it on the ground as gently as I could, about six feet from the end of my chain.

The next thing he demanded was one of the hollow iron pillars; by which he meant my pocket pistols. I drew it out, and at his desire, as well as I could,
expressed to him the use of it; and
charging it only with powder, which,
by the closeness of my pouch,
happened to escape wetting in the sea
(an inconvenience against which all
prudent mariners take special care to
provide,) I first cautioned the emperor
not to be afraid, and then I let it off in
the air. The astonishment here was
much greater than at the sight of my
scimitar. Hundreds fell down as if
they had been struck dead; and even
the emperor, although he stood his
ground, could not recover himself for
some time. I delivered up both my
pistols in the same manner as I had
done my scimitar, and then my pouch
of powder and bullets; begging him
that the former might be kept from
fire, for it would kindle with the
smallest spark, and blow up his impe-
rial palace into the air. I likewise
delivered up my watch, which the
emperor was very curious to see, and
commanded two of his tallest yeomen
of the guards to bear it on a pole upon
their shoulders, as _draymen_ in
England do a barrel of ale. He was
amazed at the continual noise it made,
and the motion of the minute-hand,
which he could easily discern; for their
sight is much more acute than ours: he
asked the opinions of his learned men
about it, which were various and
remote, as the reader may well imagi-
nate without my repeating; although
indeed I could not very perfectly
understand them. I then gave up my
silver and copper money, my purse,
with nine large pieces of gold, and
some smaller ones; my knife and razor,
my comb and silver snuff-box, my
handkerchief and journal-book. My
scimitar, pistols, and pouch, were
conveyed in carriages to his majesty’s
stores; but the rest of my goods were
returned me.

I had as I before observed, one
private pocket, which escaped their
search, wherein there was a pair of
spectacles (which I sometimes use for
the weakness of mine eyes,) a pocket
perspective, and some other little
conveniences; which, being of no
consequence to the emperor, I did not
think myself bound in honour to
discover, and I apprehended they might
be lost or spoiled if I ventured them out
of my possession.

Tenía yo, como antes indiqué, un
bolsillo secreto que escapó del
registro, donde guardaba unos
lentes — que algunas veces usa-
ba por debilidad de la vista,— un
antejo de bolsillo y otros cuan-
tos útiles que, no importando
para nada al emperador, no me
créi en conciencia obligado a
descubrir, y que temía que me
rompiesen o estropeasen si me
arriesgaba a soltarlos.
CHAPTER III.

My gentleness and good behaviour had gained so far on the emperor and his court, and indeed upon the army and people in general, that I began to conceive hopes of getting my liberty in a short time. I took all possible methods to cultivate this favourable disposition. The natives came, by degrees, to be less apprehensive of any danger from me. I would sometimes lie down, and let five or six of them dance on my hand; and at last the boys and girls would venture to come and play at hide-and-seek in my hair. I had now made a good progress in understanding and speaking the language. The emperor had a mind one day to entertain me with several of the country shows, wherein they exceed all nations I have known, both for dexterity and magnificence. I was diverted with none so much as that of the rope-dancers, performed upon a slender white thread, extended about two feet, and twelve inches from the ground. Upon which I shall desire liberty, with the reader’s patience, to enlarge a little.

This diversion is only practised by those persons who are candidates for great employments, and high favour at court. They are trained in this art from their youth, and are not always of noble birth, or liberal education. When a great office is vacant, either by death or disgrace (which often happens,) five or six of those candidates petition the emperor to entertain his majesty and the court with a dance on the rope; and whoever jumps the highest, without falling, succeeds in the office. Very often the chief ministers themselves are commanded to show their skill, and to

Capítulo III

Mi dulzura y buen comportamiento habían influido tanto en el emperador y su corte, y sin duda en el ejército y el pueblo en general, que empecé a concebir esperanzas de lograr mi libertad en plazo breve. Yo recurria a todos los métodos para cultivar esta favorable disposición. Gradualmente, los naturales fueron dejando de temer daño alguno de mí. A veces me tumbaba y dejaba que cinco o seis bailasen en mi mano, y, por último, los chicos y las chicas se arriesgaron a jugar al escondite entre mi cabello. A la sazón había progresado bastante en el conocimiento y habla de su lengua. Un día quiso el rey obsequiarme con algunos espectáculos del país, en los cuales, por la destreza y magnificencia, aventajan a todas las naciones que conozco. Ninguno me divirtió tanto como el de los volatineros, ejecutado sobre un finísimo hilo blanco tendido en una longitud aproximada de dos pies y a doce pulgadas del suelo. Y acerca de él quiero, contando con la paciencia del lector, extenderme un poco.

Esta diversión es solamente practicada por aquellas personas que son candidatos a altos empleos y al gran favor de la corte. Se les adiestra en este arte desde su juventud y no siempre son de noble cuna y educación elevada. Cuando hay vacante un alto puesto, bien sea por fallecimiento o por ignominia —lo cual acontece a menudo—, cinco o seis de estos candidatos solicitan del emperador permiso para divertir a Su Majestad y a la corte con un baile de cuerda, y aquel que salta hasta mayor altura sin caerse se lleva el empleo. Muy frecuentemente se manda a los ministros principales que muestren su habilidad y convengan
convince the emperor that they have not lost their faculty. Flimnap, the treasurer, is allowed to cut a caper on the straight rope, at least an inch higher than any other lord in the whole empire. I have seen him do the sumnerset several times together, upon a trencher fixed on a rope which is no thicker than a common pack-thread in England. My friend Reldresal, principal secretary for private affairs, is, in my opinion, if I am not partial, the second after the treasurer; the rest of the great officers are much upon a par.

These diversions are often attended with fatal accidents, whereof great numbers are on record. I myself have seen two or three candidates break a limb. But the danger is much greater, when the ministers themselves are commanded to show their dexterity; for, by contending to excel themselves and their fellows, they strain so far that there is hardly one of them who has not received a fall, and some of them two or three. I was assured that, a year or two before my arrival, Flimnap would infallibly have broke his neck, if one of the king’s cushions, that accidentally lay on the ground, had not weakened the force of his fall.

There is likewise another diversion, which is only shown before the emperor and empress, and first minister, upon particular occasions. The emperor lays on the table three fine silken threads of six inches long; one is blue, the other red, and the third green. These threads are proposed as prizes for those persons whom the emperor has a mind to distinguish by a peculiar mark of his favour. The ceremony is performed in his majesty’s great chamber of state, where the candidates are to undergo a trial of dexterity very different from the former, and such as I have not observed the least resemblance of in any other country of the new or old world. The emperor holds a stick in his hands, both ends parallel to the horizon, while the candidates advancing, one by one, sometimes leap over the stick, sometimes creep under it, backward and forward, several times, according as the stick is advanced or depressed. Sometimes the emperor holds one end of the stick, and his first minister the other; sometimes the minister has it al emperador de que no han perdido sus facultades. Flimnap, el tesorero, es fama que hace una cabriola en la cuerda tirante por lo menos una pulgada más alta que cualquier señor del imperio. Yo le he visto dar el salto mortal varias veces seguidas sobre un plato trinchero, sujeto a la cuerda, no más gorda que un bramante usual de Inglaterra. Mi amigo Reldresal, secretario principal de Negocios Privados, es, en opinión mía —y no quisiera dejarme llevar de parcialidades—, el que sigue al tesorero. El resto de los altos empleados se van allá unos con otros.

Estas distracciones van a menudo acompañadas de accidentes funestos, muchos de los cuales dejan memoria. Yo mismo he visto romperse miembros a dos o tres candidatos. Pero el peligro es mucho mayor cuando se ordena a los ministros que muestren su destreza, pues en la pugna por excederse a sí mismos y exceder a sus compañeros llevan su esfuerzo a tal punto, que apenas existe uno que no haya tenido una caída, y varios han tenido dos o tres. Me aseguraron que un año o dos antes de mi llegada, Flimnap se hubiera desnucado infaliblemente si uno de los cojines del rey, que casualmente estaba en el suelo, no hubiese amortiguado la fuerza de su caída.

Hay también otra distracción que sólo se celebra ante el emperador y la emperatriz y el primer ministro, en ocasiones especiales. El emperador pone sobre la mesa tres bonitas hebras de seda de seis pulgadas de largo: una es azul, otra roja y la tercera verde. Estas hebras representan los premios que aquellas personas a quienes el emperador tiene voluntad de distinguir con una muestra particular de su favor. La ceremonia se verifica en la gran sala del trono de Su Majestad, donde los candidatos han de sufrir una prueba de destreza muy diferente de la anterior, y a la cual no he encontrado parecido en otro ningún país del viejo ni del nuevo mundo. El emperador sostiene en sus manos una varilla por los extremos, en posición horizontal, mientras los candidatos, que se destacan uno a uno, a veces saltan por encima de la varilla y a veces se arrastran serpentando por debajo de ella hacia adelante y hacia atrás repetidas veces, según que la varilla avanza o retrocede. En algunas ocasiones el emperador tiene un extremo de la varilla y el otro su primer ministro; en
entirely to himself. Whoever performs his part with most agility, and holds out the longest in leaping and creeping, is rewarded with the blue-coloured silk; the red is given to the next, and the green to the third, which they all wear girt twice round about the middle; and you see few great persons about this court who are not adorned with one of these girdles.

The horses of the army, and those of the royal stables, having been daily led before me, were no longer shy, but would come up to my very feet without starting. The riders would leap them over my hand, as I held it on the ground; and one of the emperor’s huntsmen, upon a large courser, took my foot, shoe and all; which was indeed a prodigious leap. I had the good fortune to divert the emperor one day after a very extraordinary manner. I desired he would order several sticks of two feet high, and the thickness of an ordinary cane, to be brought me; whereupon his majesty commanded the master of his woods to give directions accordingly; and the next morning six woodmen arrived with as many carriages, drawn by eight horses to each. I took nine of these sticks, and fixing them firmly in the ground in a quadrangular figure, two feet and a half square, I took four other sticks, and tied them parallel at each corner, about two feet from the ground; then I fastened my handkerchief to the nine sticks that stood erect; and extended it on all sides, till it was tight as the top of a drum; and the four parallel sticks, rising about five inches higher than the handkerchief, served as ledges on each side. When I had finished my work, I desired the emperor to let a troop of his best horses twenty-four in number, come and exercise upon this plain. His majesty approved of the proposal, and I took them up, one by one, in my hands, ready mounted and armed, with the proper officers to exercise them. As soon as they got into order they divided into two parties, performed mock skirmishes, discharged blunt arrows, drew their swords, fled and pursued, attacked and retired, and in short discovered the best military discipline I ever beheld. The parallel sticks secured them and their horses from falling over the stage; and the emperor was so much delighted, that he ordered this
entertainment to be repeated several days, and once was pleased to be lifted up and give the word of command; and with great difficulty persuaded even the empress herself to let me hold her in her close chair within two yards of the stage, when she was able to take a full view of the whole performance. It was my good fortune, that no ill accident happened in these entertainments; only once a fiery horse, that belonged to one of the captains, pawing with his hoof, struck a hole in my handkerchief, and his foot slipping, he overthrew his rider and himself; but I immediately relieved them both, and covering the hole with one hand, I set down the troop with the other, in the same manner as I took them up. The horse that fell was strained in the left shoulder, but the rider got no hurt; and I repaired my handkerchief as well as I could: however, I would not trust to the strength of it any more, in such dangerous enterprises.

About two or three days before I was set at liberty, as I was entertaining the court with this kind of feat, there arrived an express to inform his majesty, that some of his subjects, riding near the place where I was first taken up, had seen a great black substance lying on the around, very oddly shaped, extending its edges round, as wide as his majesty’s bedchamber, and rising up in the middle as high as a man; that it was no living creature, as they at first apprehended, for it lay on the grass without motion; and some of them had walked round it several times; that, by mounting upon each other’s shoulders, they had got to the top, which was flat and even, and, stamping upon it, they found that it was hollow within; that they humbly conceived it might be something belonging to the man-mountain; and if his majesty pleased, they would undertake to bring it with only five horses. I presently knew what they meant, and was glad at heart to receive this intelligence. It seems, upon my first reaching the shore after our shipwreck, I was in such confusion, that before I came to the place where I went to sleep, my hat, which I had fastened with a string to my head while I was rowing, and had stuck on all the time I was swimming, fell off after I came to land; the string,
as I conjecture, breaking by some accident, which I never observed, but thought my hat had been lost at sea. I 
entreated [besought] his imperial 
majesty to give orders it might be 
brought to me as soon as possible, 
describing to him the use and the 
nature of it: and the next day the 
waggoners arrived with it, but not in 
a very good condition; they had bored 
two holes in the brim, within an inch 
and half of the edge, and fastened two 
hooks in the holes; these hooks were 
tied by a long cord to the harness, and 
thus my hat was dragged along for 
above half an English mile; but, the 
ground in that country being extremely 
smooth and level, it received less 
damage than I expected.

Two days after this adventure, the 
emperor, having ordered that part of 
his army which quarters in and about 
his metropolis, to be in readiness, took 
a fancy of diverting himself in a very 
singular manner. He desired I would 
stand like a Colossus, with my legs as 
far asunder as I conveniently could. He 
then commanded his general (who 
was an old experienced leader, and a 
great patron of mine) to draw up the 
troops in close order, and march them 
under me; the foot by twenty-four 
abreast, and the horse by sixteen, with 
drums beating, colours flying, and 
pikes advanced. This body consisted 
of three thousand foot, and a thousand 
horse. His majesty gave orders, upon 
pain of death, that every soldier in his 
march should observe the strictest 
decency with regard to my person; 
which however could not prevent some 
of the younger officers from turning 
up their eyes as they passed under me: 
and, to confess the truth, my breeches 
were at that time in so ill a condition, 
that they afforded some opportunities 
for laughter and admiration.

I had sent so many memorials and 
petitions for my liberty, that his 
majesty at length mentioned the 
matter, first in the cabinet, and then 
in a full council; where it was 
opposed by none, except Skyresh 
Bolgolam, who was pleased, without 
any provocation, to be my mortal 
enemy. But it was carried against him 
by the whole board, and confirmed by 
the emperor. That minister was

abreast adv: 1 side by side and facing the same way. 2 a (often foll. by with) up to date. b (foll. by of) well-informed ( abreast of all the changes). A la par, en frente de, en fondo, juntas, a la altura de,
GALBET, or admiral of the realm, very much in his master’s confidence, and a person well versed in affairs, but of a morose and sour complexion [tez/cariz]. However, he was at length persuaded to comply; but prevailed that the articles and conditions upon which I should be set free, and to which I must swear, should be drawn up by himself.

These articles were brought to me by Skyresh Bolgolam in person attended by two under-secretaries, and several persons of distinction. After they were read, I was demanded to swear to the performance of them; first in the manner of my own country, and afterwards in the method prescribed by their laws; which was, to hold my right foot in my left hand, and to place the middle finger of my right hand on the crown of my head, and my thumb on the tip of my right ear. But because the reader may be curious to have some idea of the style and manner of expression peculiar to that people, as well as to know the article upon which I recovered my liberty, I have made a translation of the whole instrument, word for word, as near as I was able, which I here offer to the public.

“Golbasto Momarem Evlame Gurdilo Shefin Mully Ully Gue, most mighty Emperor of Lilliput, delight and terror of the universe, whose dominions extend five thousand blustrugs (about twelve miles in circumference) to the extremities of the globe; monarch of all monarchs, taller than the sons of men; whose feet press down to the centre, and whose head strikes against the sun; at whose nod the princes of the earth shake their knees; pleasant as the spring, comfortable as the summer, fruitful as autumn, dreadful as winter: his most sublime majesty proposes to the man-mountain, lately arrived at our celestial dominions, the following articles, which, by a solemn oath, he shall be obliged to perform:

“1st, The man-mountain shall not depart from our dominions, without our license under our great seal.

“2nd, He shall not presume to come into our metropolis, without our express order; at which time, the inhabitants shall have two hours warning to keep ro era Galbet, o sea almirante del reino, persona muy de la confianza de su señor y muy versada en los asuntos, pero de temperamento rudo y agrio. Sin embargo, le persuadieron al fin para que consintiese, pero concediéndole que los artículos y condiciones bajo los cuales se me pusiera en libertad, y que yo debía jurar, fuese él mismo quien los redactase. Estos artículos me fueron presentados por Skyresh Bolgolam en persona, acompañado de los subsecretarios y varias personas significadas. Una vez que me fueron leídos, se me propuso que jurase su cumplimiento, primero a la usanza de mi propio país y luego según el procedimiento descrito por las leyes de allá, y que consistió en sostenerme en alto el pie derecho con la mano izquierda, al tiempo que me colocaba el dedo medio de la mano derecha en la coronilla y el pulgar en la punta de la oreja derecha. Pero como el lector puede que sienta curiosidad por tener una idea del estilo y modo de expresión peculiar de este pueblo, así como por conocer los artículos en virtud de los cuales recobré la libertad, he hecho la traducción de todo el documento, palabra por palabra, tan fielmente como he podido, y quiero sacarlo a luz en este punto:

“Primero. El Hombre-montaña no saldrá de nuestros dominios sin una licencia nuestra con nuestro gran sello.

“Segundo. No le será permitido entrar en nuestra metrópoli sin nuestra orden expresa. Cuando esto suceda, los habitantes serán avisados con dos horas de anticipa-
within doors.

“3d, The said man-mountain shall confine his walks to our principal high roads, and not offer to walk, or lie down, in a meadow or field of corn.

“4th, As he walks the said roads, he shall take the utmost care not to trample upon the bodies of any of our loving subjects, their horses, or carriages, nor take any of our subjects into his hands without their own consent.

“5th, If an express requires extraordinary despatch, the man-mountain shall be obliged to carry, in his pocket, the messenger and horse a six days journey, once in every moon, and return the said messenger back (if so required) safe to our imperial presence.

“6th, He shall be our ally against our enemies in the island of Blefuscu, and do his utmost to destroy their fleet, which is now preparing to invade us.

“7th, That the said man-mountain shall, at his times of leisure, be aiding and assisting to our workmen, in helping to raise certain great stones, towards covering the wall of the principal park, and other our royal buildings.

“8th, That the said man-mountain shall, in two moons’ time, deliver in an exact survey of the circumference of our dominions, by a computation of his own paces round the coast.

“Lastly, That, upon his solemn oath to observe all the above articles, the said man-mountain shall have a daily allowance of meat and drink sufficient for the support of 1724 of our subjects, with free access to our royal person, and other marks of our favour. Given at our palace at Belfaborac, the twelfth day of the ninety-first moon of our reign.”

I swore and subscribed to these articles with great cheerfulness and content, although some of them were not so honourable as I could have wished;
which proceeded wholly from the malice of Skyresh Bolgolam, the high-admiral: whereupon my chains were immediately unlocked, and I was at full liberty. The emperor himself, in person, did me the honour to be by at the whole ceremony. I made my acknowledgements by prostrating myself at his majesty’s feet: but he commanded me to rise; and after many gracious expressions, which, to avoid the censure of vanity, I shall not repeat, he added, “that he hoped I should prove a useful servant, and well deserve all the favours he had already granted upon me, or might do for the future.”

The reader may please to observe, that, in the last article of the recovery of my liberty, the emperor stipulates to allow me a quantity of meat and drink sufficient for the support of 1724 Lilliputians. Some time after, asking a friend at court how they came to fix on that determinate number, he told me that his majesty’s mathematicians, having taken the height of my body by the help of a quadrant, and finding it to exceed theirs in the proportion of twelve to one, they concluded from the similarity of their bodies, that mine must contain at least 1724 of theirs, and consequently would require as much food as was necessary to support that number of Lilliputians. By which the reader may conceive an idea of the ingenuity of that people, as well as the prudent and exact economy of so great a prince.

CHAPTER IV.

[Mildendo, the metropolis of Lilliput, described, together with the emperor’s palace. A conversation between the author and a principal secretary, concerning the affairs of that empire. The author’s offers to serve the emperor in his wars.]

The first request I made, after I had obtained my liberty, was, that I might have license to see Mildendo, the metropolis; which the emperor easily granted me, but with a special charge to enteramente de la mala voluntad de Skyresh Bolgolam, el gran almirante. Inmediatamente después soltaron las cadenas y quedé en completa libertad. El mismo emperador en persona me hizo el honor de hallarse presente a toda la ceremonia. Mostré mi reconocimiento postrándome a los pies de Su Majestad, pero él me mandó levantarme; y después de muchas amables expresiones, que no referiré por que no se me tache de vanidoso, agregó que esperaba que yo fuese un útil servidor y que mereciese todas las gracias que ya me había conferido y otras que pudiera conferirme en lo futuro.

El lector habrá podido advertir que en el último artículo dictado para el recobro de mi libertad stipula el emperador que me sea suministrada una cantidad de comida y bebida bastante para el mantenimiento de 1.724 liliputienses. Pregunté algún tiempo después a un amigo mío de la corte cómo se les ocurrió fijar ese número precisamente, y me contestó que los matemáticos de Su Majestad, habiendo tomado la altura de mi cuerpo por medio de un cuadrante, y visto que excedía a los suyos en la proporción de doce a uno, dedujeron, tomando sus cuerpos como base, que el mío debía contener, por lo menos, mil setecientos veinticuatro de los suyos, y, por consiguiente, necesitaba tanta comida, como fuese necesaria para alimentar ese número de liliputienses. Por donde puede el lector formarse una idea del ingenio de aquel pueblo, así como de la prudente y exacta economía de tan gran príncipe.
do no hurt either to the inhabitants or their houses. The people had notice, by proclamation, of my design to visit the town. The wall which encompassed it is two feet and a half high, and at least eleven inches broad, so that a coach and horses may be driven very safely round it; and it is flanked with strong towers at ten feet distance. I stepped over the great western gate, and passed very gently, and sidling, through the two principal streets, only in my short waistcoat, for fear of damaging the roofs and eaves of the houses with the skirts of my coat.

I walked with the utmost circumspection, to avoid treading on any stragglers who might remain in the streets, although the orders were very strict, that all people should keep in their houses, at their own peril. The garret windows and tops of houses were so crowded with spectators, that I thought in all my travels I had not seen a more populous place. The city is an exact square, each side of the wall being five hundred feet long. The two great streets, which run across and divide it into four quarters, are five feet wide. The lanes and alleys, which I could not enter, but only view them as I passed, are from twelve to eighteen inches. The town is capable of holding five hundred thousand souls: the houses are from three to five stories: the shops and markets well provided.

The emperor’s palace is in the centre of the city where the two great streets meet. It is enclosed by a wall of two feet high, and twenty feet distance from the buildings. I had his majesty’s permission to step over this wall; and, the space being so wide between that and the palace, I could easily view it on every side. The outward court is a square of forty feet, and includes two other courts: in the inmost are the royal apartments, which I was very desirous to see, but found it extremely difficult; for the great gates, from one square into another, were but eighteen inches high, and seven inches wide. Now the buildings of the outer court were at least five feet high, and it was impossible for me to stride over them without infinite damage to the pile, though the walls were strongly built of hewn stone, and four inches thick. At the same time the emperor had a great desire that I should see the magnificence of his palace; but special of no producing daño a los habitantes ni en las casas. Se notificó a la población por medio de una proclama mi propósito de visitar la ciudad. La muralla que la circunda es de dos pies y medio de alto y por lo menos de once pulgadas de anchura, puesto que puede dar la vuelta sobre ella con toda seguridad un coche con sus caballos, y está flanqueada con sólidas torres a diez pies de distancia. Pasé por encima de la gran Puerta del Oeste, y, muy suavemente y de lado, anduve las dos calles principales, sólo con chaleco, por miedo de estropear los tejados y aleros de las casas con los faldones de mi casaca. Caminaba con el mayor tiento para no pisar a cualquier extraviado que hubiera podido quedar por las calles, aunque había órdenes rigurosas de que todo el mundo permaneciese en sus casas, ateniéndose a los riesgos los desobedientes. Las azoteas y los tejados estaban tan atestados de espectadores, que pensé no haber visto en todos mis viajes lugar más poblado. La ciudad es un cuadrado exacto y cada lado de la muralla tiene quinientos pies de longitud. Las dos grandes calles que se cruzan y la dividen en cuatro partes iguales tienen cinco pies de anchura. Las demás vías, en que no pude entrar y sólo vi de paso, tienen de doce a dieciocho pulgadas. La población es capaz para quinientas mil almas. Las casas son de tres a cinco pisos; las tiendas y mercados están perfectamente abastecidos.

El palacio del emperador está en el centro de la ciudad, donde se encuentran las dos grandes calles. Lo rodea un muro de dos pies de altura, a veinte pies de distancia de los edificios. Obtuvo permiso de Su Majestad para pasar por encima de este muro; y como el espacio entre él y el palacio es muy ancho, pude inspeccionar éste por todas partes. El patio exterior es un cuadrado de cuarenta pies y comprender de otros dos; al más interior dan las habitaciones reales, que yo tenía grandes deseos de ver; pero lo encontré extremadamente difícil, porque las grandes puertas de comunicación entre los cuadros sólo tenían dieciocho pulgadas de altura y siete pulgadas de ancho. Por otra parte, los edificios del patio externo tenían por lo menos cinco pies de altura, y me era imposible pasarlo de una zancada sin perjuicios incalculables para la construcción, aun cuando los muros estaban sólidamente edificados con piedra tallada y tenían cuatro pulgadas de espesor. También el em-
this I was not able to do till three days after, which I spent in cutting down with my knife some of the largest trees in the royal park, about a hundred yards distant from the city. Of these trees I made two stools, each about three feet high, and strong enough to bear my weight. The people having received notice a second time, I went again through the city to the palace with my two stools in my hands. When I came to the side of the outer court, I stood upon one stool, and the other in my hand; this I lifted over the roof, and gently set it down on the space between the first and second court, which was eight feet wide. I then stepped over the building very conveniently from one stool to the other, and drew up the first after me with a hooked stick. By this contrivance I got into the innmost court; and, lying down upon my side, I applied my face to the windows of the middle stories, which were left open on purpose, and discovered the most splendid apartments that can be imagined. There I saw the empress and the young princes, in their several lodgings, with their chief attendants about them. Her imperial majesty was pleased to smile very graciously upon me, and gave me out of the window her hand to kiss.

But I shall not anticipate the reader with further descriptions of this kind, because I reserve them for a greater work, which is now almost ready for the press; containing a general description of this empire, from its first erection, through along series of princes; with a particular account of their wars and politics, laws, learning, and religion; their plants and animals; their peculiar manners and customs, with other matters very curious and useful; my chief design at present is only to relate such events and transactions as happened to the public or to myself during a residence of about nine months in that empire.

One morning, about a fortnight after I had obtained my liberty, Reldresal, principal secretary (as they style him) for private affairs, came to my house attended only by one servant. He ordered his coach to wait at a distance, and desired I would give him an hours audience; which I readily [easily/willingly] consented to, on account of perador estaba muy deseoso de que yo viese la magnificencia de su palacio; pero no pude hacer tal cosa hasta después de haber dedicado tres días a cortar con mi navaja algunos de los mayores árboles del parque real, situado a unas cien yardas de distancia de la ciudad. Con estos árboles hice dos banquillos como de tres pies de altura cada uno y lo bastante fuertes para soportar mi peso. Advertida la población por segunda vez, volvi a atravesar la ciudad hasta el palacio con mis dos banquetas en la mano. Cuando estuve en el patio exterior me puse de pie sobre un banquillo, y tomando en la mano el otro lo alcé por encima del tejado y lo dejé suavemente en el segundo patio, que era de ocho pies de anchura. Pasé entonces muy cómodamente por encima del edificio desde un banquillo a otro y levanté el primero tras de mí con una varilla en forma de gancho. Con esta traza llegué al patio interior y, acostándome de lado, acerqué la cara a las ventanas de los pisos centrales, que de propósito estaban abiertas, y descubrí las más espléndidas habitaciones que imaginarse puede. Allí vi a la emperatriz y a la joven princesa en sus varios alojamientos, rodeadas de sus principales servidores. Su Majestad Imperial se dirigió dirigirme una graciosa sonrisa y por la ventana me dio su mano a besar.

Pero no quiero anticipar al lector más descripciones de esta naturaleza porque las reservo para un trabajo más serio que ya está casi para entrar en prensa y que contiene una descripción general de este imperio desde su fundación, a través de una larga serie de principes, con detallada cuenta de sus guerras y su política, sus leyes, cultura y religión, sus plantas y animales, sus costumbres y trajes peculiares, más otras materias muy útiles y curiosas. Porque aquí mi principal propósito sólo es referir acontecimientos y asuntos ocurridos a aquellas gentes o a mí mismo durante los nueve meses que residi en aquel imperio.

Una mañana, a los quince días aproximadamente de haber obtenido mi libertad, Reldresal, secretario principal de Asuntos Privados —como ellos le intitulan—, vino a mi casa acompañado sólo de un servidor. Mandó a su coche que esperase a cierta distancia y me pidió que le concediese una hora de audiencia, a lo que yo inmediata- mente accedí, teniendo en cuenta su cate-
his quality and personal merits, as well
as of the many good offices he had done
me during my solicitations at court. I
offered to lie down that he might the
more conveniently reach my ear, but he
chose rather to let me hold him in my
hand during our conversation. He began
with compliments on my liberty; said
“he might pretend to some merit in it;”
but, however, added, “that if it had not
been for the present situation of things
at court, perhaps I might not have
obtained it so soon. For,” said he, “as
flourishing a condition as we may
appear to be in to foreigners, we labour
under two mighty evils: a violent
faction at home, and the danger of an
invasion, by a most potent enemy, from
abroad. As to the first, you are to
understand, that for about seventy
moons past there have been two
struggling parties in this empire, under
the names of TRAMECKSAN and
SLAMECKSAN, from the high and low
heels of their shoes, by which they
distinguish themselves. It is alleged,
indeed, that the high heels are most
agreeable to our ancient constitution;
but, however this be, his majesty has
determined to make use only of low
heels in the administration of the
government, and all offices in the gift
of the crown, as you cannot but obser-
ve; and particularly that his majesty’s
imperial heels are lower at least by a
DRIRR than any of his court (DRIRR
is a measure about the fourteenth part
of an inch). The animosities between
these two parties run so high, that they
will neither eat, nor drink, nor talk with
each other. We compute the
TRAMECKSAN, or high heels, to
to exceed us in number; but the power is
wholly on our side. We apprehend his
imperial highness, the heir to the crown,
to have some tendency towards the high
heels; at least we can plainly discover
that one of his heels is higher than the
other, which gives him a hobble in his
gait. Now, in the midst of these intestine
disquiets, we are threatened with an
invasion from the island of Blefuscu,
which is the other great empire of the
universe, almost as large and powerful
as this of his majesty. For as to what
we have heard you affirm, that there are
other kingdoms and states in the world
inhabited by human creatures as large
as yourself, our philosophers are in
much doubt, and would rather
goria y sus méritos personales, así como
los buenos oficios que había hecho valer
cuando mis peticiones a la corte. Le ofrecí
tumbarme para que pudiera hacerse oír de
mí más cómodamente; pero él prefirió per-
mitirme que lo tuviese en la mano durante
nuestra conversación. Empezó felicitándo-
me por mi libertad, en la cual, según dijo,
podía permitirme creer que había tenido al-
guna parte; pero añadió, sin embargo, que
da no haber sido por el estado de cosas que
ta la sazón reinaba en la corte, quizá no la
hubiese obtenido tan pronto. «Porque —
dijo— por muy floreciente que nuestra si-
tuación pueda parecer a los extranjeros,
pesan sobre nosotros dos graves males: una
violenta facción en el interior y el peligro
de que invada nuestro territorio un pode-
roso enemigo de fuera. En cuanto a lo pri-
mero, sabed que desde hace más de seten-
ta lunas hay en este imperio dos partidos
contrarios, conocidos por los nombres de
Tramecksan y Slamecksan, a causa de los
tacones altos y bajos de su calzado, que,
respectivamente, les sirven de distintivo.
Se alega, es verdad, que los tacones altos
son más conformes a nuestra antigua cons-
titución; pero, sea de ello lo que quiera, Su
Majestad ha decidido hacer uso de tacones
bajos solamente en la administración
del gobierno y para todos los empleados
que disfrutan la privanza de la corona,
como seguramente habréis observado; y
por lo que hace particularmente a los tacones
de Su Majestad Imperial, son cuando
menos un drurr más bajos que cualesquie-
ra otros de su corte —el drurr es una me-
dida que viene a valer la decimoquinta
parte de una pulgada—. La animosidad
entre estos dos partidos ha llegado a tal
punto, que los pertenecientes a uno no quie-
ren comer ni beber ni hablar con los del
otro. Calculamos que los Tramocksan, o
tacones—altos, nos exceden en numero;
pero la fuerza está por completo de nues-
trro lado. Nosotros nos sospechamos que
Su Alteza Imperial, el heredero de la coro-
nana, se inclina algo hacia los tacones —al-
tos; al menos, vemos claramente que uno
de sus tacones es más alto que el otro, lo
que le produce cierta cojera al andar. Por
si fuera poco, en medio de estas querellas
intestinas, nos amenaza con una invasión
la isla de Blefuscu, que es el otro gran im-
perio del universo, casi tan extenso y po-
deroso como este de Su Majestad. Porque
en cuanto a lo que os hemos oído afirmar
acerca de existir otros reinos y estados en
el mundo habitados por criaturas humanas
tan grandes como vos, nuestros filósofos
conjecture that you dropped from the moon, or one of the stars; because it is certain, that a hundred mortals of your bulk would in a short time destroy all the fruits and cattle of his majesty’s dominions: besides, our histories of six thousand moons make no mention of any other regions than the two great empires of Lilliput and Blefuscu. Which two mighty powers have, as I was going to tell you, been engaged in a most obstinate war for six-and-thirty moons past. It began upon the following occasion. It is allowed on all hands, that the primitive way of breaking eggs, before we eat them, was upon the larger end; but his present majesty’s grandfather, while he was a boy, going to eat an egg, and breaking it according to the ancient practice, happened to cut one of his fingers. Whereupon the emperor his father published an edict, commanding all his subjects, upon great penalties, to break the smaller end of their eggs. The people so highly resented this law, that our histories tell us, there have been six rebellions raised on that account; wherein one emperor lost his life, and another his crown. These civil commotions were constantly fomented by the monarchs of Blefuscu; and when they were quelled, the exiles always fled for refuge to that empire. It is computed that eleven thousand persons have at several times suffered death, rather than submit to break their eggs at the smaller end. Many hundred large volumes have been published upon this controversy: but the books of the Big-endians have been long forbidden, and the whole party rendered incapable by law of holding employments. During the course of these troubles, the emperors of Blefuscu did frequently expostulate by their ambassadors, accusing us of making a schism in religion, by offending against a fundamental doctrine of our great prophet Lustrog, in the fifty-fourth chapter of the Blundecral (which is their Alcoran). This, however, is thought to be a mere strain upon the text; for the words are these: ‘that all true believers break their eggs at the convenient end.’

And which is the convenient end, seems, in my humble opinion to be left to every man’s conscience, or at least in the power of the chief magistrate to determine. Now, the Big-endian exiles
have found so much credit in the emperor of Blefuscu’s court, and so much private assistance and encouragement from their party here at home, that a bloody war has been carried on between the two empires for six-and-thirty moons, with various success; during which time we have lost forty capital ships, and a much a greater number of smaller vessels, together with thirty thousand of our best seamen and soldiers; and the damage received by the enemy is reckoned to be somewhat greater than ours. However, they have now equipped a numerous fleet, and are just preparing to make a descent upon us; and his imperial majesty, placing great confidence in your valour and strength, has commanded me to lay this account of his affairs before you.”

I desired the secretary to present my humble duty to the emperor; and to let him know, “that I thought it would not become me, who was a foreigner, to interfere with parties; but I was ready, with the hazard of my life, to defend his person and state against all invaders.”

CHAPTER V.

[The author, by an extraordinary stratagem, prevents an invasion. A high title of honour is conferred upon him. Ambassadors arrive from the emperor of Blefuscu, and sue for peace. The empress’s apartment on fire by an accident; the author instrumental in saving the rest of the palace.]

The empire of Blefuscu is an island situated to the north-east of Lilliput, from which it is parted only by a channel of eight hundred yards wide. I had not yet seen it, and upon this notice of an intended invasion, I avoided appearing on that side of the coast, for fear of being discovered, by some of the enemy’s ships, who had received no intelligence of me; all intercourse between the two empires having been strictly forbidden during the war, upon pain of death, and an embargo laid by our emperor upon all vessels whatsoever. I communicated to his majesty a project I had formed of anchoextremistas han encontrado tanto crédito en la corte del emperador de Blefuscu y aquí tanta secreta asistencia de su partido, que entre ambos imperios viene sosteniéndose una sangrienta guerra hace treinta y seis lunas, con varia suerte, y en ella llevamos perdidos cuarenta grandes barcos y un número mucho mayor de embarcaciones más pequeñas, junto con treinta mil de nuestros mejores marinos y soldados; y se sabe que las bajas del enemigo son algo mayores que las nuestras. Pero ahora han equipado una flota numerosa y están precisamente preparando una invasión contra nosotros, y Su Majestad Imperial, poniendo gran confianza en vuestro valor y esfuerzo, me ha ordenado exponer esta relación de sus negocios ante vos.”

Rogué al secretario que presentase mis humildes respetos al emperador y le hiciera saber que juzgaba yo no corresponderme, como extranjero que era, intervenir en cuestiones de partidos; pero que estaba dispuesto, aun con riesgo de mi vida, a defender su persona y su estado contra los invasores.

El imperio de Blefuscu es una isla situada al lado nordeste de Liliput, de donde sólo está separada por un canal de ochocientos yardas de anchura. Yo no la había visto aún, y ante la noticia del intento de invasión evitó presentarme por aquel lado de la costa, no me descubriese alguno de los buques del enemigo, que no tenía de mi noticia ninguna, rigurosamente prohibida como está la relación entre los dos imperios durante la guerra, bajo pena de muerte, y decretado por nuestro emperador el embargo de todos los buques, sin distinción. Comuniqué a Su Majestad un proyecto que había formado para apre-
seizing the enemy’s whole fleet; which, as our scouts assured us, lay at anchor in the harbour, ready to sail with the first fair wind. I consulted the most experienced seamen upon the depth of the channel, which they had often plumbed; who told me, that in the middle, at high-water, it was seventy GLUMGLUFFS deep, which is about six feet of European measure; and the rest of it fifty GLUMGLUFFS at most. I walked towards the north-east coast, over against Blefuscu, where, lying down behind a hillock, I took out my small perspective glass, and viewed the enemy’s fleet at anchor, consisting of about fifty men of war, and a great number of transports: I then came back to my house, and gave orders (for which I had a warrant) for a great quantity of the strongest cable and bars of iron. The cable was about as thick as packthread and the bars of the length and size of a knitting-needle. I trebled the cable to make it stronger, and for the same reason I twisted three of the iron bars together, bending the extremities into a hook. Having thus fixed fifty hooks to as many cables, I went back to the north-east coast, and putting off my coat, shoes, and stockings, walked into the sea, in my leathern jerkin, about half an hour before high water. I waded with what haste I could, and swam in the middle about thirty yards, till I felt ground. I arrived at the fleet in less than half an hour. The enemy was so frightened when they saw me, that they leaped out of their ships, and swam to shore, where there could not be fewer than thirty thousand souls. I then took my tackle, and, fastening a hook to the hole at the prow of each, I tied all the cords together at the end. While I was thus employed, the enemy discharged several thousand arrows, many of which stuck in my hands and face, and, beside the excessive smart, gave me much disturbance in my work. My greatest apprehension was for mine eyes, which I should have infallibly lost, if I had not suddenly thought of an expedient. I kept, among other little necessaries, a pair of spectacles in a private pocket, which, as I observed before, had escaped the emperor’s searchers. These I took out and fastened as strongly as I could upon my nose, and thus armed, went...
on boldly with my work, in spite of the enemy's arrows, many of which struck against the glasses of my spectacles, but without any other effect, further than a little to discompose them. I had now fastened all the hooks, and, taking the knot in my hand, began to pull; but not a ship would stir, for they were all too fast held by their anchors, so that the boldest part of my enterprise remained. I therefore let go the cord, and leaving the looks fixed to the ships, I resolutely cut with my knife the cables that fastened the anchors, receiving about two hundred shots in my face and hands; then I took up the knotted end of the cables, to which my hooks were tied, and with great ease drew fifty of the enemy's largest men of war after me.

The Blefuscuadians, who had not the least imagination of what I intended, were at first confounded with astonishment. They had seen me cut the cables, and thought my design was only to let the ships run adrift or fall foul on each other: but when they perceived the whole fleet moving in order, and saw me pulling at the end, they set up such a scream of grief and despair as it is almost impossible to describe or conceive. When I had got out of danger, I stopped awhile to pick out the arrows that stuck in my hands and face; and rubbed on some of the same ointment that was given me at my first arrival, as I have formerly mentioned. I then took off my spectacles, and waiting about an hour, till the tide was a little fallen, I waded through the middle with my cargo, and arrived safe at the royal port of Lilliput.

The emperor and his whole court stood on the shore, expecting the issue of this great adventure. They saw the ships move forward in a large half-moon, but could not discern me, who was up to my breast in water. When I advanced to the middle of the channel, they were yet more in pain, because I was under water to my neck. The emperor concluded me to be drowned, and that the enemy's fleet was approaching in a hostile manner: but he was soon eased of his fears; for the channel growing shallower every step I made, I came in a short time within hearing, and holding up the end of the tranquilmente mi obra, a pesar de las flechas del enemigo, muchas de las cuales iban a dar contra los cristales de mis lentes, pero sin otro efecto que el de desajustárme los un poco. Una vez que tuve fijos todos los ganchos, cogí el nudo y empecé a tirar; pero no se movía ni un barco, porque todos estaban demasiado fuertemente sujetos por las anclas; así, que faltaba la parte más dura de mi empresa. Solté la cuerda y, dejando los ganchos fijos a los barcos, corté resueltamente con mi navaja los cables que amarraban las anclas, mientras recibía sobre doscientos tiros en la cara y las manos. Tomé luego el extremo anudado de los cables a que estaban atados los ganchos, y con gran facilidad me llevé tras de mí cincuenta de los mayores buques de guerra del enemigo.

Los blefuscuadianos, que no tenían la menor sospecha de lo que yo me proponía, quedaron al principio confundidos de asombro. Me habían visto cortar los cables y pensaban que mi designio era solamente dejar los barcos a merced de las olas o que se embistiesen unos contra otros; pero cuando vieron toda la flota echar a andar orden y a mí tirando delante, lanzaron tal grito de dolor y desesperación, que casi es imposible de explicar ni de concebir. Ya fuera de peligro, me detuve un rato para sacarme las flechas que se me habían hincado en las manos y en la cara y me unté ungüento del que me habían dado al principio de mi llegada, según he referido anteriormente. Luego me quitó los lentes, y aguardando alrededor de una hora a que la marea estuviese algo más baja, vadeé el centro con mi carga y llegué salvo al puerto real de Liliput.

El emperador y toda su corte estaban en la playa esperando el éxito de esta gran aventura. Veían avanzar los barcos formando una extensa media luna; pero no podían distinguirme a mí, que estaba metido hasta el pecho en el agua. Ya llegaba yo a la mitad del canal y su zozobra no menguaba, porque las aguas me cubrían hasta el cuello. Pensaba el emperador que yo me había ahogado y que la flota del enemigo se aproximaba en actitud hostil; pero en breve se desvanecieron sus temores, porque, disminuyendo la poca profundidad del canal a cada paso que daba yo, pronto estuve a distancia para ha-
cable, by which the fleet was fastened, I cried in a loud voice, “Long live the most puissant king of Lilliput!” This great prince received me at my landing with all possible encomiums, and created me a NARDAC upon the spot, which is the highest title of honour among them.

His majesty desired I would take some other opportunity of bringing all the rest of his enemy’s ships into his ports. And so unmeasureable is the ambition of princes, that he seemed to think of nothing less than reducing the whole empire of Blefuscu into a province, and governing it, by a viceroy; of destroying the Big-endian exiles, and compelling that people to break the smaller end of their eggs, by which he would remain the sole monarch of the whole world. But I endeavoured to divert him from this design, by many arguments drawn from the topics of policy as well as justice; and I plainly protested, “that I would never be an instrument of bringing a free and brave people into slavery.” And, when the matter was debated in council, the wisest part of the ministry were of my opinion.

This open bold declaration of mine was so opposite to the schemes and politics of his imperial majesty, that he could never forgive me. He mentioned it in a very artful manner at council, where I was told that some of the wisest appeared, at least by their silence, to be of my opinion; but others, who were my secret enemies, could not forbear some expressions which, by a side-wind, reflected on me. And from this time began an intrigue between his majesty and a junto of ministers, maliciously bent against me, which broke out in less than two months, and had like to have ended in my utter destruction. Of so little weight are the greatest services to princes, when put into the balance with a refusal to gratify their passions.

About three weeks after this exploit, there arrived a solemn embassy from Blefuscu, with humble offers of a peace, which was soon concluded, upon conditions very advantageous to our emperor, wherewith I shall not trouble...
the reader. There were six ambassadors, with a train of about five hundred persons, and their entry was very magnificent, suitable to the grandeur of their master, and the importance of their business. When their treaty was finished, wherein I did them several good offices by the credit I now had, or at least appeared to have, at court, their excellencies, who were privately told how much I had been their friend, made me a visit in form. They began with many compliments upon my valour and generosity, invited me to that kingdom in the emperor their master’s name, and desired me to show them some proofs of my prodigious strength, of which they had heard so many wonders; wherein I readily [easily/willingly] obliged them, but shall not trouble the reader with the particulars.

When I had for some time entertained their excellencies, to their infinite satisfaction and surprise, I desired they would do me the honour to present my most humble respects to the emperor their master, the renown of whose virtues had so justly filled the whole world with admiration, and whose royal person I resolved to attend, before I returned to my own country. Accordingly, the next time I had the honour to see our emperor, I desired his general license to wait on the Blefuscudian monarch, which he was pleased to grant me, as I could perceive, in a very cold manner; but could not guess the reason, till I had a whisper from a certain person, “that Flimnap and Bolgolam had represented my intercourse with those ambassadors as a mark of disaffection;” from which I am sure my heart was wholly free. And this was the first time I began to conceive some imperfect idea of courts and ministers.

It is to be observed, that these ambassadors spoke to me, by an interpreter, the languages of both empires differing as much from each other as any two in Europe, and each nation priding itself upon the antiquity, beauty, and energy of their own tongue, with an avowed contempt for that of their neighbour; yet our emperor, standing upon the advantage he had got by the seizure of their fleet, obliged them to deliver their credentials, and make cuales hago gracia a los lectores. Los embajadores eran seis, con una comitiva de unas quinientas personas, y su entrada fue de toda magnificencia, como correspondía a la grandeza de su señor y a la importancia de su negocio. Cuando estuvo concluido el tratado, durante cuya negociación yo les auxilié con mis buenos oficios, valiéndome del crédito que entonces tenía, o al menos parecía tener, en la corte, Sus Excelencias, a quienes en secreto habían informado de cuanto había procurado en favor suyo, me invitaron a visitar aquel reino en nombre del emperador, su señor, y me pidieron que les diese alguna muestra de mi fuerza colossal, de la que habían oído tantas maravillas, en lo cual les complaci. Pero no quiero molestar al lector con estos detalles.

Cuando hube entretenido algún tiempo a Sus Excelencias, con infinita satisfacción y sorpresa por su parte, les pedí que me hiciesen el honor de presentar mis más humble respetos al emperador, su señor, la fama de cuyas virtudes tenía tan justamente lleno de admiración al mundo entero, y a cuya real persona tenía resuelto ofrecer mis servicios antes de regresar a mi país. De consiguiente, la próxima vez que tuve el honor de ver a nuestro emperador pedí su real licencia para hacer una visita al monarca blefuscudiano, licencia que se dignó concederme, según pude claramente advertir, de muy fría manera. Pero no pude adivinar la razón, hasta que cierta persona vino a contarme misteriosamente que Flimnap y Bolgolam habían presentado mi trato con aquellos embajadores como una prueba de desafecto, culpa de la que puedo asegurar que mi corazón era por completo inocente. Y ésta fue la primera ocasión en que empecé a concebir idea, aunque imperfecta, de lo que son cortes y ministros.

Es de notar que estos embajadores me hablaron por medio de un intérprete, pues los idiomas de ambos imperios se diferenciaban entre sí tanto como dos cualesquiera de Europa, y cada nación se enorgullecía de la antigüedad, belleza y energía de su propia lengua y siente un manifiesto desprecio por la de su vecino. No obstante, nuestro emperador, valiéndose de la ventaja que le daba la toma de la flota, les obligó a presentar sus credenciales y pronunciar su discurso en lengua liliputiense.
their speech, in the Lilliputian tongue. And it must be confessed, that from the great intercourse of trade and commerce between both realms, from the continual reception of exiles which is mutual among them, and from the custom, in each empire, to send their young nobility and richer gentry to the other, in order to polish themselves by seeing the world, and understanding men and manners; there are few persons of distinction, or merchants, or seamen, who dwell in the maritime parts, but what can hold conversation in both tongues; as I found some weeks after, when I went to pay my respects to the emperor of Blefuscu, which, in the midst of great misfortunes, through the malice of my enemies, proved a very happy adventure to me, as I shall relate in its proper place.

The reader may remember, that when I signed those articles upon which I recovered my liberty, there were some which I disliked, upon account of their being too servile; neither could anything but an extreme necessity have forced me to submit. But being now a NARDAC of the highest rank in that empire, such offices were looked upon as below my dignity, and the emperor (to do him justice), never once mentioned them to me. However, it was not long before I had an opportunity of doing his majesty, at least as I then thought, a most signal service. I was alarmed at midnight with the cries of many hundred people at my door; by which, being suddenly awaked, I was in some kind of terror. I heard the word BURGLUM repeated incessantly: several of the emperor’s court, making their way through the crowd, entreated [besought] me to come immediately to the palace, where her imperial majesty’s apartment was on fire, by the carelessness of a maid of honour, who fell asleep while she was reading a romance. I got up in an instant; and orders being given to clear the way before me, and it being likewise a moonshine night, I made a shift to get to the palace without trampling on any of the people. I found they had already applied ladders to the walls of the apartment, and were well provided with buckets, but the water was at some distance. These buckets were about the size of large thimbles, and the poor people supplied me with them as fast as they could: but Debe, sin embargo, reconocerse que a consecuencia de las amplias relaciones de ambos reinos en el campo del comercio y los negocios; del continuo recibimiento de desterrados, que entre ellos es mutuo, y de la costumbre que hay en cada imperio de enviar al otro a los jóvenes de la nobleza y de las más acaudaladas familias principales para que se afinen viendo mundo y estudiando hombres y costumbres, hay pocas personas de distinción, así como comerciantes y hombres de mar que viven en las regiones marítimas, que no sepan sostener una conversación en ambas lenguas. Así pude apreciarlo algunas semanas después, cuando fui a ofrecer mis respetos al emperador de Blefuscu; visita que, en medio de las grandes desdichas que me acaecieron la maldad de mis enemigos, resultó para mí muy feliz aventura, como referiré en el oportuno lugar.

Recordará el lector que cuando firmé los artículos en virtud de los cuales recobré la libertad, había algunos que me disgustaban por demasiado serviles, y a los cuales sólo me podía obligar a someterme una necesidad extrema. Pero siendo ya como era un nardac del más alto rango del imperio, tales oficios se consideraron por bajo de mi dignidad, y el emperador —dicho sea en justicia— nunca jamás me los mencionó.
the flame was so violent that they did little good. I might easily have stifled it with my coat, which I unfortunately left behind me for haste, and came away only in my leathern jerkin. The case seemed wholly desperate and deplorable; and this magnificent palace would have infallibly been burnt down to the ground, if, by a presence of mind unusual to me, I had not suddenly thought of an expedient. I had, the evening before, drunk plentifully of a most delicious wine called Glimigrim, (the Blefuscudians call it Flunec, but ours is esteemed the better sort,) which is very diuretic. By the luckiest chance in the world, I had not discharged myself of any part of it. The heat I had contracted by coming very near the flames, and by labouring to quench them, made the wine begin to operate by urine; which I voided in such a quantity, and applied so well to the proper places, that in three minutes the fire was wholly extinguished, and the rest of that noble pile, which had cost so many ages in erecting, preserved from destruction.

It was now day-light, and I returned to my house without waiting to congratulate with the emperor: because, although I had done a very eminent piece of service, yet I could not tell how his majesty might resent the manner by which I had performed it: for, by the fundamental laws of the realm, it is capital in any person, of what quality soever, to make water within the precincts of the palace. But I was a little comforted [console] by a message from his majesty, “that he would give orders to the grand justiciary for passing my pardon in form:” which, however, I could not obtain; and I was privately assured, “that the empress, conceiving the greatest abhorrence of what I had done, removed to the most distant side of the court, firmly resol-

ved that those buildings should never be repaired for her use: and, in the presence of her chief confidents could not forbear [abstain] vowing revenge.”
CHAPTER VI.

[Of the inhabitants of Lilliput; their learning, laws, and customs; the manner
of educating their children. The author’s way of living in that country. His vindication of a great lady.]

Although I intend to leave the description of this empire to a particular treatise, yet, in the mean time, I am content to gratify the curious reader with some general ideas. As the common size of the natives is somewhat under six inches high, so there is an exact proportion in all other animals, as well as plants and trees: for instance, the tallest horses and oxen are between four and five inches in height, the sheep an inch and half, more or less: their geese have adapted the eyes of the Lilliputians to all objects proper for their view: they see with great exactness, but at no great distance. And, to show the sharpness of their sight towards objects that are near, I have been much pleased with observing a cook pulling a lark, which was not so large as a common fly; and a young girl threading an invisible needle with invisible silk. Their tallest trees are about seven feet high: I mean some of those in the great royal park, the tops of which I could but just reach with my fist clenched. The other vegetables are in the same proportion; but this I leave to the reader’s imagination.

I shall say but little at present of their learning, which, for many ages, has flourished in all its branches among them: but their manner of writing is very peculiar, being neither from the left to the right, like the Europeans, nor from the right to the left, like the Arabsians, nor from up to down, like the Chinese, but aslant, from one corner of the paper to the other, like ladies in England.

They bury their dead with their heads directly downward, because they hold an opinion, that in eleven thousand moons they are all to rise again; in which period the earth (which they conceive to be flat) will turn upside down, and by this means they shall, at their resurrection, be found

peculiar (En) odd, queer, unusual, singular, especial, funny. Raro, extraño, especial, singular
peculiar (Sp) particular, característico, curioso, characteristic, typical, particular, individual
aslant obliquely or at a slant. obliquely across (lay aslant the path)
There are some laws and customs in this empire very peculiar; and if they were not so directly contrary to those of my own dear country, I should be tempted to say a little in their justification. It is only to be wished they were as well executed. The first I shall mention, relates to informers. All crimes against the state, are punished here with the utmost severity; but, if the person accused makes his innocence plainly to appear upon his trial, the accuser is immediately put to an ignominious death; and out of his goods or lands the innocent person is quadruply recompensed for the loss of his time, for the danger he underwent, for the hardship of his imprisonment, and for all the charges he has been at in making his defence; or, if that fund be deficient, it is largely supplied by the crown. The emperor also confers on him some public mark of his favour, and proclamation is made of his innocence through the whole city.

They look upon fraud as a greater crime than theft, and therefore seldom fail to punish it with death; for they allege, that care and vigilance, with a very common understanding, may preserve a man’s goods from thieves, but honesty has no defence against superior cunning; and, since it is necessary that there should be a perpetual intercourse of buying and selling, and dealing upon credit, where fraud is permitted and connived at, or has no law to punish it, the honest dealer is always undone, and the knave gets the advantage. I remember, when I was once interceding with the emperor for a criminal who had wronged his master of a great sum of money, which he had received by order and ran away with; and happening to tell his majesty, by way of extenuation, that it was only a breach of trust, the emperor thought it monstrous in me to offer as a defence the greatest aggravation of the crime; and truly I had little to say in return, farther than the common answer, that different nations had different customs; for, I confess, I was heartily ashamed. (2)

Hay en este imperio algunas leyes y costumbres muy particulares, y si no fuesen tan por completo contrarias a las de mi querido país, me darian ganas de decir algo en su justificación. Sólo sería desear que se cumpliesen. La primera de que hablaré se refiere a los espías. Todos los crímenes contra el Estado se castigan con la mayor severidad; pero si la persona acusada demuestra plenamente su inocencia en el proceso, inmediatamente se da al acusador muerte ignominiosa, y de sus bienes muebles y raíces es cuatro veces indemnizada la persona inocente, por la pérdida de tiempo, por el peligro que estuvo expuesta, por las molestias de su prisión y por todos los gastos que haya tenido que hacer para su defensa. Si el fondo no alcanza es generalmente completado por la Corona. El emperador, asimismo, confiere al interesado alguna pública prueba de su gracia y se hace por la ciudad la proclamación de su inocencia.

Consideran allí el fraude como un crimen mayor que el robo, y, por consecuencia, rara vez dejan de castigarlo con la muerte porque sostienen ellos que el cuidado y la vigilancia, practicados con el común entendimiento, pueden preservar de los ladrones los bienes de un hombre, mientras que la honradez no tiene defensa contra una astucia superior; y como es necesario que haya perpetuas relaciones de compra y venta y comercio a crédito, donde se permite y tolera el fraude, o donde no hay leyes para castigarlo, el comerciante más honrado sale siempre perdiendo y el bribón saca la ventaja. Recuerdo que en una ocasión intercedía yo con el rey por un criminal que había perjudicado a su amo en una gran cantidad de dinero recibido por orden, y con el cual se escapó; y como dijese a Su Majestad, a modo de atenuación, que se trataba sólo de un abuso de confianza, el emperador encontró monstruoso que yo presentase como defensa la mayor agravación de su crimen; y la verdad es que al contestarle tuvo bien poco que añadir a la respuesta usual de que las diferentes naciones tienen diferentes costumbres, porque confieso que quedé enteramente confundido.

breach 1 (often foll. by of) the breaking of or failure to observe a law, contract, etc. 2 a breaking of relations; an estrangement. b a quarrel. 3 a broken state. b a gap, esp. one made by artillery in fortifications. Brecha, infracción, abertura

whale breaching salto de la ballena

breach of the peace an infringement or violation of the public peace by any disturbance or riot etc.

breach of promise the breaking of a promise, esp. a promise to marry.

stand in the breach bear the brunt of an attack.

step into the breach give help in a crisis, esp. by replacing someone who has dropped out.
Although we usually call reward and punishment the two hinges upon which all government turns, yet I could never observe this maxim to be put in practice by any nation except that of Lilliput. Whoever can there bring sufficient proof, that he has strictly observed the laws of his country for seventy-three moons, has a claim to certain privileges, according to his quality or condition of life, with a proportionable sum of money out of a fund appropriated for that use: he likewise acquires the title of SNILPALL, or legal, which is added to his name, but does not descend to his posterity. And these people thought it a prodigious defect of policy among us, when I told them that our laws were enforced only by penalties, without any mention of reward. It is upon this account that the image of Justice, in their courts of judicature, is formed with six eyes, two before, as many behind, and on each side one, to signify circumspection; with a bag of gold open in her right hand, and a sword sheathed in her left, to show she is more disposed to reward than to punish.

In choosing persons for all employments, they have more regard to good morals than to great abilities; for, since government is necessary to mankind, they believe, that the common size of human understanding is fitted to some station or other; and that Providence never intended to make the management of public affairs a mystery to be comprehended only by a few persons of sublime genius, of which there seldom are three born in an age: but they suppose truth, justice, temperance, and the like, to be in every man’s power; the practice of which virtues, assisted by experience and a good intention, would qualify any man for the service of his country, except where a course of study is required. But they thought the want of moral virtues was so far from being supplied by superior endowments of the mind, that employments could never be put into such dangerous hands as those of persons so qualified; and, at least, that the mistakes committed by ignorance, in a virtuous disposition, would never be of such fatal consequence to the public weal, as the practices of a man, whose inclinations led him to be corrupt, and
who had great abilities to manage, to multiply, and defend his corruptions.

In like manner, the disbelief of a Divine Providence renders a man incapable of holding any public station; for, since kings avow themselves to be the deputies of Providence, the Lilliputians think nothing can be more absurd than for a prince to employ such men as disown the authority under which he acts.

In relating these and the following laws, I would only be understood to mean the original institutions, and not the most scandalous corruptions, into which these people are fallen by the degenerate nature of man. For, as to that infamous practice of acquiring great employments by dancing on the ropes, or badges of favour and distinction by leaping over sticks and creeping under them, the reader is to observe, that they were first introduced by the grandfather of the emperor now reigning, and grew to the present height by the gradual increase of party and faction.

Ingratitude is among them a capital crime, as we read it to have been in some other countries: for they reason thus; that whoever makes ill returns to his benefactor, must needs be a common enemy to the rest of mankind, from whom he has received no obligation, and therefore such a man is not fit to live.

Their notions relating to the duties of parents and children differ extremely from ours. For, since the conjunction of male and female is founded upon the great law of nature, in order to propagate and continue the species, the Lilliputians will needs have it, that men and women are joined together, like other animals, by the motives of concupiscence; and that their tenderness towards their young proceeds from the like natural principle: for which reason they will never allow that a child is under any obligation to his father for begetting him, or to his mother for bringing him into the world; which, considering the miseries of human life, was neither a benefit in itself, nor intended so by his parents, whose thoughts, in their love encounters, were otherwise employed. Upon these, and the like reasonings, their opinion is, that parents tudes para conducir y multiplicar y defender sus corrupciones.

Del mismo modo, no creer en una Divina Providencia incapacita a un hombre para desempeñar cargos públicos; porque, dado que los reyes se proclaman a sí mismos diputados de la Providencia, los liliputienses entienden que no hay nada más absurdo en un príncipe que dar empleos a hombres que niegan la autoridad en nombre de la cual ellos se conducen.

Al hablar de estas y de las siguientes leyes quiero que se entienda que me refiero sólo a las instituciones originales, y no a la escandalosa corrupción en que este pueblo ha caído a causa de la degenerada naturaleza del hombre; pues por lo que toca a esa vergonzosa práctica de obtener altos cargos haciendo volatines, o divisas de favor y distinción saltando por encima de varillas o arrastrándose bajo ellas, ha de saber el lector que fue introducida por el abuelo del emperador hoy reinante, y ha prosperado a tal punto por el incremento gradual de partidos y facciones.

La ingratitude allí es un crimen capital, como leemos que lo ha sido en algunos otros países; porque — razonan ellos — aquel que paga con maldad a su bienhechor ha de ser necesariamente un enemigo común del resto de la Humanidad, que no le ha hecho beneficio ninguno, y, por lo tanto, tal hombre no es a propósito para esta vida.

Sus nociones respecto de los deberes de padres e hijos difieren extremadamente de las nuestras. De ningún modo conceden que un niño está obligado a su padre por haberlo engendrado, ni a su madre por haberlo traído al mundo; lo cual, teniendo en cuenta las miserias de la vida humana, no es un beneficio en sí mismo, ni tampoco fue la intención de sus padres, cuyo pensamiento durante sus lides amorosas tenía bien distinta ocupación. Por estos y otros parecidos razonamientos, es su opinión que los padres son los últimos a quienes debe confiarse la educación de sus propios hijos, y, en consecuencia, hay en cada edad establecimientos públicos, adonde todos los padres, con excepción de los aldeanos y los
are the last of all others to be trusted with the education of their own children; and therefore they have in every town public nurseries, where all parents, except cottagers and labourers, are obliged to send their infants of both sexes to be reared and educated, when they come to the age of twenty moons, at which time they are supposed to have some rudiments of docility. These schools are of several kinds, suited to different qualities, and both sexes. They have certain professors well skilled in preparing children for such a condition of life as befits the rank of their parents, and their own capacities, as well as inclinations. I shall first say something of the male nurseries, and then of the female.

The nurseries for males of noble or eminent birth, are provided with grave and learned professors, and their several deputies. The clothes and food of the children are plain and simple. They are bred up in the principles of honour, justice, courage, modesty, clemency, religion, and love of their country; they are always employed in some business, except in the times of eating and sleeping, which are very short, and two hours for diversions consisting of bodily exercises. They are dressed by men till four years of age, and then are obliged to dress themselves, although their quality be ever so great; and the women attendant, who are aged proportionally to ours at fifty, perform only the most menial offices. They are never suffered to converse with servants, but go together in smaller or greater numbers to take their diversions, and always in the presence of a professor, or one of his deputies; whereby they avoid those early bad impressions of folly and vice, to which our children are subject.

Their parents are suffered to see them only twice a year; the visit is to last but an hour; they are allowed to kiss the child at meeting and parting; but a professor, who always stands by on those occasions, will not suffer them to whisper, or use any fondling expressions, or bring any presents of toys, sweetmeats, and the like.

The pension from each family for the education and entertainment of a child, upon failure of due payment, is levied labradores, están obligados a llevar a sus pequeños de uno y otro sexo para que los crien y eduquen así que llegan a la edad de veinte lunas, tiempo en que ya se les suponen algunos rudimentos de docilidad. Estos seminarios son de varias categorías, acomodadas a las diferentes clases, y para ambos sexos. Tienen profesores especialmente hábiles en la educación de niños para la condición de vida conveniente a la alcurnia de sus padres y a la propia capacidad de cada uno, así como a las particulares inclinaciones. Diré primero algo de los establecimientos para varones, y luego de los de hembras.
by the emperor’s officers.

The nurseries for children of ordinary gentlemen, merchants, traders, and handicrafts, are managed proportionally after the same manner; only those designed for trades are put out apprentices at eleven years old, whereas those of persons of quality continue in their exercises till fifteen, which answers to twenty-one with us: but the confinement is gradually lessened for the last three years.

In the female nurseries, the young girls of quality are educated much like the males, only they are dressed by orderly servants of their own sex; but always in the presence of a professor or deputy, till they come to dress themselves, which is at five years old. And if it be found that these nurses ever presume to entertain the girls with frightful or foolish stories, or the common follies practised by chambermaids among us, they are publicly whipped thrice about the city, imprisoned for a year, and banished for life to the most desolate part of the country. Thus the young ladies are as much ashamed of being cowards and fools as the men, and despise all personal ornaments, beyond decency and cleanliness: neither did I perceive any difference in their education made by their difference of sex, only that the exercises of the females were not altogether so robust; and that some rules were given them relating to domestic life, and a smaller compass of learning was enjoined them: for their maxim is, that among peoples of quality, a wife should be always a reasonable and agreeable companion, because she cannot always be young. When the girls are twelve years old, which among them is the marriageable age, their parents or guardians take them home, with great expressions of gratitude to the professors, and seldom without tears of the young lady and her companions.

Los establecimientos para niños de familias de posición media, como comerciantes, traficantes y menestrales, funcionan proporcionalmente según el mismo sistema, sólo que los que han de dedicarse a oficio empiezan el aprendizaje a los once años, mientras los de las personas de calidad continúan sus ejercicios hasta los quince, que corresponden a los veinticinco entre nosotros, aunque su reclusión va perdiendo gradualmente en rigor durante los tres últimos años.

En los seminarios para hembras, las niñas de calidad son educadas casi lo mismo que los varones, sólo que las visitan reposada servidumbre de su mismo sexo, pero siempre en presencia de un profesor o auxiliar, hasta que se visten ellas solas, que es cuando llegan a los cinco años. Si se descubre que estas niñas intentan alguna vez distraer a las niñas con cuentos terroríficos o estúpidos, o con alguno de los disparates que acostumbran las doncellas entre nosotros, son públicamente paseadas con azotes tres vueltas a la ciudad, encarceladas por un año y desterradas de por vida a la parte más desolada del país. De este modo las señoritas sienten tanta vergüenza como los hombres, de ser cobardes y melindrosas, y desprecian todo adorno personal que vaya más allá de lo decente y lo limpio; ni tampoco advierten en su educación diferencia ninguna basada en la diferencia de sexo, a no ser que los ejercicios femeninos nunca llegan a ser tan duros, que se les instruye en algunas reglas referentes a la vida doméstica, y que se les asigna un plan menos amplio de estudios. Es allí una máxima que, entre gentes de calidad, la esposa debe ser siempre una discreta y agradable compañía, ya que no puede ser siempre joven. Cuando las muchachas llegan a los doce años, que es entre ellos la edad del matrimonio, sus padres o tutores se las llevan a casa con vivas expresiones de gratitud para los profesores, y rara vez sin lágrimas de la señorita y de sus compañeras. En los colegios para hembras de más baja categoría se enseña a las niñas toda clase de trabajos propios de su sexo y de sus varios rangos. Las destinadas a aprendizajes salen a los siete años, y las demás siguen hasta los once.
In the nurseries of females of the meaner sort, the children are instructed in all kinds of works proper for their sex, and their several degrees: those intended for apprentices are dismissed at seven years old, the rest are kept to eleven.

The meaner families who have children at these nurseries, are obliged, besides their annual pension, which is as low as possible, to return to the steward of the nursery a small monthly share of their gettings, to be a portion for the child; and therefore all parents are limited in their expenses by the law. For the Lilliputians think nothing can be more unjust, than for people, in subservience to their own appetites, to bring children into the world, and leave the burthen of supporting them on the public. As to persons of quality, they give security to appropriate a certain sum for each child, suitable to their condition; and these funds are always managed with good husbandry and the most exact justice.

The cottagers and labourers keep their children at home, their business being only to till and cultivate the earth, and therefore their education is of little consequence to the public:

but the old and diseased among them, are supported by hospitals; for begging is a trade unknown in this empire.

And here it may, perhaps, divert the curious reader, to give some account of my domestics, and my manner of living in this country, during a residence of nine months, and thirteen days. Having a head mechanically turned, and being likewise forced by necessity, I had made for myself a table and chair convenient enough, out of the largest trees in the royal park. Two hundred sempstresses were employed to make me shirts, and linen for my bed and table, all of the strongest and coarsest kind they could get; which, however, they were forced to quilt together in several folds, for the thickest was some degrees finer than lawn. Their linen is usually three inches wide, and three feet make a piece. The sempstresses took my measure as I
lay on the ground, one standing at my neck, and another at my mid-leg, with a strong cord extended, that each held by the end, while a third measured the length of the cord with a rule of an inch long. Then they measured my right thumb, and desired no more; for by a mathematical computation, that twice round the thumb is once round the wrist, and so on to the neck and the waist, and by the help of my old shirt, which I displayed on the ground before them for a pattern, they fitted me exactly. Three hundred tailors were employed in the same manner to make me clothes; but they had another contrivance for taking my measure. I kneeled down, and they raised a ladder from the ground to my neck; upon this ladder one of them mounted, and let fall a plumb-line from my collar to the floor, which just answered the length of my coat: but my waist and arms I measured myself. When my clothes were finished, which was done in my house (for the largest of theirs would not have been able to hold them), they looked like the patch-work made by the ladies in England, only that mine were all of a colour.

I had three hundred cooks to dress my victuals, in little convenient huts built about my house, where they and their families lived, and prepared me two dishes a-piece. I took up twenty waiters in my hand, and placed them on the table: a hundred more attended below on the ground, some with dishes of meat, and some with barrels of wine and other liquors slung on their shoulders; all which the waiters above drew up, as I wanted, in a very ingenious manner, by certain cords, as we draw the bucket up a well in Europe. A dish of their meat was a good mouthful, and a barrel of their liquor a reasonable draught. Their mutton yields to ours, but their beef is excellent. I have had a sirloin so large, that I have been forced to make three bites of it; but this is rare. My servants were astonished to see me eat it, bones and all, as in our country we do the leg of a lark. Their geese and turkeys I usually ate at a mouthful, and I confess they far exceed ours. Of their smaller fowl I could take up twenty or thirty at the
end of my knife.

One day his imperial majesty, being informed of my way of living, desired “that himself and his royal consort, with the young princes of the blood of both sexes, might have the happiness,” as he was pleased to call it, “of dining with me.” They came accordingly, and I placed them in chairs of state, upon my table, just over against me, with their guards about them. Flimnap, the lord high treasurer, attended there likewise with his white staff; and I observed he often looked on me with a sour countenance, which I would not seem to regard, but ate more than usual, in honour to my dear country, as well as to fill the court with admiration. I have some private reasons to believe, that this visit from his majesty gave Flimnap an opportunity of doing me ill offices to his master. That minister had always been my secret enemy, though he outwardly caressed me more than was usual to the moroseness of his nature. He represented to the emperor “the low condition of his treasury; that he was forced to take up money at a great discount; that exchequer bills would not circulate under nine per cent. below par; that I had cost his majesty above a million and a half of SPRUGS” (their greatest gold coin, about the bigness of a spangle) “and, upon the whole, that it would be advisable in the emperor to take the first fair occasion of dismissing me.”

I am here obliged to vindicate the reputation of an excellent lady, who was an innocent sufferer upon my account. The treasurer took a fancy to be jealous of his wife, from the malice of some evil tongues, who informed him that her grace had taken a violent affection for my person; and the court scandal ran for some time, that she once came privately to my lodging. This I solemnly declare to be a most infamous falsehood, without any grounds, further than that her grace was pleased to treat me with all innocent marks of freedom and friendship. I own she came often to my house, but always publicly, nor
ever without three more in the coach, who were usually her sister and young daughter, and some particular acquaintance; but this was common to many other ladies of the court. And I still appeal to my servants round, whether they at any time saw a coach at my door, without knowing what persons were in it. On those occasions, when a servant had given me notice, my custom was to go immediately to the door, and, after paying my respects, to take up the coach and two horses very carefully in my hands (for, if there were six horses, the postillion always unharnessed four,) and place them on a table, where I had fixed a movable rim quite round, of five inches high, to prevent accidents. And I have often had four coaches and horses at once on my table, full of company, while I sat in my chair, leaning my face towards them; and when I was engaged with one set, the coachmen would gently drive the others round my table. I have passed many an afternoon very agreeably in these conversations. But I defy the treasurer, or his two informers (I will name them, and let them make the best of it) Clustril and Drunlo, to prove that any person ever came to me INCognito, except the secretary Reldresal, who was sent by express command of his imperial majesty, as I have before related. I should not have dwelt so long upon this particular, if it had not been a point wherein the reputation of a great lady is so nearly concerned, to say nothing of my own; though I then had the honour to be a NARDAC, which the treasurer himself is not; for all the world knows, that he is only a GLUMGLUM, a title inferior by one degree, as that of a marquis is to a duke in England; yet I allow he preceded me in right of his post. These false informations, which I afterwards came to the knowledge of by an accident not proper to mention, made the treasurer show his lady for some time an ill countenance, and me a worse; and although he was at last undeceived and reconciled to her, yet I lost all credit with him, and found my interest decline very fast with the emperor himself, who was, indeed, too much governed by that favourite.
CHAPTER VII.

[The author, being informed of a design to accuse him of high-treason, makes his escape to Blefuscu. His reception there.]

Before I proceed to give an account of my leaving this kingdom, it may be proper to inform the reader of a private intrigue which had been for two months forming against me.

I had been hitherto, all my life, a stranger to courts, for which I was unqualified by the meanness of my condition. I had indeed heard and read enough of the dispositions of great princes and ministers, but never expected to have found such terrible effects of them, in so remote a country, governed, as I thought, by very different maxims from those in Europe.

When I was just preparing to pay my attendance on the emperor of Blefuscu, a considerable person at court (to whom I had been very serviceable, at a time when he lay under the highest displeasure of his imperial majesty) came to my house very privately at night, in a close chair, and, without sending his name, desired admittance. The chairmen were dismissed; I put the chair, with his lordship in it, into my coat-pocket: and, giving orders to a trusty servant, to say I was indisposed and gone to sleep, I fastened the door of my house, placed the chair on the table, according to my usual custom, and sat down by it. After the common salutations were over, observing his lordship’s countenance full of concern, and inquiring into the reason, he desired “I would hear him with patience, in a matter that highly concerned my honour and my life.” His speech was to the following effect, for I took notes of it as soon as he left me:-

“You are to know,” said he, “that several committees of council have been lately called, in the most private manner,
on your account; and it is but two days since his majesty came to a full resolution.

5 "You are very sensible that Skyresh Bolgolam" (GALBET, or high-admiral) "has been your mortal enemy, almost ever since your arrival. His original reasons I know not; but his hatred is increased since your great success against Blefuscu, by which his glory as admiral is much obscured. This lord, in conjunction with Flimmap the high-treasurer, whose enmity against you is notorious on account of his lady, Limtoc the general, Lalcon the chamberlain, and Balmuff the grand justiciary, have prepared articles of impeachment against you, for treason and other capital crimes."

This preface made me so impatient, being conscious of my own merits and innocence, that I was going to interrupt him; when he entreated [besought] me to be silent, and thus proceeded:—

"Out of gratitude for the favours you have done me, I procured information of the whole proceedings, and a copy of the articles; wherein I venture my head for your service.

"Articles of Impeachment against QUINBUS FLESTRIN, (the Man-Mountain.)

ARTICLE I.

"Whereas, by a statute made in the reign of his imperial majesty Calin Deffar Plune, it is enacted, that whoever shall make water within the precincts of the royal palace, shall be liable to the pains and penalties of high-treason; notwithstanding, the said Quinbus Flestrin, in open breach of the said law, under colour of extinguishing the fire kindled in the apartment of his majesty’s most dear imperial consort, did maliciously, traitorously, and devilishly, by discharge of his urine, put out the said fire kindled in the said apartment, lying and being within the precincts of the said royal palace, against the statute in that case provided, etc. against the duty, etc.

Sabéis muy bien que Skyresh Bolgolam, galvet —o sea almirante—, ha sido vuestro mortal enemigo casi desde que llegasteis. No sé las razones en que se funde; pero su odio ha aumentado a partir de vuestra gran victoria contra Blefuscu, con la cual su gloria como almirante está muy obscurecida. Este señor, en unión de Flimnap, el gran tesorero —cuya enemiga contra vos es notoria a causa de su señora—; Limtoc, el general; Lalcon, el chamberlán, y Balmull, el gran justicia, han redactado en contra vuestra articulaciones de acusación por traición y otros crímenes capitales.

Este prefacio me alteró en tales términos, consciente como estaba yo de mis merecimientos y mi inocencia, que estuve a punto de interrumpir, cuando él me suplicó que guardara silencio, y prosiguió de esta suerte:

ARTÍCULOS DE ACUSACIÓN CONTRA QUINBUS FLESTRIN (EL HOMBRE-MONTAÑA)

Artículo I.

«Que el citado Quinbus Flestrin, habiendo traído la flota imperial de Blefuscu al puerto real, y habiéndole después ordenado Su Majestad Imperial capturar todos los demás barcos del citado imperio de Blefuscu y reducir aquel imperio a la condición de provincia, que se abernase un virrey nuestro, y destruir y dar muerte no sólo a todos los desterrados anchoextremistas, sino asimismo a toda la gente de aquel imperio que no abjurate inmediatamente de la herejía anchoextremista, él, el citado Flestrin, como un desleal traidor contra Su Muy Benigna y Serena Majestad Imperial, pidió ser excusado del citado servicio bajo el pretexto de repugnancia a forzar conciencias y a destruir las libertades y las vidas de pueblos inocentes.

breach (often foll. by of) the breaking of or failure to observe a law, contract, etc. 2 a breaking of relations; an estrangement. b a quarrel. 3 a broken state. b a gap, esp. one made by artillery in fortifications. Brecha, infracción, abertura 1 break through; make a gap in. 2 break (a law, contract, etc.). Hacer brecha (ballena, ejército), irrumpir, salir a la superficie, whale breaching saltar de la ballena breach of the peace an infringement or violation of the public peace by any disturbance or riot etc. breach of promise the breaking of a promise, esp. a promise to marry. stand in the breach bear the brunt of an attack. step into the breach give help in a crisis, esp. by replacing someone who has dropped out.

55
ARTICLE II.

"That the said Quinbus Flestrin, having brought the imperial fleet of Blefuscu into the royal port, and being afterwards commanded by his imperial majesty to seize all the other ships of the said empire of Blefuscu, and reduce that empire to a province, to be governed by a viceroy from hence, and to destroy and put to death, not only all the Big-endian exiles, but likewise all the people of that empire who would not immediately forsake the Big-endian heresy, he, the said Flestrin, like a false traitor against his most auspicious, serene, imperial majesty, did petition to be excused from the said service, upon pretence of unwillingness to force the consciences, or destroy the liberties and lives of an innocent people.

ARTICLE III.

"That, whereas certain ambassadors arrived from the Court of Blefuscu, to sue for peace in his majesty’s court, he, the said Flestrin, did, like a false traitor against his most auspicious, serene, imperial majesty, aid, abet, comfort, and divert, the said ambassadors, although he knew them to be servants to a prince who was lately an open enemy to his imperial majesty, and in an open war against his said majesty.

ARTICLE IV.

"That the said Quinbus Flestrin, contrary to the duty of a faithful subject, is now preparing to make a voyage to the court and empire of Blefuscu, for which he has received only verbal license from his imperial majesty; and, under colour of the said license, does falsely and traitorously intend to take the said voyage, and thereby to aid, comfort, and abet the emperor of Blefuscu, so lately an enemy, and in open war with his imperial majesty aforesaid.'

"There are some other articles; but these are the most important, of which I have read you an abstract.

"In the several debates upon this impeachment, it must be confessed that his majesty gave many marks of his great lenity; often urging the services you had done him, and...

»Que siendo así que determinados embajadores llegaron de la corte de Blefuscu a pedir paz a la corte de Su Majestad, el citado Flestrin, como un desleal traidor, ayudó, patrocinó, alentó y advirtió a los citados embajadores, aunque sabía que se trataba de servidores de un príncipe que recientemente había sido enemigo declarado de Su Majestad Imperial y estado en guerra declarada contra su citada Majestad.

»Hay algunos otros artículos, pero éstos son los más importantes, y de ellos os he leído un extracto.

»En el curso de los varios debates habidos en esta acusación hay que reconocer que Su Majestad dio numerosas muestras de su gran benignidad, invocando con frecuencia los servicios que le...
endeavouring to extenuate your crimes. The treasurer and admiral insisted that you should be put to the most painful and ignominious death, by setting fire to your house at night, and the general was to attend with twenty thousand men, armed with poisoned arrows, to shoot you on the face and hands. Some of your servants were to have private orders to strew a poisonous juice on your shirts and sheets, which would soon make you tear your own flesh, and die in the utmost torture. The general came into the same opinion; so that for a long time there was a majority against you; but his majesty resolving, if possible, to spare your life, at last brought off the chamberlain.

“Upon this incident, Reldresal, principal secretary for private affairs, who always approved himself your true friend, was commanded by the emperor to deliver his opinion, which he accordingly did; and therein justified the good thoughts you have of him. He allowed your crimes to be great, but that still there was room for mercy, the most commendable virtue in a prince, and for which his majesty was so justly celebrated. He said, the friendship between you and him was so well known to the world, that perhaps the most honourable board might think him partial; however, in obedience to the command he had received, he would freely offer his sentiments. That if his majesty, in consideration of your services, and pursuant to his own merciful disposition, would please to spare your life, and only give orders to put out both your eyes, he humbly conceived, that by this expedient justice might in some measure be satisfied, and all the world would applaud the lenity of the emperor, as well as the fair and generous proceedings of those who have the honour to be his counsellors. That the loss of your eyes would be no impediment to your bodily strength, by which you might still be useful to his majesty; that blindness is an addition to courage, by concealing dangers from us; that the fear you had for your eyes, was the greatest difficulty in bringing over the enemy’s fleet, and it would be sufficient for you to see by the eyes of habíais prestado y tratando de atenuar vuestros crímenes. El tesorero y el almirante insistieron en que se os debería dar la muerte más cruel e ignominiosa, poniendo fuego a vuestra casa durante la noche y procediendo el general con veinte mil hombres armados de flechas envenenadas a disparar contra vos, apuntando a la cara y a las manos. Algunos servidores vuestros debían recibir orden secreta de esparcir en vuestras camisas y sábanas un jugo venenoso que pronto os haría desgarrar vuestras propias carnes con vuestras manos y morir en la más espantosa tortura. El general se sumó a esta opinión, así que durante largo plazo hubo mayoría en contra vuestra; pero Su Majestad, resuelto a salvaros la vida si era posible, pudo por último disuadir al chambelán.

»Reldresal, secretario principal de Asuntos Privados, que siempre se proclamó vuestro amigo verdadero, fue requerido por el emperador para que expusiera su opinión sobre este punto, como así lo hizo, y con ello acreditó el buen concepto en que le tenéis. Convino en que vuestros crímenes eran grandes, pero que, no obstante, había lugar para la gracia, la más loable virtud en los príncipes, y por la cual Su Majestad era tan justamente alabado. Dijo que la amistad entre vos y él era tan conocida en todo el mundo, que quizá el ilustísimo tribunal tuviera su juicio por interesado. Sin embargo, obedeciendo al mandato que había recibido, descubriría libremente sus sentimientos. Si Su Majestad, en consideración a vuestros servicios y siguiendo su clemente inclinación, se dignara dejaros la vida y dar orden solamente de que os sacaran los dos ojos, él suponía, salvando los respetos, que con esta medida la justicia quedaría en cierto modo satisfecha y todo el mundo aplaudiría la benignidad del emperador, así como la noble y generosa conducta de quienes tenían el honor de ser sus consejeros. La pérdida de vuestros ojos —argumentaba él— no serviría de impedimento a vuestra fuerza corporal, con la que aun podíais ser útil a Su Majestad. La ceguera aumenta el valor ocultándonos los peligros, y el miedo que tuvisteis por vuestros ojos os fue la mayor dificultad para traer la flota enemiga. Y, finalmente, que os sería bastante ver por los ojos de los ministros,
the ministers, since the greatest princes
do no more.

“...This proposal was received with the
utmost disapprobation by the whole
board. Bolgolam, the admiral, could not
preserve his temper, but, rising up in
fury, said, he wondered how the
secretary durst presume to give his
opinion for preserving the life of a
traitor; that the services you had
performed were, by all true reasons of
state, the great aggravation of your
criimes; that you, who were able to
extinguish the fire by discharge of urine
in her majesty’s apartment (which he
mentioned with horror), might, at
another time, raise an inundation by the
same means, to drown the whole palace;
and the same strength which enabled you
to bring over the enemy’s fleet, might
serve, upon the first discontent, to ca-
rry it back; that he had good reasons to
think you were a Big-endian in your
heart; and, as treason begins in the heart,
before it appears in overt-acts, so he
accused you as a traitor on that account,
and therefore insisted you should be put
to death.

“The treasurer was of the same
opinion: he showed to what straits his
majesty’s revenue was reduced, by the
charge of maintaining you, which
would soon grow insupportable; that
the secretary’s expedient of putting out
your eyes, was so far from being a
remedy against this evil, that it would
probably increase it, as is manifest
from the common practice of blinding
some kind of fowls, after which they
fed the faster, and grew sooner fat; that
his sacred majesty and the council, who
are your judges, were, in their own
consciences, fully convinced of your
guilt, which was a sufficient argument
to condemn you to death, without the
formal proofs required by the strict
letter of the law.

“But his imperial majesty, fully
determined against capital punishment,
was graciously pleased to say, that
since the council thought the loss of
your eyes too easy a censure, some
other way may be inflicted hereafter.
And your friend the secretary, humbly
desiring to be heard again, in answer
to what the treasurer had objected,
concerning the great charge his majesty
ya que los más grandes principes no
suelen hacer de otro modo.

»Esta proposición fue acogida
con la desaprobación mas completa
por toda la Junta. Bolgolam, el
almirante, no pudo contener su có-
lera, antes bien, levantándose en-
furecido, dijo que se admiraba de
cómo un secretario se atrevía a dar
una opinión favorable a que se res-
petase la vida de un traidor, que
los servicios que habíais hecho
eran, según todas las verdaderas
razones de Estado, la mayor agra-
vación de vuestros crímenes; que
la misma fuerza que os permitió
traer la flota enemiga podría
serviros para devolverla al primer
motive de descontento; que tenía
firmes razones para pensar que
erais un estrechoextremista en el
fondo de vuestro corazón, y que,
como la traición comienza en el
corazón antes de manifesterse en
actos descubiertos, él os acusaba
de traidor con este motivo, e insis-
tía, por tanto, en que se os diera
la muerte.

»El tesorero fue de la misma opi-
nión. Expuso a qué estrecheces se veían
reducidas las rentas de Su Majestad por
la carga de manteneros, que pronto ha-
bría llegado a ser insosportable, y aun
añadió que la medida propuesta por el
secretario, de sacaros los ojos, lejos de
remediar este mal lo aumentaría, como
lo hace manifiesto la práctica acostum-
brada de cegar a cierta clase de aves,
que así comen más de prisa y engordan
más pronto. A su juicio, Su Sagrada
Majestad y el Consejo, que son vues-
tros jueces, estaban en conciencia ple-
namente convencidos de vuestra culpa,
lo que era suficiente argumento para
condenaros a muerte sin las pruebas
formales requeridas por la letra estre-
ta de la ley.

»Pero Su Majestad Imperial, resuel-
tamente dispuesto en contra de la pena
capital, se dignó graciosamente decir
que, cuando al Consejo le pareciese la
pérdida de vuestros ojos un castigo de-
masiado suave, otros había que podérnos
injilir después. Y vuestro amigo el se-
cretario, pidiendo humildemente ser oído
otra vez, en respuesta a lo que el tesorero
había objetado en cuanto a la gran
was at maintaining you, said, that his excellency, who had the sole disposal of the emperor’s revenue, might easily provide against that evil, by gradually lessening your establishment; by which, for want of sufficient for you would grow weak and faint, and lose your appetite, and consequently, decay, and consume in a few months; neither would the stench of your carcass be then so dangerous, when it should become more than half diminished; and immediately upon your death five or six thousand of his majesty’s subjects might, in two or three days, cut your flesh from your bones, take it away by cart-loads, and bury it in distant parts, to prevent infection, leaving the skeleton as a monument of admiration to posterity.

“In three days your friend the secretary will be directed to come to your house, and read before you the articles of impeachment; and then to signify the great lenity and favour of his majesty and council, whereby you are only condemned to the loss of your eyes, which his majesty does not question you will gratefully and humbly submit to; and twenty of his majesty’s surgeons will attend, in order to see the operation well performed, by discharging very sharp-pointed arrows into the balls of your eyes, as you lie on the ground.

“I leave to your prudence what measures you will take; and to avoid suspicion, I must immediately return in as private a manner as I came.”

His lordship did so; and I remained alone, under many doubts and carga que pesaba sobre su Majestad con manteneros, dijo que Su Excelencia, que por si solo disponía de las rentas del emperador, podía fácilmente prevenir este mal con ir aminorando vuestra asignación, de modo que, faltó de alimentación suficiente, fueras quedándosos flojo y extenuado, perdieras el apetito y os consumierais en pocos meses. Tampoco sería entonces—tan peligroso el hedor de vuestro cadáver, reducido como estaría a menos de la mitad; e inmediatamente después de vuestra muerte, cinco o seis mil súbditos de Su Majestad podían en dos o tres días quitar toda vuestra carne de vuestros huesos, transportarla a carretadas y enterrarla en diferentes sitios para evitar infecciones, dejando el esqueleto como un monumento de admiración para la posteridad.

»De este modo, gracias a la gran amistad del secretario, quedó concertado el asunto. Se encargó severamente que el proyecto de mataros de hambre poco a poco se mantuviera secreto; pero la sentencia de sacaros los ojos había de trasladarse a los libros; no disintiendo ninguno, excepto Bolgolam, el almirante, quien, hechura de la emperatriz, era continuamente instigado por ella para insistir en vuestra muerte.

»En un plazo de tres días vuestro amigo el secretario recibirá el encargo de venir a vuestra casa y leeros los artículos de acusación, y luego daros a conocer la gran clemencia y generosidad de Su Majestad y de su Consejo, gracias a la cual se os condena solamente a la pérdida de los ojos, a lo que Su Majestad no duda que os sometiereis agradecida y humildemente. Veinte cirujanos de Su Majestad, para que la operación se lleve a efecto de buen modo, procederán a descargaros afiladísimas flechas en las niñas de los ojos estando vos tendido en el suelo.

»Dejo a vuestra prudencia qué medias debéis tomar; y, para evitar sospechas, me vuelvo inmediatamente con el mismo secreto que he venido.”

Así lo hizo su señoría, y yo quedé solo, sumido en dudas y
perplexities of mind.

It was a custom introduced by this prince and his ministry (very different, as I have been assured, from the practice of former times,) that after the court had decreed any cruel execution, either to gratify the monarch’s resentment, or the malice of a favourite, the emperor always made a speech to his whole council, expressing his great lenity and tenderness, as qualities known and confessed by all the world. This speech was immediately published throughout the kingdom; nor did any thing terrify the people so much as those encomiums on his majesty’s mercy; because it was observed, that the more these praises were enlarged and insisted on, the more inhuman was the punishment, and the sufferer more innocent. Yet, as to myself, I must confess, having never been designed for a courtier, either by my birth or education, I was so ill a judge of things, that I could not discover the lenity and favour of this sentence, but conceived it (perhaps erroneously) rather to be rigorous than gentle. I sometimes thought of standing my trial; for, although I could not deny the facts alleged in the several articles, yet I hoped they would admit of some extenuation. But having in my life perused many state-trials, which I ever observed to terminate as the judges thought fit to direct, I durst not rely on so dangerous a decision, in so critical a juncture, and against such powerful enemies. Once I was strongly bent upon resistance, for, while I had liberty the whole strength of that empire could hardly subdue me, and I might easily with stones pelt the metropolis to pieces; but I soon rejected that project with horror, by remembering the oath I had made to the emperor, the favours I had received from him, and the high title of NARDAC he conferred upon me. Neither had I so soon learned the gratitude of courtiers, to persuade myself, that his majesty’s present seventies acquitted me of all past obligations.

At last, I fixed upon a resolution, for which it is probable I may incur some censure, and not unjustly; for I confess I owe the preserving of mine eyes, and consequently my liberty, to perplexidades.

Era costumbre introducida por este príncipe y su Ministerio —muy diferente, según me aseguraron, de las prácticas de tiempos anteriores— que una vez que la corte había decretado una ejecución cruel fuese para satisfacer el resentimiento del monarca o la mala intención de un favorito—, el emperador pronunciase un discurso a su Consejo en pleno exponiendo su gran clemencia y ternura, cualidades sabidas y confesadas por el mundo entero. Este discurso se publicaba inmediatamente por todo el reino, y nada aterraba al pueblo tanto como estos encomios de la clemencia de Su Majestad, porque se había observado que cuando más se aumentaban estas alabanzas y se insistía en ellas, más inhumano era el castigo y más inocente la víctima. Y en cuanto a mi, debo confesar que, no estando designado para cortesano ni por nacimiento ni por educación, era tan mal juez en estas cosas, que no pude descubrir la clemencia ni la generosidad de esta sentencia; antes bien, la juzgué —quizá erróneamente— más rigurosa que suave. A veces pensaba en tomar mi defensa en el proceso; pues, aun cuando no podía negar los hechos alegados en los varios artículos, confiaba en que pudieran admitir alguna atenuación. Pero habiendo examinado en mi vida atentamente muchos procesos de Estado y visto siempre que terminaban según a los jueces convenía, no me atreví a confiarme a tan peligrosa determinación en coyuntura tan crítica y frente a enemigos tan poderosos. En una ocasión me sentí fuertemente inclinado a la resistencia, ya que, estando en libertad como estaba, difícilmente hubiera podido someterme toda la fuerza de aquel imperio, y yo podía sin trabajo hacer trizas a pedradas la metrópoli; pero en seguida rechacé este proyecto con horror al recordar el juramento que había hecho al emperador, los favores que había recibido de él y el alto título de nardac que me había conferido. No había aprendido la gratitud de los cortesanos tan pronto que pudiera persuadirme a mi mismo de que las presentes severidades de Su Majestad me relevaban de todas las obligaciones anteriores.

Por fin tomé una resolución que es probable que me valga algunas censuras, y no injustamente, pues confieso que debía conservar mis ojos, y por lo tanto mi libertad, a mi grande te-
my own great rashness and want of experience; because, if I had then known the nature of princes and ministers, which I have since observed in many other courts, and their methods of treating criminals less obnoxious than myself, I should, with great alacrity and readiness, have submitted to so easy a punishment. But hurried on by the precipitancy of youth, and having his imperial majesty’s license to pay my attendance upon the emperor of Blefuscu, I took this opportunity, before the three days were elapsed, to send a letter to my friend the secretary, signifying my resolution of setting out that morning for Blefuscu, pursuant to the leave I had got; and, without waiting for an answer, I went to that side of the island where our fleet lay. I seized a large man of war, tied a cable to the prow, and, lifting up the anchors, I stripped myself, put my clothes (together with my coverlet, which I carried under my arm) into the vessel, and, drawing it after me, between wading and swimming arrived at the royal port of Blefuscu, where the people had long expected me: they lent me two guides to direct me to the capital city, which is of the same name. I held them in my hands, till I came within two hundred yards of the gate, and desired them “to signify my arrival to one of the secretaries, and let him know, I there waited his majesty’s command.” I had an answer in about an hour, “that his majesty, attended by the royal family, and great officers of the court, was coming out to receive me.” I advanced a hundred yards. The emperor and his train alighted from their horses, the empress and ladies from their coaches, and I did not perceive they were in any fright or concern. I lay on the ground to kiss his majesty’s and the empress’s hands. I told his majesty, “that I was come according to my promise, and with the license of the emperor my master, to have the honour of seeing so mighty a monarch, and to offer him any service in my power, consistent with my duty to my own prince;” not mentioning a word of my disgrace, because I had hitherto no regular information of it, and might suppose myself wholly ignorant of any such meridad y falta de experiencia; porque si yo hubiese conocido entonces la naturaleza de los príncipes y los ministros como luego la he observado en otras muchas cortes, y sus sistemas de tratar a criminales menos peligrosos que yo, me hubiera sometido a pena tan suave con gran alegria y diligencia. Pero empujado por la precipitación de la juventud y disponiendo del permiso de Su Majestad Imperial para rendir homenaje al emperador de Blefuscu, aproveché esta oportunidad antes de que transcurrieran los tres días para enviar una carta a mi amigo el secretario comunicándole mi resolución de partir aquella misma mañana para Blefuscu, ateniéndome a la licencia que había recibido; y sin aguardar respuesta, marché a la parte de la isla donde estaba nuestra flota. Cogí un gran buque de guerra, até un cable a la proa, y después de levar anclas me desnudé, puse mis ropas —juntas con mi colcha, que me había llevado bajo el brazo— en el buque, y, tirando de él, ya vadeando, ya nadando, llegué al puerto de Blefuscu, donde las gentes llevaban esperándome largo tiempo. Me enviaron dos guías para que me encaminasen a la capital que lleva el mismo nombre. Los llevé en las manos hasta que llegué a doscientas yardas de las puertas y les rogué que comunicasen mi llegada a uno de los secretarios y le hiciesen saber que esperaba allí las órdenes de Su Majestad. Al cabo de una hora obtuve respuesta de que Su Majestad, acompañado de la familia real y de los magnates de la corte, salía a recibirme. Avancé cien yardas. El emperador y su comitiva se apearon de sus caballos, la emperatriz y las damas de sus coches, y no advirtió en ellos temor ni inquietud alguna. Me acosté en el suelo para besar la mano de Su Majestad y de la emperatriz. Dije a Su Majestad que había ido en cumplimiento de mi promesa y con permiso del emperador, mi dueño, a tener el honor de ver a un monarca tan poderoso y de ofrecerle cualquier servicio de que yo fuese capaz y se aviniese con mis deberes hacia mi propio príncipe, no diciendo una palabra acerca de la desgracia en que había caído, puesto que a la sazón no tenía yo informes oficiales de ella y podia fingirme por completo ignorante de tal designio. Ni tampoco podía razonable-
design; neither could I reasonably conceive that the emperor would discover the secret, while I was out of his power; wherein, however, it soon appeared I was deceived.

I shall not trouble the reader with the particular account of my reception at this court, which was suitable to the generosity of so great a prince; nor of the difficulties I was in for want of a house and bed, being forced to lie on the ground, wrapped up in my coverlet.

CHAPTER VIII.

[The author, by a lucky accident, finds means to leave Blefuscu; and, after some difficulties, returns safe to his native country.]

Three days after my arrival, walking out of curiosity to the north-east coast of the island, I observed, about half a league off in the sea, somewhat that looked like a boat overturned. I pulled off my shoes and stockings, and, wailing two or three hundred yards, I found the object to approach nearer by force of the tide; and then plainly saw it to be a real boat, which I supposed might by some tempest have been driven from a ship. Whereupon, I returned immediately towards the city, and desired his imperial majesty to lend me twenty of the tallest vessels he had left, after the loss of his fleet, and three thousand seamen, under the command of his vice-admiral. This fleet sailed round, while I went back the shortest way to the coast, where I first discovered the boat. I found the tide had driven it still nearer. The seamen were all provided with cordage, which I had beforehand twisted to a sufficient strength. When the ships came up, I stripped myself, and waded till I came within a hundred yards off the boat, after which I was forced to swim till I got up to it. The seamen threw me the end of the cord, which I fastened to a hole in the fore-part of the boat, and
the other end to a man of war; but I found all my labour to little purpose; for, being out of my depth, I was not able to work. In this necessity I was forced to swim behind, and push the boat forward, as often as I could, with one of my hands; and the tide favouring me, I advanced so far that I could just hold up my chin and feel the ground. I rested two or three minutes, and then gave the boat another shove, and so on, till the sea was no higher than my arm-pits; and now, the most laborious part being over, I took out my other cables, which were stowed in one of the ships, and fastened them first to the boat, and then to nine of the vessels which attended me; the wind being favourable, the seamen towed, and I shoved, until we arrived within forty yards of the shore; and, waiting till the tide was out, I got dry to the boat, and by the assistance of two thousand men, with ropes and engines, I made a shift to turn it on its bottom, and found it was but little damaged.

I shall not trouble the reader with the difficulties I was under, by the help of certain paddles, which cost me ten days making, to get my boat to the royal port of Blefuscu, where a mighty concourse of people appeared upon my arrival, full of wonder at the sight of so prodigious a vessel. I told the emperor “that my good fortune had thrown this boat in my way, to carry me to some place whence I might return into my native country; and begged his majesty’s orders for getting materials to fit it up, together with his license to depart;” which, after some kind postulations, he was pleased to grant.

I did very much wonder, in all this time, not to have heard of any express relating to me from the emperor to the court of Blefuscu. But I was afterward given privately to understand, that his imperial majesty, never imagining I had the least notice of his designs, believed I was only gone to Blefuscu in performance of my promise, according to the license he had given me, which was well known at our court, and would return in a few days, when the ceremony was ended. But he was at last in pain at my long absence; and after consulting with
the treasurer and the rest of that cabal,
a person of quality was dispatched with
the copy of the articles against me. This
envoy had instructions to represent to
the monarch of Blefuscu, “the great
lenity of his master, who was content to
punish me no farther than with the loss
of mine eyes; that I had fled from
justice; and if I did not return in two
hours, I should be deprived of my title
of NARDAC, and declared a traitor.”
The envoy further added, “that in order
to maintain the peace and amity between
both empires, his master expected that
his brother of Blefuscu would give
orders to have me sent back to Lilliput,
bound hand and foot, to be punished as
a traitor.”

The emperor of Blefuscu, having
taken three days to consult, returned an
answer consisting of many civilities and
excuses. He said, “that as for sending
me bound, his brother knew it was
impossible; that, although I had
deprived him of his fleet, yet he owed
great obligations to me for many good
offices I had done him in making the
peace. That, however, both their
majesties would soon be made easy; for
I had found a prodigious vessel on the
shore, able to carry me on the sea, which
he had given orders to fit up, with my
own assistance and direction; and he
hoped, in a few weeks, both empires
would be freed from so insupportable an
encumbrance.”

With this answer the envoy returned
to Lilliput; and the monarch of Blefuscu
related to me all that had passed;
offering me at the same time (but under
the strictest confidence) his gracious
protection, if I would continue in his
service; wherein, although I believed
him sincere, yet I resolved never more
to put any confidence in princes or
ministers, where I could possibly avoid
it; and therefore, with all due
acknowledgments for his favourable
intentions, I humbly begged to be
excused. I told him, “that since fortune,
whether good or evil, had thrown a
vessel in my way, I was resolved to
venture myself on the ocean, rather than
be an occasion of difference between
two such mighty monarchs.” Neither did
I find the emperor at all displeased; and
I discovered, by a certain accident, that
he was very glad of my resolution, and

The emperor of Blefuscu, that he took
tres días para consultar, dio una respuesta
consistente en muchas cortesías y excusa.
Decía que por lo que tocaba a enviarme
atado, su hermano sabía muy bien que era
imposible; que aun cuando yo le había des-
pajado de su flota, no obstante, él me esta-
ba muy obligado por los muchos buenos
oficios que le había dispensado al conser-
tarse la paz; que, sin embargo, sus dos ma-
jestades podrían quedar pronto tranquilas,
pues que yo había encontrado en la costa
una colosal embarcación capaz de llevar-mi por mar, la cual había él dado orden de
alistar con mi propia ayuda y dirección, y
así confiaba en que dentro de pocas sema-
nas ambos imperios se verían libres de car-
ga tan insoportable.

Con esta respuesta se volvió a Lilliput
el enviado. El monarca de Blefuscu me
refirió todo lo acontecido, ofreciéndome
al mismo tiempo —pero en el seno de la
más estrecha confianza— su graciosa pro-
teción si quería continuar a su servicio.
Pero en este punto, aun cuando yo creía
sus palabras sinceras, resolvi no volver a
depositar confianza en principes ni minis-
tros mientras me fuera posible evitarlo; y
así, con todo el reconocimiento debido a
sus generosas intenciones, le supliqué hu-
mildemente que me excusase. Le dije que
ya que la fortuna, por bien o por mal, ha-
bía puesto una embarcación en mi camino,
estaba resuelto a aventurarme en el Océa-
no antes que ser ocasión de diferencias
entre dos monarcas tan poderosos. Tam-
poco encontré que el emperador mostrase
el menor disgusto, y descubrí, gracias a
cierto incidente, que estaba muy contento
de mi resolución, lo mismo que la mayor
so were most of his ministers.

These considerations moved me to hasten my departure somewhat sooner than I intended; to which the court, impatient to have me gone, very readily [easily/willingly] contributed. Five hundred workmen were employed to make two sails to my boat, according to my directions, by quilting thirteen folds of their strongest linen together. I was at the pains of making ropes and cables, by twisting ten, twenty, or thirty of the thickest and strongest of theirs. A great stone that I happened to find, after a long search, by the sea-shore, served me for an anchor. I had the tallow of three hundred cows, for greasing my boat, and other uses. I was at incredible pains in cutting down some of the largest timber-trees, for oars and masts, wherein I was, however, much assisted by his majesty’s ship-carpenters, who helped me in smoothing them, after I had done the rough work.

In about a month, when all was prepared, I sent to receive his majesty’s commands, and to take my leave. The emperor and royal family came out of the palace; I lay down on my face to kiss his hand, which he very graciously gave me: so did the empress and young princes of the blood. His majesty presented me with fifty purses of two hundred SPRUGS a-piece, together with his picture at full length, which I put immediately into one of my gloves, to keep it from being hurt. The ceremonies at my departure were too many to trouble the reader with at this time.

I stored the boat with the carcases of a hundred oxen, and three hundred sheep, with bread and drink proportionable, and as much meat ready dressed as four hundred cooks could provide. I took with me six cows and two bulls alive, with as many ewes and rams, intending to carry them into my own country, and propagate the breed. And to feed them on board, I had a good bundle of hay, and a bag of corn. I would gladly have taken a dozen of the natives, but this was a thing the emperor would by no means permit; and, besides a diligent search into my pockets, his majesty engaged

Estas consideraciones me movieron a apresurar mi marcha algo más de lo que yo había pensado; a lo que la corte, impaciente por verme partir, contribuyó con gran diligencia. Se dedicaron quinientos obreros a hacer dos velas para mi bote, según instrucciones mías, disponiendo en trece dobleces el más fuerte de sus lienzos. Pasé grandes trabajos para hacer cuerdas y cables, trenzándolos, veintiuno o treinta de los más fuertes de los suyos. Una gran piedra que vine a hallar después de larga busca por la playa me sirvió de ancla. Me dieron el sebo de trescientas vacas para engrasar el bote y para otros usos. Pasé trabajos increíbles para cortar algunos de los mayores árboles de construcción con que hacerme remos y mástiles, tarea en que me auxiliaron mucho los armadores de Su Majestad, ayudándome a alisarlos una vez que yo había hecho el trabajo más duro.

Transcurrido como un mes, cuando todo estuvo dispuesto, envió a ponerme a las órdenes del emperador y a pedirle licencia para partir. El emperador y la familia real salieron del palacio; me acosté, juntando la cara al suelo, para besar su mano, que él muy graciosamente me alargó, y otro tanto hicieron la emperatriz y los jóvenes príncipes de la sangre. Su Majestad me obsequió con cincuenta bolsas de a doscientos sprugs cada una, con más un retrato suyo de tamaño natural, que yo coloqué inmediatamente dentro de uno de mis guantes para que no se estropeara. Las ceremonias que se celebraron a mi partida fueron demasiadas para que moleste ahora al lector con su relato.

Abastecí el bote con un centenar de bueyes y trescientos carneros muertos, pan y bebida en proporción y tanta carne ya aderezada como pudieron procurarme cuatrocientos cocineros. Tomé conmigo seis vacas y dos toros vivos, con otras tantas ovejas y moruecos, proyectando llevarlos a mi país y propagar la casta. Y para alimentarlos a bordo cogí un buen haz de heno y un saco de grano. De buena gana me hubiese llevado una docena de los pobladores pero ésta fue cosa que el emperador no quiso en ningún modo permitir; y además de un diligente registro que en mis bolsillos se practicó, Su Majestad me hizo prometer por mi ho-
my honour “not to carry away any of his subjects, although with their own consent and desire.”

Having thus prepared all things as well as I was able, I set sail on the twenty-fourth day of September 1701, at six in the morning; and when I had gone about four-leagues to the northward, the wind being at south-east, at six in the evening I descried a small island, about half a league to the north-west. I advanced forward, and cast anchor on the lee-side of the island, which seemed to be uninhabited. I then took some refreshment, and went to my rest. I slept well, and as I conjectured at least six hours, for I found the day broke in two hours after I awaked. It was a clear night. I ate my breakfast before the sun was up; and heaving anchor, the wind being favourable, I steered the same course that I had done the day before, wherein I was directed by my pocket compass. My intention was to reach, if possible, one of those islands, which I had reason to believe lay to the north-east of Van Diemen’s Land. I discovered nothing all that day; but upon the next, about three in the afternoon, when I had by my computation made twenty-four leagues from Blefuscu, I descried a sail steering to the south-east; my course was due east. I hailed her, but could get no answer; yet I found I gained upon her, for the wind slackened. I made all the sail I could, and in half an hour she spied [made out] me, then hung out her ancient, and discharged a gun. It is not easy to express the joy I was in, upon the unexpected hope of once more seeing my beloved country, and the dear pledges I left in it. The ship slackened her sails, and I came up with her between five and six in the evening, September 26th; but my heart leaped within me to see her English colours. I put my cows and sheep into my coat-pockets, and got on board with all my little cargo of provisions. The vessel was an English merchantman, returning from Japan by the North and South seas; the captain, Mr. John Biddel, of Deptford, a very civil man, and an excellent sailor.

We were now in the latitude of 30 degrees south; there were about fifty men in the ship; and here I met an old comrade of mine, one Peter Williams, who gave me a good character to the nor que no me llevaría a ninguno de sus súbditos, a menos que mediese su propio consentimiento y deseo.

Preparado así todo lo mejor que pude, me di a la vela el 24 de septiembre de 1701, a las seis de la mañana; y cuando había andado unas cuatro leguas en dirección Norte, con viento del Sudeste, a las seis de la tarde divisé una pequeña isla, como a obra de media legua al Noroeste. Avancé y eché el ancla en la costa de sotavento de la isla, que parecía estar inhabitada. Tomé algún alimento y me dispuse a descansar. Dormí bien y, según calculé, seis horas por lo menos, pues el día empezó a clarear a las dos horas de haberme despertado. Hacia una noche clara. Tomé mi desayuno antes de que saliera el sol, y levando ancla, con viento favorable, tomé el mismo rumbo que había llevado el día anterior, en lo que me guié por mi brújula de bolsillo. Era mi intención arribar, a ser posible, a una de las islas que yo tenía razones para creer que había al Nordeste de la tierra de Van Dieme. En todo aquel día no descubrí nada; pero el siguiente, sobre las tres de la tarde, cuando, según mis cálculos, había hecho veinticuatro leguas desde Blefuscu, divisé una vela que navegaba hacia el Sudeste; mi rumbo era Levante. La saludé a la voz, sin obtener respuesta; aprecié, no obstante, que me ganaba distancia, porque amainaba el viento. Tendi las velas cuanto pude, y a la media hora, habiéndome divisado, enarboló su enseña y disparó un cañonazo. No es fácil de expresar la alegría que experimenté ante la inesperada esperanza de volver a ver a mi amado país y a las prendas queridas que en él había dejado. Amainó el navío sus velas, y yo le alcancé entre cinco y seis de la tarde del 26 de septiembre; el corazón me saltaba en el pecho viendo su bandera inglesa. Me metí las vacas y los carneros en los bolsillos de la casaca y salté a bordo con todo mi pequeño cargamento de provisiones. El navío era un barco mercante inglés que volvía del Japón por los mares del Norte y del Sur, y su capitán, Mr. John Biddel, de Deptford, hombre muy amable y marinero excelente.

Nos hallábamos a la sazón a la latitud de 30 grados Sur; había unos cincuenta hombres en el barco y allí encontré a un antiguo camarada mío, un tal Peter Williams, que me recomendó muy bien
captain. This gentleman treated me with kindness, and desired I would let him know what place I came from last, and whither I was bound; which I did in a few words, but he thought I was raving, and that the dangers I underwent had disturbed my head; whereupon I took my black cattle and sheep out of my pocket, which, after great astonishment, clearly convinced him of my veracity. I then showed him the gold given me by the emperor of Blefuscu, together with his majesty’s picture at full length, and some other rarities of that country. I gave him two purses of two hundreds SPRUGS each, and promised, when we arrived in England, to make him a present of a cow and a sheep big with young.

I shall not trouble the reader with a particular account of this voyage, which was very prosperous for the most part. We arrived in the Downs on the 13th of April, 1702. I had only one misfortune, that the rats on board carried away one of my sheep; I found her bones in a hole, picked clean from the flesh. The rest of my cattle I got safe ashore, and set them a-grazing in a bowling-green at Greenwich, where the fineness of the grass made them feed very heartily, though I had always feared the contrary: neither could I possibly have preserved them in so long a voyage, if the captain had not allowed me some of his best biscuit, which, rubbed to powder, and mingled with water, was their constant food. The short time I continued in England, I made a considerable profit by showing my cattle to many persons of quality and others: and before I began my second voyage, I sold them for six hundred pounds. Since my last return I find the breed has increased considerably, especially the sheep, which I hope will prove much to the advantage of the woollen manufacture, by the fineness of the fleeces.

I stayed but two months with my wife and family, for my insatiable desire of seeing foreign countries, would suffer me to continue no longer. I left fifteen hundred pounds with my wife, and fixed her in a good house at Redriff. My remaining stock I carried with me, part in money and part in goods, in hopes to improve my fortunes. My eldest uncle
John had left me an estate in land, near Epping, of about thirty pounds a year; and I had a long lease of the Black Bull in Fetter-Lane, which yielded me as much more; so that I was not in any danger of leaving my family upon the parish. My son Johnny, named so after his uncle, was at the grammar-school, and a towardly child. My daughter Betty (who is now well married, and has children) was then at her needle-work. I took leave of my wife, and boy and girl, with tears on both sides, and went on board the Adventure, a merchant ship of three hundred tons, bound for Surat, captain John Nicholas, of Liverpool, commander. But my account of this voyage must be referred to the Second Part of my Travels.

PART II.

A VOYAGE TO BROBDINGNAG.

CHAPTER I.

[A great storm described; the long boat sent to fetch water; the author goes with it to discover the country. He is left on shore, is seized by one of the natives, and carried to a farmer’s house. His reception, with several accidents that happened there. A description of the inhabitants.]

Having been condemned, by nature and fortune, to active and restless life, in two months after my return, I again left my native country, and took shipping in the Downs, on the 20th day of June, 1702, in the Adventure, Captain John Nicholas, a Cornish man, commander, bound for Surat. We had a very prosperous gale, till we arrived at the Cape of Good Hope, where we landed for fresh water; but discovering a leak, we unshipped our goods and wintered there; for the captain falling sick of an ague, we could not leave the Cape till the end of March. We then set sail, and had a good voyage till we passed the Straits of Madagascar; but having got northward of that island, and to about

Segunda parte

Un viaje a Brodingnag

Capitulo primero

Descripción de una gran tempestad.—Envían la lancha en busca de agua: el autor va en ella a hacer descubrimientos en el país.—Le dejan en la playa; es apresado por uno de los naturales y llevado a casa de un labrador.—Su recibimiento allí, con varios incidentes que le acontecieron.—Descripción de los habitantes.

Condenado por mi naturaleza y por mi suerte a una vida activa y sin reposo, dos meses después de mi regreso volví a dejar mi país natal y me embarqué en las Dunas el 20 de junio de 1702, a bordo del Adventure, navío mandado por el capitán John Nicholas, de Liverpool, y destinado para Surat. Tuvimos muy buen viento hasta que llegamos al Cabo de Buena Esperanza, donde tomamos tierra para hacer agua; pero habiéndose abierto una vía de agua en el navío, desembarcamos nuestras mercancías e invernomos allí, pues atacado el capitán de una fiebre intermitente, no pudimos dejar el Cabo hasta fines de marzo. Entonces nos dimos a la vela, y tuvimos buena travesía hasta pasar los estrechos de Madagascar; pero ya
five degrees south latitude, the winds, which in those seas are observed to blow a constant equal gale between the north and west, from the beginning of
December to the beginning of May, on the 19th of April began to blow with
much greater violence, and more westerly than usual, continuing so for
twenty days together: during which
time, we were driven a little to the east
of the Molucca Islands, and about three
degrees northward of the line, as our
captain found by an observation he took
the 2nd of May, at which time the wind
cessated, and it was a perfect calm,
whereat I was not a little rejoiced. But
he, being a man well experienced in the
navigation of those seas, bid us all pre-
pare against a storm, which accordingly
happened the day following: for the
southern wind, called the southern
monsoon, began to set in.

Finding it was likely to overblow,
we took in our sprit-sail, and stood by
to hand the fore-sail; but making foul weather, we looked the guns
were all fast, and handed the mizen.
The ship lay very broad off, so we
thought it better spooning before the
sea, than trying or hulling. We
reefed the fore-sail and set him, and
hauling aft the fore-sheet; the helm
was hard a-weather. The ship wore
bravely. We delayed the fore down-
haul; but the sail was split, and we
hauled down the yard, and got the sail
into the ship, and unbound all the things
clear of it. It was a very fierce storm;
the sea broke strange and dangerous.
We hauled off upon the laniard of
the whip-staff, and helped the man at the
helm. We would not get down our
topmast, but let all stand, because the
scudding before the sea very well, and we knew
that the top-mast being aloft, the ship was the
wholesomer, and made better way through
the sea, seeing we had sea-room. When the
storm was over, we set fore-sail and main-sail,
and brought the ship to. Then we set the
mizen, main-top-sail, and the fore-top-sail. Our
course was east-north-east, the wind was at
south-west. We got the starboard [rightside]
tacks aboard, we cast off our weather-braces
and lifts; we set in the lee-braces, and hauled
forward by the weather-bowlings, and hauled
them tight, and belayed them, and hauled over
the mizen tack to windward, and kept her full
and by as near as she would lie.

hacia el Norte de esta isla, y a cosa de cin-
co grados Sur de latitud, los vientos, que
se ha observado que en aquellos mares so-
plan constantes del Noroeste desde principios
de diciembre hasta principios de mayo,
comenzaron el 9 de abril a soplar con vio-
lenza mucho mayor y más en dirección
Oeste que de costumbre. Siguieron así por
espacio de veinte días, durante los cuales
fuimos algo arrastrados al Este de las is-
las Molucas y unos tres grados hacía el
Norte de la línea, según comprobó nues-
tro capitán por observaciones hechas el 2
de mayo, tiempo en que el viento cesó y
vino una calma absoluta, de la que yo me
regocijé no poco. Pero el patrón, hombre
experimentado en la navegación por aque-
llos mares, nos previno para que nos dis-
pusiéramos a guardarnos de la tempestad,
que, en efecto, se desencadenó al día si-
guiente, pues empezó a formalizarse el
viento llamado monzón del Sur.

Creyendo que la borrascas pasaría,
cargamos la cebadera y nos dispusie-
mos para afechar el trinquete; pero, en
vista de lo contrario del tiempo, cui-
damos de sujetar bien las piezas de
artillería y aferramos la mesana. Como
estábamos muy emnarrados, creímos
mejor correr el tiempo con mar en
popa que no capear o navegar a palo
seco. Rizamos el trinquete y lo caza-
mos. El timón iba a barlovento. El na-
vio se portaba bravamente. Largamos
la cargadera de trinquete; pero la vela
se rajó y arriamos la verga; y una vez
dentro la vela, la desaparejamos de
todo su laboreo. La tempestad era ho-
rible; la mar se agitaba inquietante y
amenazadora. Se afirmaron los apare-
jos reales y reforzamos el servicio del
timón. No calamos los masteleros, sino
que los dejamos en su lugar, porque el
barco corria muy bien con mar en
popa y sabíamos que con los
masteleros izados el buque no sufría
y surcaba el mar sin riesgo. Cuan-
do pasó la tempestad largamos el
nuevo trinquete y nos pusimos a la
capa; luego largamos la mesana, la
gavia y el velacho. Llevábamos rum-
bo Nordeste con viento Sudeste. Amuramos a estribor, saltamos las bra-
zas y amantillos de barlovento, caza-
mos las brazas de sotavento, halamos
de las bolinas y las amarramos; se
amuró la mesana y gobernamos a buen
viaje en cuanto nos fue posible.
During this storm, which was followed by a strong wind west-south-west, we were carried, by my computation, about five hundred leagues to the east, so that the oldest sailor on board could not tell in what part of the world we were. Our provisions held out well, our ship was staunch, and our crew all in good health; but we lay in the utmost distress for water. We thought it best to hold on the same course, rather than turn more northerly, which might have brought us to the north-west part of Great Tartary, and into the Frozen Sea.

On the 16th day of June, 1703, a boy on the top-mast discovered land. On the 17th, we came in full view of a great island, or continent (for we knew not whether;) on the south side whereof was a small neck of land jutting out into the sea, and a creek too shallow to hold a ship of above one hundred tons. We cast anchor within a league of this creek, and our captain sent a dozen of his men well armed in the long-boat, with vessels for water, if any could be found. I desired his leave to go with them, that I might see the country and make what discoveries I could. When we came to land we saw no river or spring, nor any sign of inhabitants. Our men therefore wandered on the shore to find out some fresh water near the sea, and I walked alone about a mile on the other side, where I observed the country all barren and rocky. I now began to be weary, and seeing nothing to entertain my curiosity, I returned gently down towards the creek; and the sea being full in my view, I saw our men already got into the boat, and rowing for life to the ship. I was going to hallow after them, although it had been to little purpose, when I observed a huge creature walking after them in the sea, as fast as he could: he waded not much deeper than his knees, and took prodigious strides: but our men had the start of him half a league, and, the sea thereabouts being full of sharp-pointed rocks, the monster was not able to overtake the boat. This I was afterwards told, for I durst not stay to see the issue of the adventure; but ran as fast as I could the way I first
went, and then climbed up a steep hill, which gave me some prospect of the country. I found it fully cultivated; but that which first surprised me was the length of the grass, which, in those grounds that seemed to be kept for hay, was about twenty feet high.

I fell into a high road, for so I took it to be, though it served to the inhabitants only as a foot-path through a field of barley. Here I walked on for some time, but could see little on either side, it being now near harvest, and the corn rising at least forty feet. I was an hour walking to the end of this field, which was fenced in with a hedge of at least one hundred and twenty feet high, and the trees so lofty that I could make no computation of their altitude. There was a stile to pass from this field into the next. It had four steps, and a stone to cross over when you came to the uppermost. It was impossible for me to climb this stile, because every step was six-feet high, and the upper stone about twenty. I was endeavouring to find some gap in the hedge, when I discovered one of the inhabitants in the next field, advancing towards the stile, of the same size with him whom I saw in the sea pursuing our boat. He appeared as tall as an ordinary spire steeple, and took about ten yards at every stride, as near as I could guess. I was struck with the utmost fear and astonishment, and ran to hide myself in the corn, whence I saw him at the top of the stile looking back into the next field on the right hand, and heard him call in a voice many degrees louder than a speaking-trumpet: but the noise was so high in the air, that at first I certainly thought it was thunder. Whereupon seven monsters, like himself, came towards him with reaping-hooks in their hands, each hook about the largeness of six scythes. These people were not so well clad as the first, whose servants or labourers they seemed to be; for, upon some words he spoke, they went to reap the corn in the field where I lay. I kept from them at as great a distance as I could, but was forced to move with extreme difficulty, for the stalks of the corn were sometimes not above a foot distant, so that I could hardly squeeze my body betwixt them. However, I made a shift to go forward, till I came to a field on the right hand, and heard him call in a voice many degrees louder than a speaking-trumpet: but the noise was so high in the air, that at first I certainly thought it was thunder. Whereupon seven monsters, like himself, came towards him with reaping-hooks in their hands, each hook about the largeness of six scythes. These people were not so well clad as the first, whose servants or labourers they seemed to be; for, upon some words he spoke, they went to reap the corn in the field where I lay. I kept from them at as great a distance as I could, but was forced to move with extreme difficulty, for the stalks of the corn were sometimes not above a foot distant, so that I could hardly squeeze my body betwixt them. However, I made a shift to go forward, till I came to a field on the right hand, and heard him call in a voice many degrees louder than a speaking-trumpet: but the noise was so high in the air, that at first I certainly thought it was thunder. Whereupon seven monsters, like himself, came towards him with reaping-hooks in their hands, each hook about the largeness of six scythes. These people were not so well clad as the first, whose servants or labourers they seemed to be; for, upon some words he spoke, they went to reap the corn in the field where I lay. I kept from them at as great a distance as I could, but was forced to move with extreme difficulty, for the stalks of the corn were sometimes not above a foot distant, so that I could hardly squeeze my body betwixt them. However, I made a shift to go forward, till I came to a field on the right hand, and heard him call in a voice many degrees louder than a speaking-trumpet: but the noise was so high in the air, that at first I certainly thought it was thunder. Whereupon seven monsters, like himself, came towards him with reaping-hooks in their hands, each hook about the largeness of six scythes. These people were not so well clad as the first, whose servants or labourers they seemed to be; for, upon some words he spoke, they went to reap the corn in the field where I lay. I kept from them at as great a distance as I could, but was forced to move with extreme difficulty, for the stalks of the corn were sometimes not above a foot distant, so that I could hardly squeeze my body betwixt them. However, I made a shift to go forward, till I came to a field on the right hand, and heard him call in a voice many degrees louder than a speaking-trumpet: but the noise was so high in the air, that at first I certainly thought it was thunder. Whereupon seven monsters, like himself, came towards him with reaping-hooks in their hands, each hook about the largeness of six scythes. These people were not so well clad as the first, whose servants or labourers they seemed to be; for, upon some words he spoke, they went to reap the corn in the field where I lay. I kept from them at as great a distance as I could, but was forced to move with extreme difficulty, for the stalks of the corn were sometimes not above a foot distant, so that I could hardly squeeze my body betwixt them. However, I made a shift to go forward, till I came
wilfulness or willfulness

1. unruliness, fractiousness, wilfulness the trait of being prone to disobedience and lack of discipline

Voluntariedad, testarudez, obstinación

wil·ful: fractiousness, wilfulness

See synonyms at voluntary.

1. Said or done on purpose; deliberate.

Said or done on purpose; deliberate.

2. prone to disobedience and lack of discipline

I lamented my own folly and wilfulness.

2. bent on having one’s own way.

I bemoaned my desolate widow and fatherless children.

unruliness, 60

55

50

45

40

35

30

25

20

15

10

5

I lamented my own folly and wilfulness.

wilfulness.

in attempting a second voyage, against the advice of all my friends and relations.

This terrible agitation of mind, I could not forbear [abstain]

thinking of Lilliput, whose inhabitants looked upon me as the greatest prodigy that ever appeared in the world; where I

was able to draw an imperial fleet in my hand, and perform those other actions, which will be recorded for ever in the chronicles of that empire, while posterity shall hardly believe them, although attested by millions. I reflected

what a mortification it must prove to me, to appear as inconsequential in this nation, as one single Lilliputian would be among us. But this I conceived was to be the least of my misfortunes; for,

as human creatures are observed to be more savage and cruel in proportion to their bulk, what could I expect but to be a morsel in the mouth of the first among

these enormous barbarians that should happen to seize me? Undoubtedly philosophers are in the right, when they

tell us that nothing is great or little otherwise than by comparison. It might have pleased fortune, to have let the Lilliputians find some nation, where the people were as diminutive with respect to them, as they were to me. And who knows that even this prodigious race

of mortals might be equally overmatched in some distant part of the world, whereof we have yet no discovery.

55

50

45

40

35

30

I could not forbear [abstain] going on with these reflections, when one of the reapers, approaching within ten yards of the ridge where I lay, made me

apprehend that with the next step I

had not that I could not forbear [abstain]

thinking of Lilliput, whose inhabitants

looked upon me as the greatest prodigy

that ever appeared in the world; where I

was able to draw an imperial fleet in my

hand, and perform those other actions,

which will be recorded for ever in the

chronicles of that empire, while

posterity shall hardly believe them,

although attested by millions. I reflected

what a mortification it must prove to

me, to appear as inconsequential in

this nation, as one single Lilliputian

would be among us. But this I conceived

was to be the least of my misfortunes; for,

as human creatures are observed to be

more savage and cruel in proportion to

their bulk, what could I expect but to be

a morsel in the mouth of the first among

these enormous barbarians that should

happen to seize me? Undoubtedly

philosophers are in the right, when they

tell us that nothing is great or little

otherwise than by comparison. It might

have pleased fortune, to have let the

Lilliputians find some nation, where the

people were as diminutive with respect
to them, as they were to me. And who

knows that even this prodigious race

of mortals might be equally overmatched in some distant part of the world, whereof we have yet no discovery.

55

50

45

40

35

30

The trait of being prone to disobedience and lack of discipline...
should be squashed to death under his foot, or cut in two with his reaping-hook. And therefore, when he was again about to move, I screamed as loud as fear could make me: whereupon the huge creature trod short, and, looking round about under him for some time, at last espied me as I lay on the ground. He considered awhile, with the caution of one who endeavours to lay hold on a small dangerous animal in such a manner that it shall not be able either to scratch or bite him, as I myself have sometimes done with a weasel in England. At length he ventured to take me behind, by the middle, between his fore-finger and thumb, and brought me within three yards of his eyes, that he might behold my shape more perfectly. I guessed his meaning, and my good fortune gave me so much presence of mind, that I resolved not to struggle in the least as he held me in the air above sixty feet from the ground, although he grievously pinched my sides, for fear I should slip through his fingers. All I ventured was to raise mine eyes towards the sun, and place my hands together in a supplicating posture, and to speak some words in a humble melancholy tone, suitable to the condition I then was in: for I apprehended every moment that he would dash me against the ground, as we usually do any little hateful animal, which we have a mind to destroy. But my good star would have it, that he appeared pleased with my voice and gestures, and began to look upon me as a curiosity, much wondering to hear me pronounce articulate words, although he could not understand them. In the mean time I was not able to forbear groaning and shedding tears, and turning my head towards my sides; letting him know, as well as I could, how cruelly I was hurt by the pressure of his thumb and finger. He seemed to apprehend my meaning; for, lifting up the lappet of his coat, he put me gently into it, and immediately ran along with me to his master, who was a substantial farmer, and the same person I had first seen in the field.

The farmer having (as I suppose by their talk) received such an account of me as his servant could give him, took a piece of a small straw, about the size of a walking-staff, and therewith lifted up the lappets of my coat; which it seems me despachurraría con el pie o me dividiría en dos pedazos con su hoz, y, en consecuencia, cuando estaba a punto de moverse, grité todo lo fuerte que el miedo podía hacerme gritar. Entonces la criatura enorme se adelantó un poco, y, mirando por bajo y alrededor de sí algún tiempo, me divisó tendido en el suelo por fin. Me consideró un rato, con la precaución de quien se propone echar mano a una sabandija peligrosa de tal modo que no pueda arañarle ni morderle, como yo tengo hecho tantas veces con las comadrejas en Inglaterra. Por último, se atrevió a alzarme, cogiéndome por la mitad del cuerpo con el índice y el pulgar, y me llevó a tres yardas de los ojos para poder apreciar mi figura más detalladamente. Adiviné su intención, y mi buena fortuna me dio tanta presencia de ánimo, que me solvió a no resistirme lo más mínimo cuando me sostenía en el aire, a unos sesenta pies del suelo, aunque me apretaba muy dolorosamente los costados por temor de que me escurriese de entre sus dedos. Todo lo que me atreví a hacer fue levantar los ojos al cielo, juntar las manos en actitud suplicante y pronunciar algunas palabras en tono humilde y melancólico, adecuado a la situación en que me hallaba, pues temía a cada momento que me estrellase contra el suelo, como es uso entre nosotros cuando queremos dar fin de alguna sabandija. Pero quiso mi buena estrella que pareciesen gustarle mi voz y mis movimientos y empezase a mirarme como una curiosidad, muy asombrado de oírme pronunciar palabras articuladas, aunque no pudiese entenderlas. En tanto, no dejaba yo de gemir y verter lágrimas, y, volviendo la cabeza hacia los lados, darle a entender como me era posible cuán cruelymente me dañaba la presión de sus dedos. Pareció que se daba cuenta de lo que quería decirle, porque levantándose un faldón de la casaca me colocó suavemente en él e inmediatamente echó a correr conmigo en busca de su amo, que era un acuadalado labrador y el mismo a quien yo había visto primeramente en el campo.

El labrador, a quien, según deduje por los hechos, su servidor había dado acerca de mí las explicaciones que había podido, tomó una pajita, del tamaño de un bastón aproximadamente, y con ella me alzó los faldones, que parecía
he thought to be some kind of covering that nature had given me. He blew my hairs aside to take a better view of my face. He called his hinds about him, and asked them, as I afterwards learned, whether they had ever seen in the fields any little creature that resembled me. He then placed me softly on the ground upon all fours, but I got immediately up, and walked slowly backward and forward, to let those people see I had no intent to run away. They all sat down in a circle about me, the better to observe my motions. I pulled off my hat, and made a low bow towards the farmer. I fell on my knees, and lifted up my hands and eyes, and spoke several words as loud as I could: I took a purse of gold out of my pocket, and humbly presented it to him. He received it on the palm of his hand, then applied it close to his eye to see what it was, and afterwards turned it several times with the point of a pin (which he took out of his sleeve,) but could make nothing of it. Whereupon I made a sign that he should place his hand on the ground. I then took the purse, and, opening it, poured all the gold into his palm. There were six Spanish pieces of four pistoles each, beside twenty or thirty smaller coins. I saw him wet the tip of his little finger upon his tongue, and take up one of my largest pieces, and then another; but he seemed to be wholly ignorant what they were. He made me a sign to put them again into my purse, and the purse again into my pocket, which, after offering it to him several times, I thought it best to do.

The farmer, by this time, was convinced I must be a rational creature. He spoke often to me; but the sound of his voice pierced my ears like that of a water-mill, yet his words were articulate enough. I answered as loud as I could in several languages, and he often laid his ear within two yards of me: but all in vain, for we were wholly unintelligible to each other. He then sent his servants to their work, and taking his handkerchief out of his pocket, he doubled and spread it on his left hand, which he placed flat on the ground with the palm upward, making me a sign to step into it, as I could easily do, for it was not above a foot in thickness. I thought it my tener por una especie de vestido que la Naturaleza me hubiese dado. Me sopló los cabellos hacia los lados, para mejor verme la cara. Llamó a sus criados y les preguntó —por lo que supe después— si habían visto alguna vez en los campos bicho que se me pareciese. Luego me dejó blandamente en el suelo, a cuatro pies; pero yo me levanté inmediatamente y empecé a ir y venir despacio, para que aquella gente viese que no tenía intención de escaparme. Ellos se sentaron en círculo a mi alrededor a fin de observar mejor mis movimientos. Yo me quité el sombrero e hice al labrador una inclinación profunda; cai de rodillas, y alzando al cielo las manos y los ojos pronuncié varias palabras todo lo fuerte que pude, y me saqué de la faltriquera una bolsa de oro, que le ofrecí humildemente. La recibió en la palma de la mano, se la acercó al ojo para ver lo que era y luego la volvió varias veces con la punta de un alfiler que se había quitado de la solapa, sin lograr nada con ello. Le hice entonces señas de que pusiera la mano en el suelo; tomé la bolsa, y luego de abrirla le derramé todo el oro en la palma. Había seis piezas españolas de a cuatro pistolas cada una, aparte de veinte o treinta monedas más pequeñas. Le vi humedecerse la punta del dedo pequeño con la lengua y alzar una de las piezas más grandes y luego otra, pero aparentando ignorar por completo lo que fuesen. Me hizo señas de que volviese de nuevo las monedas a la bolsa y la bolsa a la faltriquera, partido que acabe por tomar después de renovar repetidas veces mi ofrecimiento.

A la sazón debía de estar ya el hacendado convencido de que yo era un ser racional. Me hablaba a menudo; pero el ruido de su voz me lastimaba los oídos como el de una aceña, aunque articulaba las palabras bastante bien. Le respondí lo más fuerte que pude en varios idiomas, y él frecuentemente inclinaba el oído hasta dos yardas de mí; pero todo fue en vano, porque éramos por completo ininteligibles el uno para el otro. Mandó luego a los criados a su trabajo, y sacando su pañuelo del bolsillo lo dobló y se lo tendió en la mano izquierda, que puso de plano en el suelo con la palma hacia arriba, al mismo tiempo que me hacía señas para que me subiese en ella, lo que pude hacer con facilidad porque no tenía más de un pie
part to obey, and, for fear of falling, laid myself at full length upon the handkerchief, with the remainder of which he lapped me up to the head for further security, and in this manner carried me home to his house. There he called his wife, and showed me to her; but she screamed and ran back, as women in England do at the sight of a toad or a spider. However, when she had a while seen my behaviour, and how well I observed the signs her husband made, she was soon reconciled, and by degrees grew extremely tender of me.

It was about twelve at noon, and a servant brought in dinner. It was only one substantial dish of meat (fit for the plain condition of a husbandman,) in a dish of about four-and-twenty feet diameter. The company were, the farmer and his wife, three children, and an old grandmother. When they were sat down, the farmer placed me at some distance from him on the table, which was thirty feet high from the floor. I was in a terrible fright, and kept as far as I could from the edge, for fear of falling. The wife minced a bit of meat, then crumbled some bread on a trencher, and placed it before me. I made her a low bow, took out my knife and fork, and fell to eat, which gave them exceeding delight. The mistress sent her maid for a small dram cup, which held about two gallons, and filled it with drink; I took up the vessel with much difficulty in both hands, and in a most respectful manner drank to her ladyship's health, expressing the words as loud as I could in English, which made the company laugh so heartily, that I was almost deafened with the noise. This liquor tasted like a small cider, and was not unpleasant. Then the master made me a sign to come to his trencher side; but as I walked on the table, being in great surprise all the time, as the indulgent reader will easily conceive and excuse, I happened to stumble against a crust, and fell flat on my face, but received no hurt. I got up immediately, and observing the good people to be in much concern, I took my hat (which I held de grueso. Entendí que mi único camino era obedecer, y por miedo a caerme me tumbé a la larga sobre el pañuelo, con cuyo sobrante él me envolvió hasta la cabeza para mayor seguridad, y de este modo me llevó a su casa. Una vez allí llamó a su mujer y me mostró a ella, que dio un grito y echó a correr como las mujeres en Inglaterra a la presencia de un sapo o de una araña. No obstante, cuando hubo visto mi comportamiento un rato y lo bien que obedecía a las señas que me hacía su marido, se reconcilió conmigo pronto y poco a poco fue prodigándome los más solicitos cuidados.

Eran sobre las doce del día y un criado trajo la comida. Consistía en un plato fuerte de carne —propio de la sencilla condición de un labrador— servido en una fuente de veinticuatro pies de diámetro, poco más o menos. Formaban la compañía el granjero y su mujer, tres niños y una anciana abuela. Cuando estuvieron sentados, el granjero me puso a alguna distancia de él encima de la mesa, que levantaba treinta pies del suelo. Yo tenía un miedo atroz y me mantenía todo lo apartado que me era posible del borde por temor de caerme. La esposa picó un poco de carne, desmigajó luego algo de pan en un trinchero y me lo puso delante. Le hice una profunda reverencia, saqué mi cuchillo y mi tenedor y empecé a comer, lo que les causó extremado regocijo. La dueña mandó a su criada por una copita de licor capaz para unos dos galones y me puse de beber; levantó la vasija muy trabajosamente con las dos manos y del modo más respetuoso bebió a la salud de la señora, hablando todo lo más fuerte que pude en inglés, lo que hizo reír a la compañía de tan buena gana, que casi me quedé sordo del ruido. El licor sabía como una especie de sidra ligera y no resultaba desagradable. Después el dueño me hizo señas de que me acercase a su plato; pero cuando iba andando por la mesa, como tan grande era mi asombro en aquel trance —lo que fácilmente comprenderá y disculpará el indulgente lector—, me aconteció tropezar con una corteza de pan y caí de brusca, aunque no me hice daño. Me levanté inmediatamente, y advirtiendo en aquella buena gente muestras de gran pesadumbre, cogí mi sombrero —que llevaba debajo del bra-
under my arm out of good manners,) and waving it over my head, made three huzzas, to show I had got no mischief by my fall. But advancing forward towards my master (as I shall henceforth call him,) his youngest son, who sat next to him, an arch boy of about ten years old, took me up by the legs, and held me so high in the air, that I trembled every limb: but his father snatched me from him, and at the same time gave him such a box on the left ear, as would have felled an European troop of horse to the earth, ordering him to be taken from the table. But being afraid the boy might owe me a spite, and well remembering how mischievous all children among us naturally are to sparrows, rabbits, young kittens, and puppy dogs, I fell on my knees, and pointing to the boy, made my master to understand, as well as I could, that I desired his son might be pardoned. The father complied, and the lad took his seat again, whereupon I went to him, and kissed his hand, which my master took, and made him stroke me gently with it.

In the midst of dinner, my mistress's favourite cat leaped into her lap. I heard a noise behind me like that of a dozen stocking-weavers at work; and turning my head, I found it proceeded from the purring of that animal, who seemed to be three times larger than an ox, as I computed by the view of her head, and one of her paws, while her mistress was feeding and stroking her. The fierceness of this creature's countenance altogether discomposed me; though I stood at the farther end of the table, above fifty feet off; and although my mistress held her fast, for fear she might give a spring, and seize me in her talons. But it happened there was no danger, for the cat took not the least notice of me when my master placed me within three yards of her. And as I have been always told, and found true by experience in my travels, that flying or discovering fear before a fierce animal, is a certain way to make it pursue or attack you, so I resolved, in this dangerous juncture, to show no manner of concern. I walked with zo, como exige la buena crianza— y agitándolo por encima de la cabeza di tres vivas en demostración de que no había recibido en la caída perjuicio nin-
guno. Pero cuando en seguida avanzaba hacia mi amo —como le llamaré de aquí en adelante—, su hijo menor, que se sentaba al lado suyo —un travieso chiquillo de unos diez años— me cogió por las piernas y me alzó en el aire a tal altura, que las carnes se me despegaron de los huesos; el padre me arrebató de sus manos y le dio un bo-

té en la oreja derecha, con el que hubiera podido derribar un ejército de caballería europea, al mismo tiempo que le mandaba retirarse de la mesa. Temeroso yo de que el muchacho me la guardase, y recordando bien cuán naturalmente dañinos son los niños entre nosotros para los gorriones, los conejos, los gatitos y los perritos, me dejé caer de rodillas, y, señalando hacia el muchacho, hice entender a mi amo como buenamente pude que deseaba que perdonase a su hijo. Accedió el padre, el chiquillo volvió a sentarse en su puesto, y en seguida yo me fui a él y le besé la mano, la cual mi amo le co-
gió e hizo que con ella me acariciase suavemente.

En medio de la comida, el gato favorito de mi ama le saltó al regazo. Oía yo detrás de mí un ruido como si estuviesen trabajando una docena de tejedores de medias, y volviendo la cabeza, descubrí que procedía del su-

surro que en su contento hacía aquel animal, que podría ser tres veces ma-
yor que un buey, según el cálculo que hice viéndole la cabeza y una pata mientras su dueña le daba de comer y le hacía caricias. El aspecto de fiera-
za de este animal me descompuso to-

talmente, aunque yo estaba al otro lado de la mesa, a más de cincuenta pies de distancia, y aunque mi ama le sostenía temiendo que diese un salto y me cogiese entre sus garras. Pero resultó no haber peligro ninguno, pues el gato no hizo el menor caso de mi cuando después mi amo me puso a tres yardas de él; y como he oído siempre, y la experiencia me lo ha confirmado en mis viajes, que huir o demostrar miedo ante un animal fe-

roz es el medio seguro de que nos persiga o nos ataque, resolvi en esta peligrosa coyuntura no aparentar cui-
intrepidity five or six times before the very head of the cat, and came within half a yard of her; whereupon she drew herself back, as if she were more afraid of me: I had less apprehension concerning the dogs, whereof three or four came into the room, as it is usual in farmers' houses; one of which was a mastiff, equal in bulk to four elephants, and another a greyhound, somewhat taller than the mastiff, but not so large.

When dinner was almost done, the nurse came in with a child of a year old in her arms, who immediately spied [made out] me, and began a squall that you might have heard from London-Bridge to Chelsea, after the usual oratory of infants, to get me for a playingthing. The mother, out of pure indulgence, took me up, and put me towards the child, who presently seized me by the middle, and got my head into his mouth, where I roared so loud that the urchin was frightened, and let me drop, and I should infallibly have broke my neck, if the mother had not held her apron under me. The nurse, to quiet her babe, made use of a rattle which was a kind of hollow vessel filled with great stones, and fastened by a cable to the child's waist: but all in vain; so that she was forced to apply the last remedy by giving it suck. I must confess no object ever disgusted me so much as the sight of her monstrous breast, which I cannot tell what to compare with, so as to give the curious reader an idea of its bulk, shape, and colour. It stood prominent six feet, and could not be less than sixteen in circumference. The nipple was about half the bigness of my head, and the hue both of that and the dug, so varied with spots, pimples, and freckles, that nothing could appear more nauseous: for I had a near sight of her, she sitting down, the more conveniently to give suck, and I standing on the table. This made me reflect upon the fair skins of our English ladies, who appear so beautiful to us, only because they are of our own size, and their defects not to be seen but through a magnifying glass; where we find by experiment that the smoothest and whitest skins look rough, and coarse, and ill-coloured.

I remember when I was at Lilliput,
the complexion \[tez/cariz\] of those diminutive people appeared to me the fairest in the world; and talking upon this subject with a person of learning there, who was an intimate friend of mine, he said that my face appeared much fairer and smoother when he looked on me from the ground, than it did upon a nearer view, when I took him up in my hand, and brought him close, which he confessed was at first a very shocking sight. He said, “he could discover great holes in my skin; that the stumps of my beard were ten times stronger than the bristles of a boar, and my complexion \[tez/cariz\] made up of several colours altogether disagreeable:” although I must beg leave to say for myself, that I am as fair as most of my sex and country, and very little sunburnt by all my travels. On the other side, discoursing of the ladies in that emperor’s court, he used to tell me, “one had freckles; another too wide a mouth; a third too large a nose;” nothing of which I was able to distinguish. I confess this reflection was obvious enough; which, however, I could not forbear, lest the reader might think those vast creatures were actually deformed: for I must do them the justice to say, they are a comely \[pleasant to look at\] race of people, and particularly the features of my master’s countenance, although he was but a farmer, when I beheld him from the height of sixty feet, appeared very well proportioned.

When dinner was done, my master went out to his labourers, and, as I could discover by his voice and gesture, gave his wife strict charge to take care of me. I was very much tired, and disposed to sleep, which my mistress perceiving, she put me on her own bed, and covered me with a clean white handkerchief, but larger and coarser than the mainsail of a man-of-war.

I slept about two hours, and dreamt I was at home with my wife and children, which aggravated my sorrows when I awaked, and found myself alone in a vast room, between two and three hundred feet wide, and above two hundred high, lying in a bed twenty yards wide. My mistress was gone about her household affairs, and had locked me in. The bed was eight yards from the floor. Some natural necessities required me to get down; I
durst not pre-
sume to call; and if I had, it would have been in vain, with such a voice as mine, at so great a distance from the room where I lay to the kitchen where the family kept.  

While I was under these circumstances, two rats crept up the curtains, and ran smelling back-wards and forwards on the bed. One of them came up almost to my face, whereupon I rose in a fright, and drew out my hanger to defend myself. These horrible animals had the boldness to attack me on both sides, and one of them held his fore-feet at my collar; but I had the good fortune to rip up his belly before he could do me any mischief. He fell down at my feet; and the other, seeing the fate of his comrade, made his escape, but not without one good wound on the back, which I gave him as he fled, and made the blood run trickling from him. After this exploit, I walked gently to and fro on the bed, to recover my breath and loss of spirits. These creatures were of the size of a large mastiff, but infinitely more nimble and fierce; so that if I had taken off my belt before I went to sleep, I must have infallibly been torn to pieces and devoured. I measured the tail of the dead rat, and found it to be two yards long, wanting an inch; but it went against my stomach to drag the carcass off the bed, where it lay still bleeding; I observed it had yet some life, but with a strong slash across the neck, I thoroughly despatched it.

Soon after my mistress came into the room, who seeing me all bloody, ran and took me up in her hand. I pointed to the dead rat, smiling, and making other signs to show I was not hurt; whereat she was extremely rejoiced, calling the maid to take up the dead rat with a pair of tongs, and throw it out of the window. Then she set me on a table, where I showed her my hanger all bloody, and wiping it on the lappet of my coat, returned it to the scabbard. I was pressed to do more than one thing which another could not do for me, and therefore endeavoured to make my mistress understand, that I desired to be set down on the floor; which after she had done, my bashfulness would not suffer me to express myself farther, than by pointing to the door, and bowing several times. The good woman, with much difficulty, at last perceived what I would be at, and taking me up again in
her hand, walked into the garden, where she set me down. I went on one side about two hundred yards, and beckoning to her not to look or to follow me, I hid myself between two leaves of sorrel, and there discharged the necessities of nature.

I hope the gentle reader will excuse me for dwelling on these and the like particulars, which, however insignificant they may appear to groveling vulgar minds, yet will certainly help a philosopher to enlarge his thoughts and imagination, and apply them to the benefit of public as well as private life, which was my sole design in presenting this and other accounts of my travels to the world; wherein I have been chiefly studious of truth, without affecting any ornaments of learning or of style. But the whole scene of this voyage made so strong an impression on my mind, and is so deeply fixed in my memory, that, in committing it to paper I did not omit one material circumstance; however, upon a strict review, I blotted out several passages. Of less moment which were in my first copy, for fear of being censured as tedious and trifling, whereof travellers are often, perhaps not without justice, accused.

CHAPTER II.

[A description of the farmer’s daughter. The author carried to a market-town, and then to the metropolis. The particulars of his journey.]

My mistress had a daughter of nine years old, a child of towardly parts for her age, very dexterous at her needle, and skilful in dressing her baby. Her mother and she contrived to fit up the baby’s cradle for me against night: the cradle was put into a small drawer of a cabinet, and the drawer placed upon a hanging shelf for fear of the rats. This was my bed all the time I staid with those people, though made more convenient by degrees, as I began to learn their language and make my wants known. This young girl was so handy, that after I had once or twice pulled off my clothes...
before her, she was able to dress and
undress me, though I never gave her that
trouble when she would let me do either
myself. She made me seven shirts, and
some other linen, of as fine cloth as
could be got, which indeed was coarser
than sackcloth; and these she constantly
washed for me with her own hands. She
was likewise my school-mistress, to
teach me the language: when I pointed
to any thing, she told me the name of it
in her own tongue, so that in a few days
I was able to call for whatever I had a
mind to. She was very good-natured,
and not above forty feet high, being little
for her age. She gave me the name of
GRILDRIG, which the family took up,
and afterwards the whole kingdom. The
word imports what the Latins call
NANUNCULUS, the Italians HOMUNCELETINO, and the English
MANNIKIN. To her I chiefly owe my
preservation in that country: we never
parted while I was there; I called her my
GLUMDALCLITCH, or little nurse; and
should be guilty of great ingratitude, if
I omitted this honourable mention of her
care and affection towards me, which I
heartily wish it lay in my power to
requite as she deserves, instead of being
the innocent, but unhappy instrument of
her disgrace, as I have too much reason
to fear.

It now began to be known and talked
of in the neighbourhood, that my mas-
ter had found a strange animal in the
field, about the bigness of a
SPLACNUCK, but exactly shaped in
every part like a human creature; which
it likewise imitated in all its actions;
seemed to speak in a little language of
its own, had already learned several
words of theirs, went erect upon two
legs, was tame and gentle, would come
when it was called, do whatever it was
bid, had the finest limbs in the world,
and a complexion [tez/cariz] fairer than
a nobleman’s daughter of three years
old. Another farmer, who lived hard by,
and was a particular friend of my mas-
ter, came on a visit on purpose to inquire
into the truth of this story. I was
immediately produced, and placed upon
a table, where I walked as I was
commanded, drew my hanger, put it up
again, made my reverence to my
master’s guest, asked him in his own
language how he did, and told him HE
WAS WELCOME, just as my little nur-
dos veces ya sabía vestirme y desnudar-
me, aunque yo nunca quise darle este tra-
bajo cuando ella me permitía que me lo
tomase yo mismo. Me hizo siete camisas
y alguna ropa blanca más de la tela más
fina que pudo encontrarse, y que era, cier-
tamente, más áspera que harpillera, y ella
me las lavaba siempre con sus propias
manos. Asimismo era mi maestra para la
enseñanza del idioma. Cuando yo señala-
ba alguna cosa, ella me decía el nombre
en su lengua, y así en pocos días me en-
contré capaz de pedir lo que me era pre-
ciso. Era muy bondadosa y no más alta de
cuarenta pies, pues estaba muy pequeña
para su tiempo. Me dio el nombre de
Grildrig, que la familia adoptó, y después
todo el reino. La palabra vale tanto como
la latina Nanunculus, la italiana
Homunceletino y la inglesa Mannikin. A
esta niña debo principalmente mi salva-
ción en aquel país. Nunca nos separamos
mientras estuve allá. Le llamaba yo mi
Glumdalclitch, o sea mi pequeña niñera;
y cometería grave pecado de ingratitude si
omitiese esta justa mención de su cuida-
do y su afecto para mí, a los cuales qui-
siera yo que hubiese estado en mi mano
corresponder como ella merecía, en lugar
de verme convertido en el inocente pero
fatal instrumento de su desventura, como
tengo demasiadas razones para temer que
haya sucedido.

Por entonces empezaba ya a saberse
y comentarse en las cercanías que mi amo
se había encontrado en el campo un ani-
amal extraño, del grandor aproximado de
un splacknuck, pero formado exactamen-
te en todas sus partes como un ser huma-
ño, al que asimismo imitaba en todas sus
acciones. Parecía hablar una especie de
lenguaje peculiar; había aprendido ya va-
rias palabras del de ellos; andaba en dos
pies; era manso y amable; acudía cuan-
do le llamaban; hacía lo que le manda-
ban y tenía los más lindos miembros del
mundo y un cutis más fino que pudiera
tenerlo la hija de un noble a los tres años
de edad. Otro labrador que vivía cerca y
era muy amigo de mi amo pasó a hacerle
una visita con la intención de averiguar
lo que hubiese de cierto en este rumor.
Me sacaron inmediatamente y me colo-
caron sobre una mesa, donde paseé se-
gún me ordenaron, saqué mi alfanje, lo
volví a la vaina, hice una reverencia al
huésped de mi amo, le pregunté en su
propia lengua cómo estaba y le di la bien-
venida, todo del modo que me había en-
countenance rostro, semblante
to be out of c. = estar desconcertado
to give c. to = acreditar (news)
to keep one’s c. = contener la risa
to lose c. = desconcertarse
to put sb out of c. = desconcertar a uno
not to mortify him completely
not to put him entirely out of countenance
not to mortify him completely
por no acabarle de correr del todo (DQ)

se had instructed me. This man, who was old and dim-sighted, put on his spectacles to behold me better; at which I could not forbear [abstain] laughing very heartily, for his eyes appeared like the full moon shining into a chamber at two windows. Our people, who discovered the cause of my mirth, bore me company in laughing, at which the old fellow was fool enough to be angry and out of countenance. He had the character of a great miser; and, to my misfortune, he well deserved it, by the cursed advice he gave my master, to show me as a sight upon a market-day in the next town, which was half an hour’s riding, about two-and-twenty miles from our house. I guessed there was some mischief when I observed my master and his friend whispering together, sometimes pointing at me; and my fears made me fancy that I overheard and understood some of their words. But the next morning Glumdalclitch, my little nurse, told me the whole matter, which she had cunningly picked out from her mother. The poor girl laid me on her bosom, and fell a weeping with shame and grief. She apprehended some mischief would happen to me from rude vulgar folks, who might squeeze me to death, or break one of my limbs by taking me in their hands. She had also observed how modest I was in my nature, how nicely I regarded my honour, and what an indignity I should conceive it, to be exposed for money as a public spectacle, to the meanest of the people. She said, her papa and mamma had promised that Grildrig should be hers; but now she found they meant to serve her as they did last year, when they pretended to give her a lamb, and yet, as soon as it was fat, sold it to a butcher.

For my own part, I may truly affirm, that I was less concerned than my nurse. I had a strong hope, which never left me, that I should one day recover my liberty: and as to the ignominy of being carried about for a monster, I considered myself to be a perfect stranger in the country, and that such a misfortune could never be charged upon me as a reproach, if ever I should return to England, since the king of Great Britain himself, in my condition, must have undergone the same distress.

My master, pursuant to the advice of his friend, carried me in a box the next day with the pretense of showing me as a sight upon a market-day in the next town, which was half an hour’s riding, about two-and-twenty miles from our house. I guessed there was some mischief when I observed my master and his friend whispering together, sometimes pointing at me; and my fears made me fancy that I overheard and understood some of their words. But the next morning Glumdalclitch, my little nurse, told me the whole matter, which she had cunningly picked out from her mother. The poor girl laid me on her bosom, and fell a weeping with shame and grief. She apprehended some mischief would happen to me from rude vulgar folks, who might squeeze me to death, or break one of my limbs by taking me in their hands. She had also observed how modest I was in my nature, how nicely I regarded my honour, and what an indignity I should conceive it, to be exposed for money as a public spectacle, to the meanest of the people. She said, her papa and mamma had promised that Grildrig should be hers; but now she found they meant to serve her as they did last year, when they pretended to give her a lamb, and yet, as soon as it was fat, sold it to a butcher.

For my own part, I may truly affirm, that I was less concerned than my nurse. I had a strong hope, which never left me, that I should one day recover my liberty: and as to the ignominy of being carried about for a monster, I considered myself to be a perfect stranger in the country, and that such a misfortune could never be charged upon me as a reproach, if ever I should return to England, since the king of Great Britain himself, in my condition, must have undergone the same distress.

Mi amo, siguiendo el consejo de su amigo, me condujo el primer día de mer-
market-day to the neighbouring town, and took along with him his little daughter, my nurse, upon a pillion behind him. The box was close on every side, with a little door for me to go in and out, and a few gimlet holes to let in air. The girl had been so careful as to put the quilt of her baby’s bed into it, for me to lie down in. However, I was terribly shaken and discomposed in this journey, though it was but of half an hour: for the horse went about forty feet at every step and trotted so high, that the agitation was equal to the rising and falling of a ship in a great storm, but much more frequent. Our journey was somewhat farther than from London to St. Albans. My master alighted at an inn which he used to frequent; and after consulting awhile with the inn-keeper, and making some necessary preparations, he hired the GRULTRUD, or crier, to give notice through the town of a strange creature to be seen at the sign of the Green Eagle, not so big as a SPLACNUCK (an animal in that country very finely shaped, about six feet long,) and in every part of the body resembling a human creature, could speak several words, and perform a hundred diverting tricks.

I was placed upon a table in the largest room of the inn, which might be near three hundred feet square. My little nurse stood on a low stool close to the table, to take care of me, and direct what I should do. My master, to avoid a crowd, would suffer only thirty people at a time to see me. I walked about on the table as the girl commanded; she asked me questions, as far as she knew my understanding of the language reached, and I answered them as loud as I could. I turned about several times to the company, paid my humble respects, said THEY WERE WELCOME, and used some other speeches I had been taught. I took up a thimble filled with liquor, which Glumdalclitch had given me for a cup, and drank their health, I drew out my hanger, and flourished with it after the manner of fencers in England. My nurse gave me a part of a straw, which I exercised as a pike, having learnt the art in my youth. I was that day shown to twelve sets of company, and as often cado dentro de una caja a la ciudad veci- na y llevó consigo a su hijita, mi niñera, sentada en una albarda detrás de mí. La caja era cerrada por todos lados y tenía una puertecilla para que yo entrase y saliese y unos cuantos agujeros para que no me faltase el aire. La niña había tenido el cuidado de meter en ella la colchoneta de la cama de su muñeca para que me acostase. No obstante, quedé horri- blemente zarandeado y molido del viaje, aunque sólo duró media hora, pues el caballo avanzaba unos cuarenta pies de cada paso y levantaba tanto en el trote, que la agitación equivalía al cabeceo de un barco durante una gran tempestad, pero mucho más frecuente. Nuestra jor- nada fue algo más que de Londres a San Albano. Mi amo se apeó en la posada donde solía parar, y luego de consultar durante un rato con el posadero y de ha- cer algunos preparativos necesarios asalarió al grultond, o pregonero, para que corriese por la ciudad que en la casa del Águila Verde se exhibía un ser extra- ño más pequeño que un splacknuck — bonito animal de aquel país, de unos seis pies de largo—, y conformado en todo su cuerpo como un ser humano, que hablaba varias palabras y hacía mil cosas divertidas.

Me colocaron sobre una mesa en el cuarto mayor de la posada, que muy bien tendría trescientos pies en cuadro. Mi niñera tomó asiento junto a la mesa, en una banqueta baja, para cuidar de mí e indicarme lo que había de hacer. Mi amo, para evitar el agolpamiento, sólo permitía que entrasen a verme treinta personas de cada vez. Anduve por encima de la mesa, obedeciendo las órdenes de la niña; me hizo ella varias preguntas, teniendo en cuenta mis al- cancaces en el conocimiento del idioma, y yo las respondí lo más alto que me fue posible. Me volvi varias veces a la concurrencia, le ofrecí mis humildes respetos, le di la bienvenida y dije otras razones que se me habían enseñado. Alcé, lleno de licor, un dedal que Glumdalclitch me había dado para que me sirviese de copa, y bebi a la salud de los espectadores. Saqué mi alfanje y lo blandí al modo de los esgrimidores de Inglaterra. Mi niñera me dio parte de una paja, y con ella hice ejercicio de pica, pues había aprendido este arte en mi juventud. Aquel día me enseña- ron a doce cuadrillas de público, y otras
forced to act over again the same fopperies, till I was half dead with weariness and vexation; for those who had seen me made such wonderful reports, that the people were ready to break down the doors to come in. My master, for his own interest, would not suffer any one to touch me except my nurse; and to prevent danger, benches were set round the table at such a distance as to put me out of every body’s reach. However, an unlucky school-boy aimed a hazel nut directly at my head, which very narrowly missed me; otherwise it came with so much violence, that it would have infallibly knocked out my brains, for it was almost as large as a small pumpkin, but I had the satisfaction to see the young rogue well beaten, and turned out of the room.

My master gave public notice that he would show me again the next market-day; and in the meantime he prepared a convenient vehicle for me, which he had reason enough to do; for I was so tired with my first journey, and with entertaining company for eight hours together, that I could hardly stand upon my legs, or speak a word. It was at least three days before I recovered my strength; and that I might have no rest at home, all the neighbouring gentlemen from a hundred miles round, hearing of my fame, came to see me at my master’s own house. There could not be fewer than thirty persons with their wives and children (for the country is very populous;) and my master demanded the rate of a full room whenever he showed me at home, although it were only to a single family; so that for some time I had but little ease every day of the week (except Wednesday, which is their Sabbath,) although I were not carried to the town.

My master, finding how profitable I was likely to be, resolved to carry me to the most considerable cities of the kingdom. Having therefore provided himself with all things necessary for a long journey, and settled his affairs at home, he took leave of his wife, and upon the 17th of August, 1703, about two months after my arrival, we set out for the metropolis, situate near the middle of that empire, and about three

Mi amo hizo público que me enseñaría otra vez el próximo día de mercado, y entretanto me dispuso un vehículo más conveniente, lo que no le faltaban razones para hacer, pues quedé tan rendido de mi primer viaje y de divertir a la concurrencia durante ocho horas seguidas, que apenas podía tenerme en pie ni articular una palabra. Lo menos tres días tardé en recobrar las fuerzas; y ni en casa tenía descanso, porque todos los señores de las cercanías, en un radio de cien millas, noticiosos de mi fama, acudían a verme a la misma casa de mi amo. No bajarian los que lo hicieron de treinta, con sus mujeres y sus niños —porque el país es muy populoso—, y mi amo pedía el importe de una habitación llena cada vez que me enseñaba en casa, aunque fuera a una sola familia. Así, durante algún tiempo apenas tuvo reposo ningún día de la semana —excepto el viernes, que es el sábado entre ellos—, aunque no me llevaron a la ciudad.

Conociendo mi amo cuánto provecho podía sacar de mí, se resolvió a llevarme a las poblaciones de más consideración del reino. Y después de prosever de todo lo preciso para una larga excursión y dejar resueltos los asuntos de su casa, se despidió de su mujer, y el 17 de agosto de 1703, a los dos meses aproximadamente de mi llegada, salimos para la metrópoli, situada hacia el centro del imperio y a unas tres
thousand miles distance from our house. My master made his daughter Glumdalclitch ride behind him. She carried me on her lap, in a box tied about her waist. The girl had lined it on all sides with the softest cloth she could get, well quilted underneath, furnished it with her baby’s bed, provided me with linen and other necessaries, and made everything as convenient as she could. We had no other company but a boy of the house, who rode after us with the luggage.

My master’s design was to show me in all the towns by the way, and to step out of the road for fifty or a hundred miles, to any village, or person of quality’s house, where he might expect custom. We made easy journeys, of not above seven or eight score miles a-day; for Glumdalclitch, on purpose to spare me, complained she was tired with the trotting of the horse. She often took me out of my box, at my own desire, to give me air, and show me the country, but always held me fast by a leading-string. We passed over five or six rivers, many degrees broader and deeper than the Nile or the Ganges: and there was hardly a rivulet so small as the Thames at London-bridge. We were ten weeks in our journey, and I was shown in eighteen large towns, besides many villages, and private families.

On the 26th day of October we arrived at the metropolis, called in their language LORBRULGRUD, or Pride of the Universe. My master took a lodging in the principal street of the city, not far from the royal palace, and put out bills in the usual form, containing an exact description of my person and parts. He hired a large room between three and four hundred feet wide. He provided a table sixty feet in diameter, upon which I was to act my part, and palisadoed it round three feet from the edge, and as many high, to prevent my falling over. I was shown ten times a-day, to the wonder and satisfaction of all people. I could now speak the language tolerably well, and perfectly understood every word, that was spoken to me. Besides, I had learnt their alphabet, and could make a shift to explain a sentence here and there.

Era el designio de mi amo enseñarme en todas las ciudades que cogieran de camino y desviarse hasta cincuenta o cien millas para visitar alguna aldea o la casa de alguna persona de condición, donde esperase encontrar clientela. Hacíamos jornadas cómodas, de no más de ciento cuarenta y cinco millas por día; porque Glumdalclitch, con propósito de librarme a mí, se dolía de estar fatigada con el trote del caballo. A menudo me sacaba de la caja, atendiendo mis deseos, para que me diese el aire y enseñarme el paisaje, pero sujetándome siempre fuertemente con ayuda de unos andadores. Atravesábamos cincuenta ríos por gran modo más anchos y más profundos que el Nilo o el Ganges, y apenas había algún riachuelo tan chico como el Támesis por London Bridge. Empleamos diez semanas en el viaje, y fui enseñado en dieciocho grandes poblaciones, aparte de muchas aldeas y familias particulares.

El 26 de octubre llegamos a la metrópoli, llamada en la lengua de ellos Lorbrulgrud, o sea Orgullo del Universo. Mi amo tomó un alojamiento en la calle principal de la población, no lejos del palacio real, y publicó carteleras en la forma acostumbrada, con una descripción exacta de mi persona y mis méritos. Alquiló un aposento grande, de tres o cuatrocientos pies de ancho. Puso una mesa de sesenta pies de diámetro, sobre la cual debía yo desempeñar mi papel, y la cercó a tres pies del borde y hasta igual altura para evitar que me cayera. Me enseñaban diez veces al día, con la maravilla y satisfacción de todo el mundo. A la sazón hablaba yo el idioma regularmente y entendía a la perfección palabra por palabra todo lo que me decía. Además había aprendido el alfabeto y a las veces podía valerme para declarar al...
there; for Glumdalclitch had been my instructor while we were at home, and at leisure hours during our journey. She carried a little book in her pocket, not much larger than a Sanson’s Atlas; it was a common treatise for the use of young girls, giving a short account of their religion: out of this she taught me my letters, and interpreted the words.

CHAPTER III.

[The author sent for to court. The queen buys him of his master the farmer, and presents him to the king. He disputes with his majesty’s great scholars. An apartment at court provided for the author. He is in high favour with the queen. His quarrels with the queen’s dwarf.]

The frequent labours I underwent every day, made, in a few weeks, a very considerable change in my health: the more my master got by me, the more insatiable he grew. I had quite lost my stomach, and was almost reduced to a skeleton. The farmer observed it, and concluding I must soon die, resolved to make as good a hand of me as he could. While he was thus reasoning and resolving with himself, a SARDRAL, or gentleman-usher, came from court, commanding my master to carry me immediately thither for the diversion of the queen and her ladies. Some of the latter had already been to see me, and reported strange things of my beauty, behaviour, and good sense. Her majesty, and those who attended her, were beyond measure delighted with my demeanour. I fell on my knees, and begged the honour of kissing her imperial foot; but this gracious princess held out her little finger towards me, after I was set on the table, which I embraced in both my arms, and put the tip of it with the utmost respect to my lip. She made me some general questions about my country and my travels, which I answered as distinctly, and in as few words as I could. She asked, “whether...
I could be content to live at court?" I bowed down to the board of the table, and humbly answered "that I was my master’s slave: but, if I were at my own disposal, I should be proud to devote my life to her majesty’s service." She then asked my master, "whether he was willing to sell me at a good price?" He, who apprehended I could not live a month, was ready enough to part with me, and demanded a thousand pieces of gold, which were ordered him on the spot, each piece being about the bigness of eight hundred moidores; but allowing for the proportion of all things between that country and Europe, and the high price of gold among them, was hardly so great a sum as a thousand guineas would be in England. I then said to the queen, "since I was now her majesty’s most humble creature and vassal, I must beg the favour, that Glumdalclitch, who had always tended me with so much care and kindness, and understood to do it so well, might be admitted into her service, and continue to be my nurse and instructor."

The queen observed my coldness; and easily got the farmer’s consent, who was glad enough to have his daughter preferred at court, and the poor girl herself was not able to hide her joy. My late master withdrew, bidding me farewell, and saying he had left me in a good service; to which I replied not a word, only making him a slight bow. The queen observed my coldness; and, when the farmer was gone out of the apartment, asked me the reason. I made bold to tell her majesty, “that I owed no other obligation to my late master, than his not dashing out the brains of a poor harmless creature, found by chance in his fields: which obligation was amply recompensed, by the gain he had made in showing me through half the kingdom, and the price he had now sold me for. That the life I had since led was laborious enough to kill an animal of ten times my strength. That my health was much impaired, by the continual drudgery of entertaining the rabble every hour of the day; and that, if my master had not thought my life in danger, her majesty would not have got so cheap a bargain. But as I was out of all fear of being ill-treated under the protection of so great and

Si me gustaría servir en la corte. Yo me incliné hacia el tablero de la mesa y respondí humildemente que era el esclavo de mi amo, pero, a poder disponer de mí mismo, tendría a gran orgullo dedicar mi vida al servicio de Su Majestad. Entonces preguntó ella a mi amo si quería venderme a buen precio. Él, que temía que yo no viviera un mes, se mostró bastante dispuesto a dehacerse de mí y pidió mil piezas de oro, que al instante se dio orden de que le fuesen entregadas. Cada pieza venía a ser del tamaño de ochocientos moidores: pero estableciendo la proporción de todo entre aquel país y Europa, y aun habida cuenta del alto precio del oro allí, no llegaba a ser una suma tan importante como mil guineas en Inglaterra. Acto seguido dije a la reina que, puesto que ya era la más humilde criatura y el más humilde vasallo de Su Majestad, me permitiese pedirle un favor, y era que admiétese a su servicio a Glumdalclitch, que siempre había cuidado de mí con tanto esmero y amabilidad y sabia hacerlo tan bien, y continuase siendo mi niñera y mi maestra.

Su Majestad accedió a mi petición y fácilmente obtuvo el consentimiento del labrador, a quien satisfacía que su hija fuera elevada a la corte, y a la pobre niña, por su parte, no pudo ocultar su contento. El que dejaba de ser mi amo se retiró y se despidió de mí, añadiendo que me dejaba en una buena situación, a lo cual yo no respondí sino con una ligera reverencia. Observó la reina mi frialdad, y cuando el labrador hubo salido de la estancia me preguntó la causa. Claramente contesté a Su Majestad que yo no debía a mi antiguo amo otra obligación que la de no haber estrellado los sesos a una pobre criatura inofensiva encontrada en su campo por acaso, obligación que recompensaba ampliamente la ganancia que había alcanzado enseñándome por la mitad del reino y el precio en que me había vendido. Añadió que la vida que había llevado desde entonces era lo bastante trabajosa para matar a un ser diez veces más fuerte que yo; que mi salud se había quebrantado mucho con aquella continua y miserable faena de divertir a la gentuza a todas las horas del día, y que si mi amo no hubiera supuesto que mi vida estaba en peligro, quizá no hubiese encontrado Su Majestad tan buena gana. Pero libre ya de todo temor de mal trato, bajo la protección de
good an empress, the ornament of nature, the darling of the world, the delight of her subjects, the phoenix of the creation, so I hoped my late master’s apprehensions would appear to be groundless; for I already found my spirits revive, by the influence of her most august presence.”

This was the sum of my speech, delivered with great improprieties and hesitation. The latter part was altogether framed in the style peculiar to that people, whereof I learned some phrases from Glumdalclitch, while she was carrying me to court.

The queen, giving great allowance for my defectiveness in speaking, was, however, surprised at so much wit and good sense in so diminutive an animal. She took me in her own hand, and carried me to the king, who was then retired to his cabinet. His majesty, a prince of much gravity and austere countenance, not well observing my shape at first view, asked the queen after a cold manner “how long it was since she grew fond of a SPLACNUCK?” for such it seems he took me to be, as I lay upon my breast in her majesty’s right hand. But this princess, who has an infinite deal of wit and humour, set me gently on my feet upon the scrutoire, and commanded me to give his majesty an account of myself, which I did in a very few words: and Glumdalclitch who attended at the cabinet door, and could not endure I should be out of her sight, being admitted, confirmed all that had passed from my arrival at her father’s house.

The king, although he be as learned a person as any in his dominions, had been educated in the study of philosophy, and particularly mathematics; yet when he observed my shape exactly, and saw me walk erect, before I began to speak, conceived I might be a piece of clock-work (which is in that country arrived to a very great perfection) contrived by some ingenious artist. But when he heard my voice, and found what I delivered to be regular and rational, he could not conceal his astonishment. He was by no means satisfied with the relation I gave him of the manner I came into his kingdom, but thought it a story concerted between

La reina, usando de gran benevolencia para mi hablar defectuoso, quedó, sin embargo, sorprendida al ver tanto entendimiento y buen sentido en animal tan diminuto. Me tomó en sus propias manos y me llevó al rey, que estaba retirado en su despacho. Su Majestad, príncipe de mucha gravedad y austero continente, no apreciando bien mi forma a primera vista, preguntó de modo frío a la reina desde cuándo se había aficionado a un splacknuck, que tal debió de parecerle echado de boca en la mano derecha de Su Majestad. Pero la princesa, que tenía grandísimas dotes de entendimiento y donaire, me puso suavemente de pie sobre el escritorio y me mandó que dijese a Su Majestad noticia de quién era, lo que hice en muy pocas palabras, y Glumdalclitch —que aguardaba a la puerta del despacho, y, no pudiendo sufrir que me huyeran a su vista, fue autorizada para entrar— confirmó todo lo sucedido desde mi llegada a casa de su padre.

The king, although he be as learned a person as any in his dominions, had been educated in the study of philosophy, and particularly mathematics; yet when he observed my shape exactly, and saw me walk erect, before I began to speak, conceived I might be a piece of clock-work (which is in that country arrived to a very great perfection) contrived by some ingenious artist. But when he heard my voice, and found what I delivered to be regular and rational, he could not conceal his astonishment. He was by no means satisfied with the relation I gave him of the manner I came into his kingdom, but thought it a story concerted between
Glumdalclitch and her father, who had taught me a set of words to make me sell at a better price. Upon this imagination, he put several other questions to me, and still received rational answers: no otherwise defective than by a foreign accent, and an imperfect knowledge in the language, with some rustic phrases which I had learned at the farmer’s house, and did not suit the polite style of a court.

His majesty sent for three great scholars, who were then in their weekly waiting, according to the custom in that country. These gentlemen, after they had a while examined my shape with much nicety, were of different opinions concerning me. They all agreed that I could not be produced according to the regular laws of nature, because I was not framed with a capacity of preserving my life, either by swiftness, or climbing of trees, or digging holes in the earth. They observed by my teeth, which they viewed with great exactness, that I was a carnivorous animal; yet most quadrupeds being an overmatch for me, and field mice, with some others, too nimble, they could not imagine how I should be able to support myself, unless I fed upon snails and other insects, which they offered, by many learned arguments, to evince that I could not possibly do. One of these virtuosi seemed to think that I might be an embryo, or abortive birth. But this opinion was rejected by the other two, who observed my limbs to be perfect and finished; and that I had lived several years, as it was manifest from my beard, the stumps whereof they plainly discovered through a magnifying glass. They would not allow me to be a dwarf, because my littleness was beyond all degrees of comparison; for the queen’s favourite dwarf, the smallest ever known in that kingdom, was near thirty feet high. After much debate, they concluded unanimously, that I was only RELPLUM SCALCATH, which is interpreted literally LUSUS NATURAE; a determination exactly agreeable to the modern philosophy of Europe, whose professors, disdaining the old evasion of occult causes,
whereby the followers of Aristotle endeavoured in vain to disguise their ignorance, have invented this wonderful solution of all difficulties, to the unspeakable advancement of human knowledge.

After this decisive conclusion, I entreated [besought] to be heard a word or two. I applied myself to the king, and assured his majesty, “that I came from a country which abounded with several millions of both sexes, and of my own stature; where the animals, trees, and houses, were all in proportion, and where, by consequence, I might be as able to defend myself, and to find sustenance, as any of his majesty’s subjects could do here; which I took for a full answer to those gentlemen’s arguments.” To this they only replied with a smile of contempt, saying, “that the farmer had instructed me very well in my lesson.”

The king, who had a much better understanding, dismissing his learned men, sent for the farmer, who by good fortune was not yet gone out of town. Having therefore first examined him privately, and then confronted him with me and the young girl, his majesty began to think that what we told him might possibly be true. He desired the queen to order that a particular care should be taken of me; and was of opinion that Glumdalclitch should still continue in her office of tending me, because he observed we had a great affection for each other. A convenient apartment was provided for her at court: she had a sort of governess appointed to take care of her education, a maid to dress her, and two other servants for menial offices; but the care of me was wholly appropriated to herself. The queen commanded her own cabinet-maker to contrive a box, that might serve me for a bedchamber, after the model that Glumdalclitch should still continue in her office of tending me, because he observed we had a great affection for each other. A convenient apartment was provided for her at court: she had a sort of governess appointed to take care of her education, a maid to dress her, and two other servants for menial offices; but the care of me was wholly appropriated to herself. The queen commanded her own cabinet-maker to contrive a box, that might serve me for a bedchamber, after the model that Glumdalclitch and I should agree upon. This man was a most ingenious artist, and according to my direction, in three weeks finished for me a wooden chamber of sixteen feet square, and twelve high, with sash-windows, a door, and two closets, like a London bed-chamber.

The board, that made the ceiling, was to be lifted up and down by two
hinges, to put in a bed ready furnished by her majesty’s upholsterer, which Glumdalclitch took out every day to air, made it with her own hands, and letting it down at night, locked up the roof over me. A nice workman, who was famous for little curiosities, undertook to make me two chairs, with backs and frames, of a substance not unlike ivory, and two tables, with a cabinet to put my things in. The room was quilted on all sides, as well as the floor and the ceiling, to prevent any accident from the carelessness of those who carried me, and to break the force of a jolt, when I went in a coach. I desired a lock for my door, to prevent rats and mice from coming in. The smith, after several attempts, made the smallest that ever was seen among them, for I have known a larger at the gate of a gentleman’s house in England. I made a shift to keep the key in a pocket of my own, fearing Glumdalclitch might lose it. The queen likewise ordered the thinnest silks that could be got, to make me clothes, not much thicker than an English blanket, very cumbersome till I was accustomed to them. They were after the fashion of the kingdom, partly resembling the Persian, and partly the Chinese, and are a very grave and decent habit.

The queen became so fond of my company, that she could not dine without me. I had a table placed upon the same at which her majesty ate, just at her left elbow, and a chair to sit on. Glumdalclitch stood on a stool on the floor near my table, to assist and take care of me. I had an entire set of silver dishes and plates, and other necessaries, which, in proportion to those of the queen, were not much bigger than what I have seen in a London toy-shop for the furniture of a baby-house: these my little nurse kept in her pocket in a silver box, and gave me at meals as I wanted them, always cleaning them herself. No person dined with the queen but the two princesses royal, the eldest sixteen years old, and the younger at that time thirteen and a month. Her majesty used to put a bit of meat upon one of my

La reina se aficionó tanto a mi compañía, que no se hacían a comer sin mí. Me pusieron una mesa sobre aquella misma en que comía Su Majestad y junto a su codo izquierdo, y una silla para sentarme. Glumdalclitch se subía de pie en una banqueta puesta en el suelo para servirme y cuidar de mí. Yo tenía un juego completo de platos y fuentes de plata y otros útiles, que en proporción a los de la reina no eran mucho mayores que los que suelen verse del mismo género en cualquier tienda de juguetes de Londres para las casas de muñecas. Todos los guardaba en su bolsillo mi pequeña niñera dentro de una caja de plata, y ella me los daba en las comidas conforme los necesitaba, siempre limpiándolos ella misma. Nadie comía con la reina más que las dos princesas reales: la mayor, de dieciséis años, y la menor, de trece y un mes entonces. Su Majestad solía poner en uno de mis platos un po-
dishes, out of which I carved for myself, and her diversion was to see me eat in miniature: for the queen (who had indeed but a weak stomach) took up, at one mouthful, as much as a dozen English farmers could eat at a meal, which to me was for some time a very nauseous sight. She would **craunch** the wing of a lark, bones and all, between her teeth, although it were nine times as large as that of a full-grown turkey; and put a bit of bread into her mouth as big as two twelve-penny loaves. She drank out of a golden cup, above a hogshead at a draught. Her knives were twice as long as a scythe, set straight upon the handle. The spoons, forks, and other instruments, were all in the same proportion. I remember when Glumdalclitch carried me, out of curiosity, to see some of the tables at court, where ten or a dozen of those enormous knives and forks were lifted up together, I thought I had never till then beheld so terrible a sight.

It is the custom, that every Wednesday (which, as I have observed, is their Sabbath) the king and queen, with the royal issue of both sexes, dine together in the apartment of his majesty, to whom I was now become a great favourite; and at these times, my little chair and table were placed at his left hand, before one of the salt-cellars. This prince took a pleasure in conversing with me, inquiring into the manners, religion, laws, government, and learning of Europe; wherein I gave him the best account I was able. His apprehension was so clear, and his judgment so exact, that he made very wise reflections and observations upon all I said. But I confess, that, after I had been a little too copious in talking of my own beloved country, of our trade and wars by sea and land, of our schisms in religion, and parties in the state; the prejudices of his education prevailed so far, that he could not **forbear** (abstain) taking me up in his right hand, and stroking me gently with the other, after a hearty fit of laughing, asked me, “whether I was a **whig** or **tory**?” Then turning to his first minister, who waited behind him with a white staff, near as tall as the mainmast of the Royal Sovereign, he observed “how contemptible a thing was human
grandeur, which could be mimicked by such diminutive insects as I: and yet," says he, “I dare engage these creatures have their titles and distinctions of honour; they contrive little nests and burrows, that they call houses and cities; they make a figure in dress and equipage; they love, they fight, they dispute, they cheat, they betray!” And thus he continued on, while my colour came and went several times, with indignation, to hear our noble country, the mistress of arts and arms, the scourge of France, the arbiter of Europe, the seat of virtue, piety, honour, and truth, the pride and envy of the world, so contemptuously treated.

But as I was not in a condition to resent injuries, so upon mature thoughts I began to doubt whether I was injured or no. For, after having been accustomed several months to the sight and converse of this people, and observed every object upon which I cast mine eyes to be of proportionable magnitude, the horror I had at first conceived from their bulk and aspect was so far worn off, that if I had then beheld a company of English lords and ladies in their finery and birth-day clothes, acting their several parts in the most courtly manner of strutting, and bowing, and prating, to say the truth, I should have been strongly tempted to laugh as much at them as the king and his grandees did at me. Neither, indeed, could I forbear [abstain] smiling at myself, when the queen used to place me upon her hand towards a looking-glass, by which both our persons appeared before me in full view together; and there could be nothing more ridiculous than the comparison; so that I really began to imagine myself dwindled many degrees below my usual size.

Nothing angered and mortified me so much as the queen’s dwarf; who being of the lowest stature that was ever in that country (for I verily think he was not full thirty feet high), became so insolent at seeing a creature so much beneath him, that he would always affect to swagger and look big as he passed by me in the queen’s antechamber, while I was standing on some table talking with the lords or
ladies of the court, and he seldom failed of a smart word or two upon my littleness; against which I could only revenge myself by calling him brother, raising himself upon the frame of her majesty’s chair, he took me up by the middle, as I was sitting down, not thinking any harm, and let me drop into a large silver bowl of cream, and then ran away as fast as he could. I fell over head and ears, and, if I had not been a good swimmer, it might have gone very hard with me; for Glumdalclitch in that instant happened to be at the other end of the room, and the queen was in such a fright, that she wanted presence of mind to assist me. But my little nurse ran to my relief, and took me out, after I had swallowed above a quart of cream. I was put to bed: however, I received no other damage than the loss of a suit of clothes, which was utterly spoiled. The dwarf was soundly whipt, and as a farther punishment, forced to drink up the bowl of cream into which he had thrown me: neither was he ever restored to favour; for soon after the queen bestowed him on a lady of high quality, so that I saw him no more, to my very great satisfaction; for I could not tell to what extremities such a malicious urchin might have carried his resentment.

He had before served me a scurvy trick, which set the queen a-laughing, although at the same time she was heartily vexed, and would have immediately cashiered him, if I had not been so generous as to intercede. Her majesty had taken a marrow-bone upon her plate, and, after knocking out the marrow, placed the bone again in the dish erect, as it stood before; the dwarf, watching his opportunity, while Glumdalclitch was gone to the side-board, mounted the stool that she stood on to take care of me at meals, took me up in both hands, and squeezing my legs together, wedged them into the marrow bone above my waist, where I stuck for some time, and made a very ridiculous figure. I believe it was near a minute before the damas de la corte, y rara vez dejaba de soltar alguna palabra punzante a propósito de mi pequeñez, de lo cual sólo podía vengarme llamándole hermano, desafiándole a luchar, y con las agudezas acostumbra-das en labios de los pajés de corte. Un día, durante la comida, este cachorro maligno no estaba tan amostazado por algo que le había dicho yo, que, subiéndose al palo de la silla de Su Majestad la reina, me cogió por mitad del cuerpo, conforme yo estaba sentado, totalmente desprevenido, y me echó dentro de un gran bol de plata lleno de crema, y luego escapó a todo correr. Cai de cabeza, y a no ser un buen na-dador lo hubiera pasado muy mal, pues Glumdalclitch estaba en aquel momento al otro extremo de la habita-ción, y la reina se aterrorizó de modo que le faltó presencia de ánimo para auxiliarme. Pero mi pequeña niñera corrió en mi auxilio y me sacó cuando ya había tragado más de media azumbre de crema. Me llevaron a la cama, y se vio que, por mi fortuna, no había recibido otro daño que la pérdi-dida de un traje, que quedó completamente inserva-ble. El enano fue bravamente azotado y, como añadidura, obligado a be-berse el bol de crema en que me había arrojado, y nunca más recobró su favor, pues poco después la reina lo regaló a una dama de mucha calidad. Así que no volvi a verle, con gran satisfacción mía, pues no sé decir a qué extremo hubiese llevado su resentimiento este bribón endemoniado.

Ya antes me había jugado una mala pa-sada, que hizo reír a la reina, aunque al mis-mo tiempo se disgustó tan profundamente que estuvo a punto de despedirle, y sin duda lo hubiese hecho a no ser yo lo bastante generoso para interceder. Su Majestad la reina se había servido un hueso de tuétano, y cuando hubo sacado éste volvió a poner el hueso en la fuente dere cho como antes estaba. El enano, acechando una oportunidad, mientras Glumdalclitch iba al aparador, se subió en la banqueta en que ella se ponía de pie para cuidar de mi du-rante las comidas, me levantó con las dos manos y, apretándome las piernas una con-tra otra, me las encajó dentro del hueso de tuétano, donde entré hasta más arriba de la cintura y quedé como hincado un rato, ha-ciendo muy ridicula figura. Supongo que pasó cerca de un minuto primero que na-die supiese adónde había ido a parar, por-
any one knew what was become of me; for I thought it below me to cry out. But, as princes seldom get their meat hot, my legs were not scalded, only my stockings and breeches in a sad condition. The dwarf, at my entreaty, had no other punishment than a sound whipping.

I was frequently rallied by the queen upon account of my fearfulness; and she used to ask me whether the people of my country were as great cowards as myself? The occasion was this: the kingdom is much pestered with flies in summer; and these odious insects, each of them as big as a Dunstable lark, hardly gave me any rest while I sat at dinner, with their continual humming and buzzing about mine ears. They would sometimes alight upon my victuals, and leave their loathsome excrement, or spawn behind, which to me was very visible, though not to the natives of that country, whose large optics were not so acute as mine, in viewing smaller objects. Sometimes they would fix upon my nose, or forehead, where they stung me to the quick, smelling very offensively; and I could easily trace that viscous matter, which, our naturalists tell us, enables those creatures to walk with their feet upwards upon a ceiling. I had much ado to defend myself against these detestable animals, and could not forbear starting when they came on my face. It was the common practice of the dwarf, to catch a number of these insects in his hand, as schoolboys do among us, and let them out suddenly under my nose, on purpose to frighten me, and divert the queen. My remedy was to cut them in pieces with my knife, as they flew in the air, wherein my dexterity was much admired.

I remember, one morning, when Glumdalclitch had set me in a box upon a window, as she usually did in fair days to give me air (for I durst not venture to let the box be hung on a nail out of the window, as we do with cages in England), after I had lifted up one of my sashes, and sat down at my table to eat a piece of sweet cake for my breakfast, above twenty wasps, allured by the smell, came flying into the room, humming louder than the sound of swarming bees.

La reina se reía frecuentemente de mí por causa de mi cobardía, y acostumbraba preguntarme si la gente de mi país era toda tan cobarde como yo. Uno de los motivos fue éste: el reino se infesta de mosquitos en verano, y estos odiosos insectos, cada uno del tamaño de una calandria de Dunstable, no me daban punto de reposo cuando estaba sentado a la mesa, con su continuo zumbido alrededor de mis orejas. A veces se me paraban en la comida; otras se me ponían en la nariz o en la frente, donde su picadura me llegaba a lo vivo, despidiendo malísimo olor, y me era fácil seguir el trazo de esa materia viscosa, que, según nos enseñan nuestros naturalistas, permite a estos animales andar por el techo con las patas hacia arriba. Pasaba yo gran trabajo para defenderme de estos bichos detestables y no podía dejar de extremerme cuando se me veían a la cara. El enano había cogido la costumbre de cazar con la mano cierto número de estos insectos, como hacen nuestros colegiales, y solíamos de repente debajo de la nariz, de propósito para asustarme y divertir a la reina. Mi remedio era destrozárlos con mi navaja conforme iban volando por el aire, ejercicio en que se admiraba mucho mi destreza.
drones of as many bagpipes. Some of them seized my cake, and carried it piecemeal away; others flew about my head and face, confounding me with the noise, and putting me in the utmost terror of their stings. However, I had the courage to rise and draw my hanger, and attack them in the air. I dispatched four of them, but the rest got away, and I presently shut my window. These insects were as large as partridges: I took out their stings, found them an inch and a half long, and as sharp as needles. I carefully preserved them all; and having since shown them, with some other curiosities, in several parts of Europe, upon my return to England I gave three of them to Gresham College, and kept the fourth for myself.

CHAPTER IV.

I now intend to give the reader a short description of this country, as far as I travelled in it, which was not above two thousand miles round Lorbrulgrud, the metropolis. For the queen, whom I always attended, never went farther when she accompanied the king in his progress, and there staid till his majesty returned from viewing his frontiers. The whole extent of this prince’s dominions reaches about six thousand miles in length, and from three to five in breadth: whence I cannot but conclude, that our geographers of Europe are in a great error, by supposing nothing but sea between Japan and California; for it was ever my opinion, that there must be a balance of earth to counterpoise the great continent of Tartary; and therefore they ought to correct their maps and charts, by joining this vast tract of land to the north-west parts of America, wherein I shall be ready to lend them my assistance.
The kingdom is a peninsula, terminated to the north-east by a ridge of mountains thirty miles high, which are altogether impassable, by reason of the volcanoes upon the tops: neither do the most learned know what sort of mortals inhabit beyond those mountains, or whether they be inhabited at all. On the three other sides, it is bounded by the ocean. There is not one sea-port in the whole kingdom: and those parts of the coasts into which the rivers issue, are so full of pointed rocks, and the sea generally so rough, that there is no venturing with the smallest of their boats; so that these people are wholly excluded from any commerce with the rest of the world. But the large rivers are full of vessels, and abound with excellent fish; for they seldom get any from the sea, because the sea fish are of the same size with those in Europe, and consequently not worth catching; whereby it is manifest, that nature, in the production of plants and animals of so extraordinary a bulk, is wholly confined to this continent, of which I leave the reasons to be determined by philosophers. However, now and then they take a whale that happens to be dashed against the rocks, which the common people feed on heartily. These whales I have known so large, that a man could hardly carry one upon his shoulders; and sometimes, for curiosity, they are brought in hampers to Lorbrulgrud; I saw one of them in a dish at the king’s table, which passed for a rarity, but I did not observe he was fond of it; for I think, indeed, the bigness disgusted him, although I have seen one somewhat larger in Greenland.

The country is well inhabited, for it contains fifty-one cities, near a hundred walled towns, and a great number of villages. To satisfy my curious reader, it may be sufficient to describe Lorbrulgrud. This city stands upon almost two equal parts, on each side the river that passes through. It contains above eighty thousand houses, and about six hundred thousand inhabitants. It is in length three GLOMGLUNGS (which make about fifty-four English miles,) and two and a half in breadth; as I measured it myself in the royal map made by the king’s order, which was laid on the ground on purpose for me, and

El reino es una península limitada al Norte por una cadena de montañas de treinta millas de altura, que son por completo infranqueables a causa de los volcanes que hay en las cimas. No sabe el más culto qué clases de mortales viven del otro lado de aquellas montañas, ni si hay o no habitantes. Por los otros tres lados, la península confina con el mar. No hay un solo puerto en todo el litoral, y aquellas partes de las costas por donde vierten los ríos están de tal modo cubiertas de rocas puntiagudas, y el mar tan alborotado de ordinario, que aquellas gentes no pueden arriesgarse en el más pequeño de sus botes, y, así, viven imposibilitadas de todo comercio con el resto del mundo. Pero los grandes ríos están llenos de embarcaciones y abundan en pesca excelente. Rara vez pescan en el mar, porque los peces marinos tienen el mismo tamaño que en Europa, y, por lo tanto, no merecen para ellos la pena de cogerlos. Por donde resulta indudable que la Naturaleza ha limitado por completo la producción de plantas y animales de volumen tan extraordinario a este continente, por razones cuya determinación dejo a los filósofos. Sin embargo, alguna que otra vez cogen una ballena que aconteció estrellarse contra las rocas y que la gente ordinaria come con deleite. He visto algunas de estas ballenas tan grandes que apenas podía llevarlas a costillas un hombre, y a veces, como curiosidad, las transportan a Lorbrulgrud en cestos. He visto una en una fuente en la mesa del rey, que se tenía por excepcionalmente grande; pero a él no pareció gustarle mucho, sin duda porque le desagradaba su grandeza, aunque yo he visto una algo mayor en Groenlandia.
extended a hundred feet: I paced the diameter and circumference several times barefoot, and, computing by the scale, measured it pretty exactly.

5 The king’s palace is no regular edifice, but a heap of buildings, about seven miles round: the chief rooms are generally two hundred and forty feet high, and broad and long in proportion. A coach was allowed to Glumdalclitch and me, wherein her governess frequently took her out to see the town, or go among the shops; and I was always of the party, carried in my box; although the girl, at my own desire, would often take me out, and hold me in her hand, that I might more conveniently view the houses and the people, as we passed along the streets. I reckoned our coach to be about a square of Westminster-hall, but not altogether so high: however, I cannot be very exact. One day the governess ordered our coachman to stop at several shops, where the beggars, watching their opportunity, crowded to the sides of the coach, and gave me the most horrible spectacle that ever a European eye beheld. There was a woman with a cancer in her breast, swelled to a monstrous size, full of holes, in two or three of which I could have easily crept, and covered my whole body. There was a fellow with a wen in his neck, larger than five wool-packs; and another, with a couple of wooden legs, each about twenty feet high. But the most hateful sight of all, was the lice crawling on their clothes. I could see distinctly the limbs of these vermin with my naked eye, much better than those of a European louse through a microscope, and their snouts with which they rooted like swine. They were the first I had ever beheld, and I should have been curious enough to dissect one of them, if I had had proper instruments, which I unluckily left behind me in the ship, although, indeed, the sight was so nauseous, that it perfectly turned my stomach.

Besides the large box in which I was usually carried, the queen ordered a smaller one to be made for me, of about twelve feet square, and ten high, for the convenience of travelling; because the other was somewhat too large for Glumdalclitch’s lap, and cumbersome in the coach; it was made by the same
artist, whom I directed in the whole contrivance. This travelling-closet was an exact square, with a window in the middle of three of the squares, and each window was latticed with iron wire on the outside, to prevent accidents in long journeys. On the fourth side, which had no window, two strong staples were fixed, through which the person that carried me, when I had a mind to be on horseback, put a leathern belt, and buckled it about his waist. This was always the office of some grave trusty servant, in whom I could confide, whether I attended the king and queen in their progresses, or were disposed to see the gardens, or pay a visit to some great lady or minister of state in the court, when Glumdalclitch happened to be out of order; for I soon began to be known and esteemed among the greatest officers, I suppose more upon account of their majesties' favour, than any merit of my own. In journeys, when I was weary of the coach, a servant on horseback would buckle on my box, and place it upon a cushion before him; and there I had a full prospect of the country on three sides, from my three windows. I had, in this closet, a field-bed and a hammock, hung from the ceiling, two chairs and a table, neatly screwed to the floor, to prevent being tossed about by the agitation of the horse or the coach. And having been long used to sea-voyages, those motions, although sometimes very violent, did not much discompose me.

Whenever I had a mind to see the town, it was always in my travelling-closet; which Glumdalclitch held in her lap in a kind of open sedan, after the fashion of the country, borne by four men, and attended by two others in the queen's livery. The people, who had often heard of me, were very curious to crowd about the sedan, and the girl was complaisant enough to make the bearers stop, and to take me in her hand, that I might be more conveniently seen.

I was very desirous to see the chief temple, and particularly the tower belonging to it, which is reckoned the highest in the kingdom. Accordingly one day my nurse carried me thither, but I may truly say I came back mo artista, a quien yo dirigí en todo el proyecto. Este gabinete de viaje era un cuadrado perfecto, con una ventana en medio de cada uno de tres de los lados, y las ventanas enrejadas con alambre por fuera, a fin de evitar accidentes en los viajes largos. En el lado que no tenía ventana se fijaron dos fuertes colgaderos, por los cuales la persona que me llevaba, cuando me ocurría ir a caballo, pasaba un cinturón de cuero, que luego se ceñía. Éste era siempre mensajero encomendado a algún criado juicioso y fiel en quien se pudiese confiar, tanto que yo acompañase al rey y a la reina en sus excursiones, como que fuese a ver los jardines o a visitar a alguna dama principal o algún ministro, si acaso Glumdalclitch no se encontraba bien; pues advertí que muy pronto empecé a ser conocido y estimado de los más altos funcionarios, supongo que más por razón del favor que me dispensaban Sus Majestades que por mérito propio alguno. En los viajes, cuando me cansaba del coche, un criado a caballo sujetaba mi caja a la cintura y la descansaba en un cojín delante de él, y desde allí gozaba yo una amplia perspectiva del terreno por los tres lados que tenía ventana. Llevaba en este cuartito una cama de campaña y una hamaca pendiente del techo, y dos sillas y una mesa fuertemente atornilladas al suelo, para impedir que las sacudiese el movimiento del caballo o del coche. Y como estaba de tiempo acostumbrado a las travesías, esta agitación, aunque muy violenta a veces, no me descomponía gran cosa.

Siempre que sentía deseo de ver la población, me llevaba en mi cuarto de viaje, puesto en su regazo, Glumdalclitch, quien iba en una especie de silla de mano descubierta, al uso del país, transportada por cuatro hombres y asistida por otros dos con la librea de la reina. La gente, que con frecuencia oía hablar de mí, se agolpaba curiosa en torno de la silla, y la niña era lo bastante complaciente para detener a los portadores y tomarme en la mano a fin de que se me pudiera ver con más comodidad.

Tenía yo mucha gana de conocer el templo principal, y particularmente su torre que pasaba por la más alta del reino. En consecuencia, me llevó un día mi niñera; pero puedo en verdad decir que volví desencan-
disappointed; for the height is not above three thousand feet, reckoning from the ground to the highest pinnacle top; which, allowing for the difference between the size of those people and us in Europe, is no great matter for admiration, nor at all equal in proportion (if I rightly remember) to Salisbury steeple. But, not to detract from a nation, to which, during my life, I shall acknowledge myself extremely obliged, it must be allowed, that whatever this famous tower wants in height, is amply made up in beauty and strength: for the walls are near a hundred feet thick, built of hewn stone, whereof each is about forty feet square, and adorned on all sides with statues of gods and emperors, cut in marble, larger than the life, placed in their several niches. I measured a little finger which had fallen down from one of these statues, and lay unperceived among some rubbish, and found it exactly four feet and an inch in length. Glumdalclitch wrapped it up in her handkerchief, and carried it home in her pocket, to keep among other trinkets, of which the girl was very fond, as children at her age usually are.

The king's kitchen is indeed a noble building, vaulted at top, and about six hundred feet high. The great oven is not so wide, by ten paces, as the cupola at St. Paul's: for I measured the latter on purpose, after my return. But if I should describe the kitchen grate, the prodigious pots and kettles, the joints of meat turning on the spits, with many other particulars, perhaps I should be hardly believed; at least a severe critic would be apt to think I enlarged a little, as travellers are often suspected to do. To avoid which censure I fear I have run too much into the other extreme; and that if this treatise should happen to be translated into the language of Brobdingnag (which is the general name of that kingdom,) and transmitted thither, the king and his people would have reason to complain that I had done them an injury, by a false and diminutive representation.

His majesty seldom keeps above six hundred horses in his stables: they are generally from fifty-four to sixty feet high. But, when he goes abroad on solemn days, he is attended, for state, by a military guard of five hundred
horse, which, indeed, I thought was the most splendid sight that could be ever beheld, till I saw part of his army in battalia, whereof I shall find another occasion to speak.

CHAPTER V.

[Several adventurers that happened to the author. The execution of a criminal. The author shows his skill in navigation.]

I should have lived happy enough in that country, if my littleness had not exposed me to several ridiculous and troublesome accidents; some of which I shall venture to relate. Glumdalclitch often carried me into the gardens of the court in my smaller box, and would sometimes take me out of it, and hold me in her hand, or set me down to walk. I remember, before the dwarf left the queen, he followed us one day into those gardens, and my nurse having set me down, he and I being close together, near some dwarf apple trees, I must needs show my wit, by a silly allusion between him and the trees, which happens to hold in their language as it does in ours. Whereupon, the malicious rogue, watching his opportunity, when I was walking under one of them, shook it directly over my head, by which a dozen apples, each of them near as large as a Bristol barrel, came tumbling about my ears; one of them hit me on the back as I chanced to stoop, and knocked me down flat on my face; but I received no other hurt, and the dwarf was pardoned at my desire, because I had given the provocation.

Another day, Glumdalclitch left me on a smooth grass-plot to divert myself, while she walked at some distance with her governess. In the meantime, there suddenly fell such a violent shower of hail, that I was immediately by the force of it, struck to the ground: and when I was down, the hailstones gave me such cruel bangs all over the body, as if I had que yo tuve, sin duda, por el más espléndido espectáculo que pudiera presenciarse, hasta que vi a parte de su ejército en orden de batalla. De lo que ya tendré ocasión de hablar.

Capítulo V

Varias aventuras sucedidas al autor.
—La ejecución de un criminal. —El autor descubre su conocimiento de la navegación.

Hubiera vivido bastante feliz en aquella tierra si mi pequeñez no me hubiese expuesto a diversos accidentes molestos y ridículos, algunos de los cuales me atreveré a relatar. Glumdalclitch me llevaba a menudo a los jardines de palacio en mi caja pequeña, y a veces me sacaba de ella y me tenía en la mano o me bajaba al suelo para que paseara. Recuerdo que un día el enano, antes de perder la privanza de la reina, nos seguía por aquellos jardines, y habiéndome dejado mi niñera en el suelo y estando juntos él y yo cerca de unos manzanos enanos, quise hacer gala de mi ingenio con una alusión inocente al parecido entre él y los árboles, cuyas denominaciones se relacionan en el idioma que uso, como sucede en el nuestro. Por este motivo, acechando el desalmado bribón la oportunidad cuando pasaba yo por debajo de uno de los árboles lo sacudí sobre mi cabeza, con lo que una docena de manzanas, del tamaño de un barril de Bristol cada una, se vinieron abajo, salubrándome los oídos. Una de ellas me alcanzó en las espaldas cuando estaba inclinado y me derribó de boca cuan largo soy; pero no recibí mayor daño, y el enano obtuvo el perdón a ruego mío, ya que la provocación había partido de mí.

Otro día Glumdalclitch me dejó en un césped suave para que me espantase, mientras ella paseaba con su aya a alguna distancia. En esto se desencadenó de repente tan violenta granizada, que su fuerza me derribó en tierra; y, ya caído, los granizos me molieron todo el cuerpo tan cruelmente como si me hubieran lanzado pelotas de tennis; me las arreglé, sin
been pelted with tennis-balls; however, I made a shift to creep on all fours, and shelter myself, by lying flat on my face, on the lee-side of a border of lemon-thyme, but so bruised from head to foot, that I could not go abroad in ten days. Neither is this at all to be wondered at, because nature, in that country, observing the same proportion through all her operations, a hailstone is near eighteen hundred times as large as one in Europe; which I can assert upon experience, having been so curious as to weigh and measure them.

But a more dangerous accident happened to me in the same garden, when my little nurse, believing she had put me in a secure place (which I often entreated [besought] her to do, that I might enjoy my own thoughts,) and having left my box at home, to avoid the trouble of carrying it, went to another part of the garden with her governess and some ladies of her acquaintance. While she was absent, and out of hearing, a small white spaniel that belonged to one of the chief gardeners, having got by accident into the garden, happened to range near the place where I lay: the dog, following the scent, came directly up, and taking me in his mouth, ran straight to his master wagging his tail, and set me gently on the ground. By good fortune he had been so well taught, that I was carried between his teeth without the least hurt, or even tearing my clothes. But the poor gardener, who knew me well, and had a great kindness for me, was in a terrible fright: he gently took me up in both his hands, and asked me how I did? but I was so amazed and out of breath, that I could not speak a word. In a few minutes I came to myself, and he carried me safe to my little nurse, who, by this time, had returned to the place where she left me, and was in cruel agonies when I did not appear, nor answer when she called. She severely reprimanded the gardener on account of his dog. But the thing was hushed up, and never known at court, for the girl was afraid of the queen's anger; and truly, as to myself, I thought it would not be for my reputation, that such a story should go about.

embargo, para arrastrarme a cuatro pies y resguardarme, acostándome boca abajo a lo largo de la banda de sotavento de un lomo cubierto de tomillo; pero tan malfデcho de pies a cabeza, que no pude salir en diez días. Y no hay que asombrarse de ello, porque la Naturaleza en aquel país observa proporción en todas sus manifestaciones; un granizo de aquéllos es casi dieciocho veces más grande que uno de Europa, lo que puedo afirmar apoyado en la experiencia, ya que tuve la curiosidad de pesarlos y medirlos.

Pero aun me aconteció un accidente más peligroso en aquel mismo jardín, en ocasión de haberse retirado mi niñera a otra parte de él con su aya y algunas damas amigas, creyendo dejarme en lugar seguro —lo que con frecuencia le suplicaba que hiciese, para recrearme a solas con mis pensamientos— y de haberse dejado en casa mi caja para evitar la molestia de llevarla. Lejos Glumdalclitch, donde yo no la veía ni podía llegar hasta ella mi voz, un sabuesillo blanco, propiedad del jardinero, que por casualidad había entrado en el jardín, acertó a pasar cerca del sitio en que me hallaba. El perro, siguiendo el rastro, se vino derecho a mí, y cogiéndome con la boca corrió a su amo moviendo la cola y me dejó suavemente en el suelo. Por suerte le habían adiestrado tan bien, que fui transportado entre sus dientes sin sufrir el daño más ligero, ni siquiera desgarramiento de ropa; pero el infeliz jardinero, que me conocía sobradamente y sentía gran afecto por mí, se llevó un susto terrible. Me levantó suavemente en ambas manos y me preguntó si me había pasado algo; pero estaba yo tan pasmado y sin aliento, que no le pude responder palabra. A los pocos minutos volví en mí y él me llevó indemne a mi niñera, quien, en tanto, había vuelto al sitio en que me dejara, y, no hallándome ni obteniendo respuesta a sus llamadas, estaba en mortales angustias. Amonestó al jardinero severamente por lo que su perro había hecho; mas la cosa se ocultó y jamás se supo en la corte, pues la niña temía el enfado de la reina, y en cuanto a mí he de decir francamente que pensé que no haría ningún provecho a mi fama que se extendiera semejante historia.
This accident absolutely determined Glumdalclitch never to trust me abroad for the future out of her sight. I had been long afraid of this resolution, and therefore concealed from her some little unlucky adventures, that happened in those times when I was left by myself. Once a kite, hovering over the garden, made a stoop at me, and if I had not resolutely drawn my hanger, and run under a thick espalier, he would have certainly carried me away in his talons. Another time, walking to the top of a fresh mole-hill, I fell to my neck in the hole, through which that animal had cast up the earth, and coined some lie, not worth remembering, for spoiling my clothes. I likewise broke my right shin against the shell of a snail, which I happened to stumble over, as I was walking alone and thinking on poor England.

I cannot tell whether I were more pleased or mortified to observe, in those solitary walks, that the smaller birds did not appear to be at all afraid of me, but would hop about within a yard’s distance, looking for worms and other food, with as much indifference and security as if no creature at all were near them. I remember, a thrush had the confidence to snatch out of my hand, with his bill, a of cake that Glumdalclitch had just to snatch out of my hand, with his bill, given me for my breakfast. When I attempted to catch any of these birds, they would boldly turn against me, endeavouring to peck my fingers, which I durst not venture within their reach; and then they would hop back unconcerned, to hunt for worms or snails, as they did before. But one day, I took a thick cudgel, and threw it with all my strength so luckily, at a linnet, that I knocked him down, and seizing him by the neck with both my hands, ran with him in triumph to my nurse. However, the bird, who had only been stunned, recovering himself gave me so many boxes with his wings, on both sides of my head and body, though I held him at arm’s-length, and was out of the reach of his claws, that I was twenty times thinking to let him go. But I was soon relieved by one of our servants, who wrung off the bird’s neck, and I had him next day for dinner, by the queen's command. This linnet, as near as I can

durst is past tense of dare
remember, seemed to be somewhat larger than an English swan.

The maids of honour often invited Glumdalclitch to their apartments, and desired she would bring me along with her, on purpose to have the pleasure of seeing and touching me. They would often strip me naked from top to toe, and lay me at full length in their bosoms; wherewith I was much disgusted because, to say the truth, a very offensive smell came from their skins; which I do not mention, or intend, to the disadvantage of those excellent ladies, for whom I have all manner of respect; but I conceive that my sense was more acute in proportion to my littleness, and that those illustrious persons were no more disagreeable to their lovers, or to each other, than people of the same quality are with us in England. And, after all, I found their natural smell was much more supportable, than when they used perfumes, under which I immediately swooned away. I cannot forget, that an intimate friend of mine in Lilliput, took the freedom in a warm day, when I had used a good deal of exercise, to complain of a strong smell about me, although I am as little faulty that way, as most of my sex: but I suppose his faculty of smelling was as nice with regard to me, as mine was to that of this people. Upon this point, I cannot forbear doing justice to the queen my mistress, and Glumdalclitch my nurse, whose persons were as sweet as those of any lady in England.

That which gave me most uneasiness among these maids of honour (when my nurse carried me to visit them then) was, to see them use me without any manner of ceremony, like a creature who had no sort of consequence: for they would strip themselves to the skin, and put on their smocks in my presence, while I was placed on their toilet, directly before their naked bodies, which I am sure to me was very far from being a tempting sight, or from giving me any other emotions than those of horror and disgust: their skins appeared so coarse and uneven, so variously coloured, when I saw them near, with a mole here and there as broad as a trencher, and hairs hanging from it thicker than packthreads, to say nothing farther...
was equal to a cachear, registrar to search (a person) for something (as a concealed
frisk (foll. by 4 a playful antic or movement; b) to rob by searching in this way
3 (informal) a) to search (someone) by feeling for
2 (esp. of animals) to whisk or wave briskly example: the dog frisked its tail
playful manner;
frisk 1 [intransitive] to leap, move about, or act in a playful manner; frolic
2 (esp. of animals) to whisk or wave briskly example: the dog frisked its tail
3 (informal) a) to search (someone) by feeling for concealed weapons, etc.
b) to rob by searching in this way
4 a playful antic or movement; frolic

lark 2 1 a frolic or spree; an amusing incident; a joke.
2 Brit. a type of activity, affair, etc. (fed up with this digging lark).
(foll. by about) play tricks; frolic.

wherry (plural: -ries) 1 any of certain kinds of half-decked commercial boats, such as barges, used in Britain 2 a light rowing boat used in inland waters and harbours
1 : any of various light boats: as a : a long light rowboat made sharp at both ends and used to transport passengers on rivers and about harbors b : a racing scull for one person 2 : a large light barge, lighter, or fishing boat varying in type in different parts of Great Britain

concerning the rest of their persons. Neither did they at all scruple, while I was by, to discharge what they had drank, to the quantity of at least two hogsheads, in a vessel that held above three tons. The handsomest among these maids of honour, a pleasant, frolicsome girl of sixteen, would sometimes set me astride upon one of her nipples, with many other tricks, wherein the reader will excuse me for not being over particular. But I was so much displeased, that I entreated [besought] Glumdalclitch to contrive some excuse for not seeing that young lady any more.

One day, a young gentleman, who was nephew to my nurse’s governness, came and pressed them both to see an execution. It was of a man, who had murdered one of that gentleman’s intimate acquaintance. Glumdalclitch was prevailed on to be of the company, very much against her inclination, for she was naturally tender-hearted: and, as for myself, although I abhorred such kind of spectacles, yet my curiosity tempted me to see something that I thought must be extraordinary. The malefactor was fixed in a chair upon a scaffold erected for that purpose, and his head cut off at one blow, with a sword of about forty feet long. The veins and arteries spouted up such a prodigious quantity of blood, and so high in the air, that the great JET D’EAU at Versailles was not equal to it for the time it lasted: and the head, when it fell on the scaffold floor, gave such a bounce as made me start, although I was at least half an English mile distant.

The queen, who often used to hear me talk of my sea-voyages, and took all occasions to divert me when I was melancholy, asked me whether I understood how to handle a sail or an oar, and whether a little exercise of rowing might not be convenient for my health? I answered, that I understood both very well: for although my proper employment had been to be surgeon or doctor to the ship, yet often, upon a pinch, I was forced to work like a common mariner. But I could not see how this could be done in their country, where the smallest wherry was equal to a first-rate man of war among us; and such a boat as I could manage would

Un día, un joven caballero, sobrino del aya de mi niñera, vino e invitó a las dos insistentemente a que fuesen a ver una ejecución: la de un hombre que había asesinado precisamente a uno de los amigos íntimos de aquel caballero. A Glumdalclitch la convencieron para que fuese de la partida, muy contra su inclinación, porque era naturalmente compasiva; y por lo que a mí toca, aunque aborrezco esta naturaleza de espectáculos, me tentaba la curiosidad de ver una cosa que suponía que debía de ser extraordinaria. El malhechor fue sujeto a una silla en un cadalso levantado al efecto y le cortaron la cabeza de un tajo con una espada de cuarenta pies de largo aproximadamente. Las venas y arterias arrojaron tan prodigiosa cantidad de sangre y a tal altura, que el gran jeu d’eau de Versalles no se le igualaba mientras duró; y la cabeza, al caer, dio contra el piso del cadalso un golpe tan grande, que me hizo extemecer, aunque estaba yo, por lo menos, a media milla inglesa de distancia.

La reina, que solía oírme hablar de mis viajes marítimos y no dejaba ocasión de divertirme cuando me veía melancólico, me preguntó si sabía manejar una vela o un remo y si no me sería conveniente para la salud un poco de ejercicio de boga. Le respondí que ambas cosas se me entendían muy bien, pues aunque mi verdadera profesión había sido la de médico o doctor del barco, muchas veces, en casos de apuro, me había visto obligado a trabajar como un marinero más. Pero no veía yo cómo podría hacer esto en su país, donde el más pequeño esquife era igual que uno de nuestros buques de guerra de primera categoría, y en cuyos ríos no podía
never live in any of their rivers. Her majesty said, if I would contrive a boat, her own joiner should make it, and she would provide a place for me to sail in. The fellow was an ingenious workman, and by my instructions, in ten days, finished a pleasure-boat with all its tackling, able conveniently to hold eight Europeans. When it was finished, the queen was so delighted, that she ran with it in her lap to the king, who ordered it to be put into a cistern full of water, with me in it, by way of trial, where I could not manage my two sculls, or little oars, for want of room. But the queen had before contrived another project. She ordered the joiner to make a wooden trough of three hundred feet long, fifty broad, and eight deep; which, being well pitched, to prevent leaking, was placed on the floor, along the wall, in an outer room of the palace. It had a cock near the bottom to let out the water, when it began to grow stale; and two servants could easily fill it in half an hour. Here I often used to row for my own diversion, as well as that of the queen and her ladies, who thought themselves well entertained with my skill and agility. Sometimes I would put up my sail, and then my business was only to steer, while the ladies gave me a gale with their fans; and, when they were weary, some of their pages would blow my sail forward with their breath, while I showed my art by steering starboard [rightside] or larboard [babor, leftside] as I pleased. When I had done, Glumdalclitch always carried back my boat into her closet, and hung it on a nail to dry.

In this exercise I once met an accident, which had like to have cost me my life; for, one of the pages having put my boat into the trough, the governess who attended Glumdalclitch very officiously lifted me up, to place me in the boat: but I happened to slip through her fingers, and should infallibly have fallen down forty feet upon the floor, if, by the luckiest chance in the world, I had not been stopped by a corking-pin that stuck in the good gentlewoman's stomacher; the head of the pin passing between my shirt and the waistband of my breeches, and thus I was held by the resistir un bote tal como yo lo necesitaba para manejarlo. Su Majestad dijo que si yo ideaba un bote, su propio carpintero lo haría y ella buscaría un sitio donde yo pudiese navegar. El hombre era obrero hábil, y, siguiendo mis instrucciones, en diez días acabó un bote de recreo con todo su aparejo muy suficiente para ocho europeos. Cuando estuvo acabado le gustó tanto a la reina, que lo llevó corriendo en su falda al rey, quien ordenó que lo pusieran en una cisterna llena de agua, conmigo dentro, a manera de ensayo; no pude usar mis remos cortos allí por falta de espacio. Pero la reina había de antemano forjado otro proyecto; mandó al carpintero que hiciese una artesa de madera de trescientos pies de largo, cincuenta de ancho y ocho de fondo, la cual, bien embreada para que no se saliese el agua, fue puesta en el suelo, pegada a la pared, en una habitación exterior del palacio. Tenía la artesa cerca del fondo un grifo para sacar el agua cuando llevaba echada mucho tiempo, y dos criados podían llenarla sin trabajo en media hora. Allí solía yo remar para mi propia distracción, así como para la de la reina y sus damas, que se complacían mucho en mi destreza y agilidad. A veces largaba la vela, y entonces mi tarea consistía solamente en gobernar cuando las damas me mandaban viento fresco con los abanicos, y cuando se cansaban ellas, algún paje me empujaba la vela con su aliento, mientras yo mostraba mi arte gobernando a babor, o a estribor, según quería. Cuando terminaba, Glumdalclitch volvía a llevarse el bote a su gabinete y allí lo colgaba de un clavo para que se secase.
Another time, one of the servants, whose office it was to fill my trough every third day with fresh water, was so careless as to let a huge frog (not perceiving it) slip out of his pail. The frog lay concealed till I was put into my boat, but then, seeing a resting-place, climbed up, and made it lean so much on one side, that I was forced to balance it with all my weight on the other, to prevent overturning. When the frog was got in, it hopped at once half the length of the boat, and then over my head, backward and forward, daubing my face and clothes with its odious slime. The largeness of its features made it appear the most deformed animal that can be conceived. However, I desired Glumdalclitch to let me deal with it alone. I banged it a good while with one of my sculls, and at last forced it to leap out of the boat.

But the greatest danger I ever underwent in that kingdom, was from a monkey, who belonged to one of the clerks of the kitchen. Glumdalclitch had locked me up in her closet, while she went somewhere upon business, or a visit. The weather being very warm, the closet-window was left open, as well as the windows and the door of my bigger box, in which I usually lived, because of its largeness and convenience. As I sat quietly meditating at my table, I heard something bounce in at the closet-window, and skip about from one side to the other: whereat, although I was much alarmed, yet I ventured to look out, but not stirring from my seat; and then I saw this frolicsome animal frisking and leaping up and down, till at last he came to my box, which he seemed to view with great pleasure and curiosity, peeping in at the door and every window. I retreated to the farther corner of my room; or box; but the monkey looking in at every side, put me in such a fright, that I wanted presence of mind to conceal myself under the bed, as I might easily have done.

Swift's Gulliver's

Otra vez, uno de los criados, cuyo oficio era llenar mi antes de agua limpia cada tres días, tuvo el descuido de dejar que una rana enorme, por no haberla visto, se deslizara en el cubo. La rana estuvo oculta hasta que me pusieron en el bote; pero entonces, adversitando un lugar de descanso, trepó a él, y lo hizo inclinarse tanto de un costado, que tuve que contrabalancear echando al otro todo el peso de mi cuerpo para impedir el vuelco. Cuando la rana estuvo dentro, saltó de primera intención la mitad del largo del bote, y luego, por encima de mi cabeza, de atrás adelante y al contrario, ensuciándome la cara y las ropas con repugnante lodo. El grandor de sus miembros la hacía aparecer como el animal más disforme que pueda concebirse. No obstante, pedí a Glumdalclitch que me dejase habérmelas con ella solo. Durante un buen rato lo sacudí con uno de los remos, y, por fin, la forcé a saltar del bote.

Pero el mayor peligro en que me vi durante mi estancia en aquel reino fue debido a un mono, propiedad de uno de los ayudantes de cocina. Me había encerrado Glumdalclitch en su gabinete mientras ella salía a compras o de visita. Como hacía mucho calor, la ventana del gabinete estaba abierta para par en par, así como las ventanas y puertas de mi caja grande, en la cual ya habitaba frecuentemente a causa de su comodidad y amplitud. Estaba sentado a la mesa meditando tranquilamente, cuando vi que algo se entraba de un salto por la ventana de la habitación y daba brincos de un lado para otro. Aunque ello me alarmó en extremo, me atreví a mirar hacia fuera, bien que sin moverme de mi asiento; y entonces vi al revoltillo animal roteando y saltando de aquí para allá, hasta que por último se vino a mi caja y la examinó con gran curiosidad y regocijo, atisbando por las puertas y las ventanas. Me separé al ángulo más apartado de mi habitación, o sea de mi caja; pero el mono, mirando el interior por todas partes, me atorció de tal modo que me faltó presencia de ánimo para esconderme debajo de la cama, como hubiera podido hacer fácilmente.
After some time spent in peeping, grinning, and chattering, he at last espied me; and reaching one of his paws in at the door, as a cat does when she plays with a mouse, although I often shifted place to avoid him, he at length seized the lappet of my coat (which being made of that country silk, was very thick and strong), and dragged me out. He took me up in his right fore-foot and held me as a nurse does a child she is going to suckle, just as I have seen the same sort of creature do with a kitten in Europe; and when I offered to struggle he squeezed me so hard, that I thought it more prudent to submit. I have good reason to believe, that he took me for a young one of his own species, by his often stroking my face very gently with his other paw. In these diversions he was interrupted by a noise at the closet door, as if somebody were opening it: whereupon he suddenly leaped up to the window at which he had come in, and thence upon the leads and gutters, walking upon three legs, and holding me in the fourth, till he clambered up to a roof that was next to ours. I heard Glumdalclitch give a shriek at the moment he was carrying me out. The poor girl was almost distracted: that quarter of the palace was all in an uproar; the servants ran for ladders; the monkey was seen by hundreds in the court, sitting upon the ridge of a building, holding me like a baby in one of his forepaws, and feeding me with the other, by cramming into my mouth some victuals he had squeezed out of the bag on one side of his chaps, and patting me when I would not eat; whereat many of the rabble below could not forbear [abstain] laughing; neither do I think they justly ought to be blamed, for, without question, the sight was ridiculous enough to every body but myself. Some of the people threw up stones, hoping to drive the monkey down; but this was strictly forbidden, or else, very probably, my brains had been dashed out.

The ladders were now applied, and mounted by several men; which the monkey observing, and finding himself almost encompassed, not being able to
make speed enough with his three legs, let me drop on a ridge tile, and made his escape. Here I sat for some time, five hundred yards from the ground, expecting every moment to be blown down by the wind, or to fall by my own giddiness, and come tumbling over and over from the ridge to the eaves; but an honest lad, one of my nurse’s footmen, climbed up, and putting me into his breeches pocket, brought me down safe.

I was almost choked with the filthy stuff the monkey had crammed down my throat: but my dear little nurse picked it out of my mouth with a small needle, and then I fell a-vomiting, which gave me great relief. Yet I was so weak and bruised in the sides with the squeezes given me by this odious animal, that I was forced to keep my bed a fortnight. The king, queen, and all the court, sent every day to inquire after my health; and her majesty made me several visits during my sickness. The monkey was killed, and an order made, that no such animal should be kept about the palace.

When I attended the king after my recovery, to return him thanks for his favours, he was pleased to rally me a good deal upon this adventure. He asked me, “what my thoughts and speculations were, while I lay in the monkey’s paw; how I liked the victuals he gave me; his manner of feeding; and whether the fresh air on the roof had sharpened my stomach.” He desired to know, “what I would have done upon such an occasion in my own country.” I told his majesty, “that in Europe we had no monkeys, except such as were brought for curiosity from other places, and so small, that I could deal with a dozen of them together, if they presumed to attack me. And as for that monstrous animal with whom I was so lately engaged (it was indeed as large as an elephant), if my fears had suffered me to think so far as to make use of my hanger,” (looking fiercely, and clapping my hand on the hilt, as I spoke) “when he poked his paw into my chamber, perhaps I should have given him such a wound, as would have made him glad to withdraw it with more haste than he put it in.” This I delivered in a firm tone, like a person who was jealous lest his
courage should be called in question. However, my speech produced nothing else beside a laud laughter, which all the respect due to his majesty from those about him could not make them contain.

This made me reflect, how vain an attempt it is for a man to endeavour to do himself honour among those who are out of all degree of equality or comparison with him. And yet I have seen the moral of my own behaviour very frequent in England since my return; where a little contemptible varlet, without the least title to birth, person, wit, or common sense, shall presume to look with importance, and put himself upon a foot with the greatest persons of the kingdom.

I was every day furnishing the court with some ridiculous story: and Glumdalclitch, although she loved me to excess, yet was arch enough to inform the queen, whenever I committed any folly that she thought would be diverting to her majesty. The girl, who had been out of order, was carried by her governess to take the air about an hour’s distance, or thirty miles from town. They alighted out of the coach near a small foot-path in a field, and Glumdalclitch setting down my travelling box, I went out of it to walk. There was a cow-dung in the path, and I must need try my activity by attempting to leap over it. I took a run, but unfortunately jumped short, and found myself just in the middle up to my knees. I waded through with some difficulty, and one of the footmen wiped me as clean as he could with his handkerchief, for I was filthily bemired; and my nurse confined me to my box, till we returned home; where the queen was soon informed of what had passed, and the footmen spread it about the court: so that all the mirth for some days was at my expense.
CHAPTER VI.

[Several contrivances of the author to please the king and queen. He shows his skill in music. The king inquires into the state of England, which the author relates to him. The king’s observations thereon.]

I used to attend the king’s levee once or twice a week, and had often seen him under the barber’s hand, which indeed was at first very terrible to behold; for the razor was almost twice as long as an ordinary scythe. His majesty, according to the custom of the country, was only shaved twice a-week. I once prevailed on the barber to give me some of the sud or lather, out of which I picked forty or fifty of the strongest stumps of hair. I then took a piece of fine wood, and cut it like the back of a comb, making several holes in it at equal distances with as small a needle as I could get from Glumdalclitch. I fixed in the stumps so artificially, scraping and sloping them with my knife toward the points, that I made a very tolerable comb; which was a seasonable supply, my own being so much broken in the teeth, that it was almost useless: neither did I know any artist in that country so nice and exact, as would undertake to make me another.

And this puts me in mind of an amusement, wherein I spent many of my leisure hours. I desired the queen’s woman to save for me the combings of her majesty’s hair, whereof in time I got a good quantity; and consulting with my friend the cabinet-maker, who had received general orders to do little jobs for me, I directed him to make two chair-frames, no larger than those I had in my box, and to bore little holes with a fine awl, round those parts where I designed the backs and seats; through these holes I wove the strongest hairs I could pick out, just after the manner of cane chairs in England. When they were finished, I made a present of them to her majesty; who kept them in her cabinet, and used to show them for curiosities, as indeed they were the wonder of every one that beheld them. The queen would have me sit upon one of these chairs, but I absolutely refused to obey her, protesting I would rather die than place a dishonourable part of my body on

Capítulo VI

El autor se da maña por agradar al rey y a la reina. —Muestra su habilidad en la música. —El rey se informa del estado de Europa, que el autor le expone. —Observaciones del rey.

Asistía yo una o dos veces en la semana al acto de levantarse el rey, y con frecuencia le veía en manos de su barbero, lo que en verdad constituía al principio un espectáculo terrible, pues la navaja era casi doble de larga que una guadaña corriente. Su Majestad, según la costumbre del país, se afeitaba solamente dos veces a la semana. En una ocasión pude convenecer al barbero para que me diese parte de las jabonaduras, de entre las cuales saqué cuarenta o cincuenta de los cañones más fuertes. Cogi luego un trocito de madera fina y lo corté dándole la forma del lomo de un peine e hice en él varios agujeros a distancias iguales con la aguja más delgada que pudo proporcionarme Glumdalclitch. Me di tan buen arte para fijar en él los cañones, rayándolos y afilándolos por la punta con mi navaja, que hice un peine bastante bueno. Refuerzo muy del caso, porque el mío tenía las púas rotas hasta el punto de ser casi invisible, y no conocía en el país artista tan delicado que pudiera encargarse de hacerme otro.

Al mismo tiempo aquello me sugirió una diversión en que pasé muchas de mis horas de ocio. Pedí a la dama de la reina que me guardara el pelo que Su Majestad soltase cuando se la peinaba, y pasado algún tiempo tuve cierta cantidad. Consulté con mi amigo el ebanista, que tenía orden de hacerme los trabajillos que necesitase, y le encargué la armadura de dos sillas no mayores que las que tenía en mi caja y que practicara luego unos agujeritos con una lezna fina alrededor de lo que había de ser respaldo y asiento. Por estos agujeros pasé los cabellos más fuertes que pude hallar, al modo que se hace en las sillas de mimbres en Inglaterra. Cuando estuvieron terminadas las regalé a Su Majestad la reina, quien las puso en su gabinete y las mostraba como una curiosidad; y, en efecto, eran el asombro de todo el que las veía. Quiso la reina que yo me sentase en una de aquellas sillas; pero me negó resueltamente a obedecerla, protestando que mejor moriría mil veces que colocar mi cuerpo en aquellos cabellos preciosos que en otro tiempo adornaron
those precious hairs, that once adorned her majesty’s head. Of these hairs (as I had always a mechanical genius) I likewise made a neat little purse, about five feet long, with her majesty’s name deciphered in gold letters, which I gave to Glumdalclitch, by the queen’s consent. To say the truth, it was more for show than use, being not of strength to bear the weight of the larger coins, and therefore she kept nothing in it but some little toys that girls are fond of.

The king, who delighted in music, had frequent concerts at court, to which I was sometimes carried, and set in my box on a table to hear them: but the noise was so great that I could hardly distinguish the tunes. I am confident that all the drums and trumpets of a royal army, beating and sounding together just at your ears, could not equal it. My practice was to have my box removed from the place where the performers sat, as far as I could, then to shut the doors and windows of it, and draw the window curtains; after which I found their music not disagreeable.

I had learned in my youth to play a little upon the spinet. Glumdalclitch kept one in her chamber, and a master attended twice a-week to teach her: I called it a spinet, because it somewhat resembled that instrument, and was played upon in the same manner. A fancy came into my head, that I would entertain the king and queen with an English tune upon this instrument. But this appeared extremely difficult: for the spinet was near sixty feet long, each key being almost a foot wide, so that with my arms extended I could not reach to above five keys, and to press them down required a good smart stroke with my fist, which would be too great a labour, and to no purpose. The method I contrived was this: I prepared two round sticks, about the bigness of common cudgels; they were thicker at one end than the other, and I covered the thicker ends with pieces of a mouse’s skin, that by rapping on them I might neither damage the tops of the keys nor interrupt the sound. Before the spinet a bench was placed, about four feet below the keys, and I
was put upon the bench. I ran sideling upon it, that way and this, as fast as I could, banging the proper keys with my two sticks, and made a shift to play a jig, to the great satisfaction of both their majesties; but it was the most violent exercise I ever underwent; and yet I could not strike above sixteen keys, nor consequently play the bass and treble together, as other artists do; which was a great disadvantage to my performance.

The king, who, as I before observed, was a prince of excellent understanding, would frequently order that I should be brought in my box, and set upon the table in his closet: he would then command me to bring one of my chairs out of the box, and sit down within three yards distance upon the top of the cabinet, which brought me almost to a level with his face. In this manner I had several conversations with him. I one day took the freedom to tell his majesty, "that the contempt he discovered towards Europe, and the rest of the world, did not seem answerable to those excellent qualities of mind that he was master of; that reason did not extend itself with the bulk of the body; on the contrary, we observed in our country, that the tallest persons were usually the least provided with it; that among other animals, bees and ants had the reputation of more industry, art, and sagacity, than many of the larger kinds; and that, as inconsiderable as he took me to be, I hoped I might live to do his majesty some signal service." The king heard me with attention, and began to conceive a much better opinion of me than he had ever before. He desired "I would give him as exact an account of the government of England as I possibly could; because, as fond as princes commonly are of their own customs (for so he conjectured of other monarchs, by my former discourses), he should be glad to hear of any thing that might deserve imitation."

Imagine with thyself, courteous reader, how often I then wished for the tongue of Demosthenes or Cicero, that might have enabled me to celebrate the praise of my own dear native country in

El rey, que, como ya he consignado, era un príncipe de muy buen entendimiento, ordenaba frecuentemente que me llevaran en mi caja y me pusieran sobre la mesa de su gabinete; me mandaba luego que sacase de la caja una de las sillas y me sentase a unas tres yardas de distancia en lo más alto del escritorio, con lo que me encontraba casi al nivel de su cara. De este modo sostuve varias conversaciones con él. Un día me tomé la libertad de decir a Su Majestad que el desprecio que mostraba hacia Europa y el resto del mundo no parecía responder a las excelentes prendas de discreción que le distinguían; que la razón no crece con el tamaño del cuerpo, sino, antes al contrario, se había observado en nuestro país que las personas más altas están peor dotadas en este respeto. Añadí que, entre otros animales, las abejas y las hormigas tenían fama de más industriosas, hábiles y sagaces que muchos de las especies mayores, y que, por insignificante que yo le pareciese, tenía la esperanza de encontrar en mi vida ocasión de prestar a Su Majestad algún señalado servicio. El rey me oyó con atención y empezó a concebir de mi un juicio mucho mejor del que había tenido hasta entonces. Me pidió que le diese una referencia tan exacta como me fuera posible del gobierno de Inglaterra; pues, aun siendo los principes, por regla general, amantes de sus propias costumbres —así lo suponía el respeto de otros monarcas por anteriores razonamientos míos—, le gustaría conocer alguna cosa que mereciera ser imitada.
a style equal to its merits and felicity.

I began my discourse by informing his majesty, that our dominions consisted of two islands, which composed three mighty kingdoms, under one sovereign, beside our plantations in America. I dwelt long upon the fertility of our soil, and the temperature of our climate. I then spoke at large upon the constitution of an English parliament; partly made up of an illustrious body called the House of Peers; persons of the noblest blood, and of the most ancient and ample patrimonies. I described that extraordinary care always taken of their education in arts and arms, to qualify them for being counsellors both to the king and kingdom; to have a share in the legislature; to be members of the highest court of judicature, whence there can be no appeal; and to be champions always ready for the defence of their prince and country, by their valour, conduct, and fidelity. That these were the ornament and bulwark of the kingdom, worthy followers of their most renowned ancestors, whose honour had been the reward of their virtue, from which their posterity were never once known to degenerate. To these were joined several holy persons, as part of that assembly, under the title of bishops, whose peculiar business is to take care of religion, and of those who instruct the people therein. These were searched and sought out through the whole nation, by the prince and his wisest counsellors, among such of the priesthood as were most deservedly distinguished by the sanctity of their lives, and the depth of their erudition; who were indeed the spiritual fathers of the clergy and the people.

That the other part of the parliament consisted of an assembly called the House of Commons, who were all principal gentlemen, freely picked and culled out by the people themselves, for their great abilities and love of their country, to represent the wisdom of the whole nation. And that these two bodies made up the most august assembly in Europe; to whom, in conjunction with the prince, the whole legislature is committed.

I then descended to the courts of justice; over which the judges, those

peculiar (En) odd, queer, unusual, singular, especial, funny. Raro, extraño, especial, singular, peculiarr (Sp) particular, caracteristico, curioso, caracteristic, typical, particular, individual

cull v.tr. 1 select, choose, or gather from a large quantity or amount (knowledge culled (picked, selected, chosen) from books). 2 pick or gather (flowers, fruit, etc.). 3 select (animals) according to quality, esp. poor surplus specimens for killing.

peculiar (En) odd, queer, unusual, singular, especial, funny. Raro, extraño, especial, singular, peculiar (Sp) particular, caracteristico, curioso, caracteristic, typical, particular, individual

cull v.tr. 1 select, choose, or gather from a large quantity or amount (knowledge culled (picked, selected, chosen) from books). 2 pick or gather (flowers, fruit, etc.). 3 select (animals) according to quality, esp. poor surplus specimens for killing.

peculiar (En) odd, queer, unusual, singular, especial, funny. Raro, extraño, especial, singular, peculiar (Sp) particular, caracteristico, curioso, caracteristic, typical, particular, individual

cull v.tr. 1 select, choose, or gather from a large quantity or amount (knowledge culled (picked, selected, chosen) from books). 2 pick or gather (flowers, fruit, etc.). 3 select (animals) according to quality, esp. poor surplus specimens for killing.

peculiar (En) odd, queer, unusual, singular, especial, funny. Raro, extraño, especial, singular, peculiar (Sp) particular, caracteristico, curioso, caracteristic, typical, particular, individual

cull v.tr. 1 select, choose, or gather from a large quantity or amount (knowledge culled (picked, selected, chosen) from books). 2 pick or gather (flowers, fruit, etc.). 3 select (animals) according to quality, esp. poor surplus specimens for killing.

peculiar (En) odd, queer, unusual, singular, especial, funny. Raro, extraño, especial, singular, peculiar (Sp) particular, caracteristico, curioso, caracteristic, typical, particular, individual

cull v.tr. 1 select, choose, or gather from a large quantity or amount (knowledge culled (picked, selected, chosen) from books). 2 pick or gather (flowers, fruit, etc.). 3 select (animals) according to quality, esp. poor surplus specimens for killing.

peculiar (En) odd, queer, unusual, singular, especial, funny. Raro, extraño, especial, singular, peculiar (Sp) particular, caracteristico, curioso, caracteristic, typical, particular, individual

cull v.tr. 1 select, choose, or gather from a large quantity or amount (knowledge culled (picked, selected, chosen) from books). 2 pick or gather (flowers, fruit, etc.). 3 select (animals) according to quality, esp. poor surplus specimens for killing.

peculiar (En) odd, queer, unusual, singular, especial, funny. Raro, extraño, especial, singular, peculiar (Sp) particular, caracteristico, curioso, caracteristic, typical, particular, individual

cull v.tr. 1 select, choose, or gather from a large quantity or amount (knowledge culled (picked, selected, chosen) from books). 2 pick or gather (flowers, fruit, etc.). 3 select (animals) according to quality, esp. poor surplus specimens for killing.

peculiar (En) odd, queer, unusual, singular, especial, funny. Raro, extraño, especial, singular, peculiar (Sp) particular, caracteristico, curioso, caracteristic, typical, particular, individual

cull v.tr. 1 select, choose, or gather from a large quantity or amount (knowledge culled (picked, selected, chosen) from books). 2 pick or gather (flowers, fruit, etc.). 3 select (animals) according to quality, esp. poor surplus specimens for killing.

peculiar (En) odd, queer, unusual, singular, especial, funny. Raro, extraño, especial, singular, peculiar (Sp) particular, caracteristico, curioso, caracteristic, typical, particular, individual

cull v.tr. 1 select, choose, or gather from a large quantity or amount (knowledge culled (picked, selected, chosen) from books). 2 pick or gather (flowers, fruit, etc.). 3 select (animals) according to quality, esp. poor surplus specimens for killing.

peculiar (En) odd, queer, unusual, singular, especial, funny. Raro, extraño, especial, singular, peculiar (Sp) particular, caracteristico, curioso, caracteristic, typical, particular, individual

cull v.tr. 1 select, choose, or gather from a large quantity or amount (knowledge culled (picked, selected, chosen) from books). 2 pick or gather (flowers, fruit, etc.). 3 select (animals) according to quality, esp. poor surplus specimens for killing.

peculiar (En) odd, queer, unusual, singular, especial, funny. Raro, extraño, especial, singular, peculiar (Sp) particular, caracteristico, curioso, caracteristic, typical, particular, individual

cull v.tr. 1 select, choose, or gather from a large quantity or amount (knowledge culled (picked, selected, chosen) from books). 2 pick or gather (flowers, fruit, etc.). 3 select (animals) according to quality, esp. poor surplus specimens for killing.

peculiar (En) odd, queer, unusual, singular, especial, funny. Raro, extraño, especial, singular, peculiar (Sp) particular, caracteristico, curioso, caracteristic, typical, particular, individual

cull v.tr. 1 select, choose, or gather from a large quantity or amount (knowledge culled (picked, selected, chosen) from books). 2 pick or gather (flowers, fruit, etc.). 3 select (animals) according to quality, esp. poor surplus specimens for killing.

peculiar (En) odd, queer, unusual, singular, especial, funny. Raro, extraño, especial, singular, peculiar (Sp) particular, caracteristico, curioso, caracteristic, typical, particular, individual

cull v.tr. 1 select, choose, or gather from a large quantity or amount (knowledge culled (picked, selected, chosen) from books). 2 pick or gather (flowers, fruit, etc.). 3 select (animals) according to quality, esp. poor surplus specimens for killing.

peculiar (En) odd, queer, unusual, singular, especial, funny. Raro, extraño, especial, singular, peculiar (Sp) particular, caracteristico, curioso, caracteristic, typical, particular, individual

cull v.tr. 1 select, choose, or gather from a large quantity or amount (knowledge culled (picked, selected, chosen) from books). 2 pick or gather (flowers, fruit, etc.). 3 select (animals) according to quality, esp. poor surplus specimens for killing.
venerable sages and interpreters of the law, presided, for determining the disputed rights and properties of men, as well as for the punishment of vice and protection of innocence. I mentioned the prudent management of our treasury; the valour and achievements of our forces, by sea and land. I computed the number of our people, by reckoning how many millions there might be of each religious sect, or political party among us. I did not omit even our sports and pastimes, or any other particular which I thought might redound to the honour of my country. And I finished all with a brief historical account of affairs and events in England for about a hundred years past.

This conversation was not ended under five audiences, each of several hours; and the king heard the whole with great attention, frequently taking notes of what I spoke, as well as memorandums of what questions he intended to ask me.

When I had put an end to these long discourses, his majesty, in a sixth audience, consulting his notes, proposed many doubts, queries, and objections, upon every article. He asked, “What methods were used to cultivate the minds and bodies of our young nobility, and in what kind of business they commonly spent the first and teachable parts of their lives? What course was taken to supply that assembly, when any noble family became extinct? What qualifications were necessary in those who are to be created new lords: whether the humour of the prince, a sum of money to a court lady, or a design of strengthening a party opposite to the public interest, ever happened to be the motive in those advancements? What share of knowledge these lords had in the laws of their country, and how they came by it, so as to enable them to decide the properties of their fellow-subjects in the last resort? Whether they were always so free from avarice, partialities, or want, that a bribe, or some other sinister view, could have no place among them? Whether those holy lords I spoke of were always promoted to that rank upon account of their knowledge in religious matters, and the sanctity of
their lives; had never been compliers with the times, while they were common priests; or slavish prostitute chaplains to some nobleman, whose opinions they continued servilely to follow, after they were admitted into that assembly?"

He then desired to know, “What arts were practised in electing those whom I called commoners: whether a stranger, with a strong purse, might not influence the vulgar voters to choose him before their own landlord, or the most considerable gentleman in the neighbourhood? How it came to pass, that people were so violently bent upon getting into this assembly, which I allowed to be a great trouble and expense, often to the ruin of their families, without any salary or pension? because this appeared such an exalted strain of virtue and public spirit, that his majesty seemed to doubt it might possibly not be always sincere.”

And he desired to know, “Whether such zealous gentlemen could have any views of refunding themselves for the charges and trouble they were at by sacrificing the public good to the designs of a weak and vicious prince, in conjunction with a corrupted ministry?” He multiplied his questions, and sifting me thoroughly upon every part of this head, proposing numberless inquiries and objections, which I think it not prudent or convenient to repeat.

Upon what I said in relation to our courts of justice, his majesty desired to be satisfied in several points: and this was the better able to do, having been formerly almost ruined by a long suit in chancery, which was decreed [ordained] for me with costs. He asked, “What time was usually spent in determining between right and wrong, and what degree of expense? Whether advocates and orators had liberty to plead in causes manifestly known to be unjust, vexatious, or oppressive? Whether party, in religion or politics, were observed to be of any weight in the scale of justice? Whether those pleading orators were persons educated in the general knowledge of equity, or only in provincial, national, and other

**vicious** no es vicioso, sino feroz / fiero [perro, animal], bad-tempered, spiteful, furious, de mil demonios [temperament], despiadado / sanguinario, con saña de mil demonios. Vicioso no es vicioso, sino feroz / fiero [perro, animal], bad-tempered, spiteful, furious, de mil demonios [temperament], despiadado / sanguinario, con saña de mil demonios.
local customs? Whether they or their judges had any part in penning those laws, which they assumed the liberty of interpreting, and glossing upon at their pleasure? Whether they had ever, at different times, pleaded for and against the same cause, and cited precedents to prove contrary opinions? Whether they were a rich or a poor corporation? Whether they received any pecuniary reward for pleading, or delivering their opinions? And particularly, whether they were ever admitted as members in the lower senate?"

He fell next upon the management of our treasury; and said, “he thought my memory had failed me, because I computed our taxes at about five or six millions a-year, and when I came to mention the issues, he found they sometimes amounted to more than double; for the notes he had taken were very particular in this point, because he hoped, as he told me, that the knowledge of our conduct might be useful to him, and he could not be deceived in his calculations. But, if what I told him were true, he was still at a loss how a kingdom could run out of its estate, like a private person.” He asked me, “who were our creditors; and where we found money to pay them?” He wondered to hear me talk of such chargeable and expensive wars; “that certainly we must be a quarrelsome people, or live among very bad neighbours, and that our generals must needs be richer than our kings.” He asked, what business we had out of our own islands, unless upon the score of trade, or treaty, or to defend the coasts with our fleet? Above all, he was amazed to hear me talk of a mercenary standing army, in the midst of peace, and among a free people. He said, “if we were governed by our own consent, in the persons of our representatives, he could not imagine of whom we were afraid, or against whom we were to fight; and would hear my opinion, whether a private man’s house might not be better defended by himself, his children, and family, than by half-a-dozen rascals, picked up at a venture in the streets for small wages, who might get a hundred times more by cutting their throats?”

La tomó luego con la administración de nuestro tesoro, y dijo que, sin duda, a mí me había flaqueado la memoria, por cuanto calculé nuestras rentas en unos cinco o seis millones al año, y cuando hice mención de los gastos se encontró con que en ocasiones ascendían a más del doble de esa cantidad, pues sobre este punto había tomado notas muy detalladas, con la esperanza, según me dijo, de que pudiera serle útil el conocimiento de nuestra conducta, y no podía engañarse en sus cálculos. Pero, dado que fuera verdad lo que yo le había dicho, se sorprendía grandemente de cómo un reino podía gastar más de su hacienda como un simple particular. Me preguntó quiénes eran nuestros acreedores y dónde encontrábamos dinero para pagarles. Se maravilló oyéndome hablar de tan dispensiosas guerras, pues sin duda habíamos de ser un pueblo muy pendenciero, o vivir entre muy malos vecinos, y nuestros generales tendrían que ser más ricos que nuestro rey. Me preguntó qué asuntos teníamos fuera de nuestras propias islas, si no eran el comercio y los tratados o la defensa de las costas con nuestra flota. Sobre todo, se asombró al oírme hablar de un ejército mercenario permanente en medio de la paz y entre un pueblo libre. Decía que si nos gobernaban por nuestro propio consentimiento las personas que tenían nuestra representación no podía alcanzársele de quién teníamos temor ni contra quién teníamos que pelear, y me consultaba si la casa de un hombre particular no está mejor defendida por él, sus hijos y su familia que por media docena de bribones cogidos a la ventura en medio de la calle, escasamente pagados y que no tendrían inconveniente en degollar a todos si les ofrecían por ello cien veces su soldada.
He laughed at my "odd kind of arithmetic," as he was pleased to call it, "in reckoning the numbers of our people, by a computation drawn from the several sects among us, in religion and politics." He said, "he knew no reason why those, who entertain opinions prejudicial to the public, should be obliged to change, or should not be obliged to conceal them. And as it was tyranny in any government to require the first, so it was weakness not to enforce the second: for a man may be allowed to keep poisons in his closet, but not to vend them about for cordials."

He observed, "that among the diversions of our nobility and gentry, I had mentioned gaming: he desired to know at what age this entertainment was usually taken up, and when it was laid down; how much of their time it employed; whether it ever went so high as to affect their fortunes; whether mean, vicious people, by their dexterity in that art, might not arrive at great riches, and sometimes keep our very nobles in dependence, as well as habituate them to vile companions, wholly take them from the improvement of their minds, and force them, by the losses they received, to learn and practise that infamous dexterity upon others?"

He was perfectly astonished with the historical account gave him of our affairs during the last century: protesting "it was only a heap of conspiracies, rebellions, murders, massacres, revolutions, banishments, the very worst effects that avarice, faction, hypocrisy, perfidiousness, cruelty, rage, madness, hatred, envy, lust, malice, and ambition, could produce."

His majesty, in another audience, was at the pains to recapitulate the sum of all I had spoken; compared the questions he made with the answers I had given; then taking me into his hands, and stroking me gently, delivered himself in these words, which I shall never forget, nor the manner he spoke them in: "My little friend Grildrig, you have made a most admirable panegyric upon your country; you have clearly proved, that ignorance, idleness, and vice, are the proper ingredients for..."

Se rió de mi extraña especie de aritmética —como se dignó llamarla—, que computaba nuestro número de habitantes, haciendo un cálculo sobre las varias sectas de religión y política que existen entre nosotros. Dijo que no conocía razón alguna para que a aquéllos que mantienen opiniones perjudiciales al interés público se les oblige a cambiar ni para que se les obligue a ocultarlas. Y así como en un Gobierno fuera tiranía pedir lo primero, es debilidad no exigir lo segundo; que un hombre puede guardar venenos en su casa, mas no venderlos por cordiales.

Observó que entre las divisiones de nuestros nobles y gentes principales había yo mencionado la caza. Qui- so saber a qué edad comenzaban por regla general este entretenimiento y cuándo lo abandonaban; cuánto tiempo dedicaban a ello; si alguna vez iban tan lejos que afectase las fortunas; si gentes indignas y viciosas no podrían por su destreza en este arte llegar a hacer grandes capitales, y aun en ocasiones a colocar a los nobles mismos en un plano de dependencia, así como a habituarles a compañías indignas, apartarlos completamente del cultivo de su inteligencia y forzarlos con la pérdida sufrida a ejercitar y practicar esa habilidad infame por encima de todas las otras.

Se asombró grandemente cuando le hice la reseña histórica de nuestros asun- tos durante el último siglo, e hizo pro- testas de que aquello era sólo un montón de conjuras, rebeliones, asesinatos, ma- tanzas, revoluciones y destierros, justamente los efectos peores que pueden producir la avaricia, la parcialidad, la hipo- cresía, la perfidia, la crueldad, la ira, la locura, el odio, la envidia, la concupiscencia, la malicia y la ambición.

En otra audiencia recapituló Su Ma- jestad con gran trabajo todo lo que yo le había referido; comparó las preguntas que me hiciera con las respuestas que yo le había dado, y luego, tomando en sus manos y acariciándome con suavidad, dio curso a las siguien- tes palabras, que no olvidaré nunca, como tampoco el modo en que las pro- nunció: «Mi pequeño amigo Grildrig: habéis hecho de nuestro país el más ad- mirable panegírico. Habéis probado claramente que la ignorancia, la pere- za y el odio son los ingredientes apro-
qualifying a legislator; that laws are best explained, interpreted, and applied, by those whose interest and abilities lie in perverting, confounding, and eluding them. I observe among you some lines of an institution, which, in its original, might have been tolerable, but these half erased, and the rest wholly blurred and blotted by corruptions. It does not appear, from all you have said, how any one perfection is required toward the procurement of any one station among you; much less, that men are ennobled on account of their virtue; that priests are advanced for their piety or learning; soldiers, for their conduct or valour; judges, for their integrity; senators, for the love of their country; or counsellors for their wisdom. As for yourself, continued the king, who have spent the greatest part of your life in travelling, I am well disposed to hope you may hitherto have escaped many vices of your country. But by what I have gathered from your own relation, and the answers I have with much pains wrung and extorted from you, I cannot but conclude the bulk of your natives to be the most pernicious race of little odious vermin that nature ever suffered to crawl upon the surface of the earth."

CHAPTER VII.

[The author’s love of his country. He makes a proposal of much advantage to the king, which is rejected. The king’s great ignorance in politics. The learning of that country very imperfect and confined. The laws, and military affairs, and parties in the state.]

Nothing but an extreme love of truth could have hindered me from concealing this part of my story. It was in vain to discover my resentments, which were always turned into ridicule; and I was forced to rest with patience, while my noble and beloved country was so injuriously treated. I am as heartily sorry as any of my readers can possibly be, that such an occasion was given: but piados para formar un legislador; que quienes mejor explican, interpretan y aplican las leyes son aquellos cuyos intereses y habilidades residen en pervertirlas, confundirlas y eludirlas. Descubro entre vosotros algunos contornos de una institución que en su origen pudo haber sido tolerable; pero están casi borrados, y el resto, por completo manchado y tachado por corrupciones. De nada de lo que habéis dicho resulta que entre vosotros sea precisa perfección ninguna para aspirar a posición ninguna; ni mucho que los hombres sean ennoblecidos en atención a sus virtudes, ni que los sacerdotes asciendan por su piedad y sus estudios, ni los soldados por su comportamiento y su valor, ni los jueces por su integridad, ni los senadores por el amor a su patria, ni los consejeros por su sabiduría. En cuanto a vos —continuó el rey—, que habéis dedicado la mayor parte de vuestra vida a viajar, quiero creer que hasta el presente os hayáis librado de muchos de los vicios de vuestro país. Pero por lo que he podido colegir de vuestro relato y de las respuestas que con gran esfuerzo os he arrancado y sacado, no puedo por menos de deducir que el conjunto de vuestros semejantes es la raza de odiosos bichillos más perniciosa que la Naturaleza haya nunca permitido que se arrastre por la superficie de la tierra.]

CHAPTER VII

El cariño del autor a su país. —Hace al rey una proposición muy ventajosa, que es rechazada. —La gran ignorancia del rey en política. —Imperfección y limitación de la cultura en aquel país. —Leyes, asuntos militares y partidos en aquel país. Sólo un amor extremado a la verdad ha podido disuadirme de ocultar esta parte de mi historia. Era en vano que descubriese mis resentimientos, de los cuales se hacía burla siempre; así, tuve que sufrir con paciencia que mi noble y amantísimo país fuese tan injuriosamente tratado. Estoy tan profundamente apenado como pueda estarlo cualquiera de mis lectores de que tal
this prince happened to be so curious and inquisitive upon every particular, that it could not consist either with gratitude or good manners, to refuse giving him what satisfaction I was able. Yet thus much I may be allowed to say in my own vindication, that I artfully eluded many of his questions, and gave to every point a more favourable turn, by many degrees, than the strictness of truth would allow. For I have always borne that laudable partiality to my own country, which Dionysius Halicarnassensis, with so much justice, recommends to an historian: I would hide the frailties and deformities of my political mother, and place her virtues and beauties in the most advantageous light. This was my sincere endeavour in those many discourses I had with that monarch, although it unfortunately failed of success.

But great allowances should be given to a king, who lives wholly secluded from the rest of the world, and must therefore be altogether unacquainted with the manners and customs that most prevail in other nations: the want of which knowledge will ever produce many prejudices, and a certain narrowness of thinking, from which we, and the politer countries of Europe, are wholly exempted. And it would be hard indeed, if so remote a prince’s notions of virtue and vice were to be offered as a standard for all mankind.

To confirm what I have now said, and further to show the miserable effects of a confined education, I shall here insert a passage, which will hardly obtain belief. In hopes to ingratiate myself further into his majesty’s favour, I told him of “an invention, discovered between three and four hundred years ago, to make a certain powder, into a heap of which, the smallest spark of fire falling, would kindle the whole in a moment, although it were as big as a mountain, and make it all fly up in the air together, with a noise and agitation greater than thunder. That a proper quantity of this powder rammed into a hollow tube of brass or iron, according to its bigness, would drive a ball of iron or lead, with such violence and speed, as nothing was able to sustain its force. That the largest balls thus occasion se presentase; pero este princi- pe se mostró tan curioso y preguntón sobre cada punto, que no se hubiese compadecido con la gratitud ni con las bue- nas formas el que yo le negara cualquier explicación que pudiera darle. Aun sien- do así, debe permitiérsene que diga en mi defensa que eludi hábilmente muchas de las preguntas y di a cada extremo un giro mas favorable, con mucho, de lo que permitiría la estricta verdad, pues siempre he tenido para mi país esta lau- dable parcialidad que Dionysius Halicarnassensis recomendaba con tanta justicia al historiador. Oculté las fla- quezcas y deformidades de mi madre patria y coloqué sus virtudes y belleza a la luz más conveniente y ventajosa. Éste fue mi verdadero conato en cuantas con- versaciones mantuve con aquel poderoso- so monarca, aunque, por desdicha, tuvo mal éxito.

Pero también ha de tenerse toda clase de excusas para un rey que vive por com- pleto apartado del resto del mundo, y, por consiguiente, tiene que estar en absoluto ignorante de las maneras y las costumbres que deben prevalecer en otras naciones; fal- ta de conocimiento que siempre determi- nará numerosos prejuicios, y una cierta es- trechez de pensamiento, de que nosotros y los más civilizados países de Europa esta- mos enteramente libres. Y, sin duda, sería contrario a la razón que se quisieran pre- sentar las nociones de virtud y vicio de un príncipe tan lejano como modelo para toda la Humanidad.
discharged, would not only destroy whole ranks of an army at once, but batter the strongest walls to the ground, sink down ships, with a thousand men in each, to the bottom of the sea, and when linked together by a chain, would cut through masts and rigging, divide hundreds of bodies in the middle, and lay all waste before them. That we often put this powder into large hollow balls of iron, and discharged them by an engine into some city we were besieging, which would rip up the pavements, tear the houses to pieces, burst and throw splinters on every side, dashing out the brains of all who came near. That I knew the ingredients very well, which were cheap and common; I understood the manner of compounding them, and could direct his workmen how to make those tubes, of a size proportionable to all other things in his majesty’s kingdom, and the largest need not be above a hundred feet long; twenty or thirty of which tubes, charged with the proper quantity of powder and balls, would batter down the walls of the strongest town in his dominions in a few hours, or destroy the whole metropolis, if ever it should pretend to dispute his absolute commands.” This I humbly offered to his majesty, as a small tribute of acknowledgment, in turn for so many marks that I had received, of his royal favour and protection.

The king was struck with horror at the description I had given of those terrible engines, and the proposal I had made. “He was amazed, how so impotent and grovelling an insect as I” (these were his expressions) “could entertain such inhuman ideas, and in so familiar a manner, as to appear wholly unmoved at all the scenes of blood and desolation which I had painted as the common effects of those destructive machines; whereof,” he said, “some evil genius, enemy to mankind, must have been the first contriver. As for himself, he protested, that although few things delighted him so much as new discoveries in art or in nature, yet he would rather lose half his kingdom, than be privy to such a secret; which he commanded me, as I valued any life, never to mention any more.”

El rey quedó horrorizado por la descripción que yo le había hecho de aquellas terribles máquinas y por la propulsión que le sometía. Se asombró de que tan impotente y miserable insecto—son sus mismas palabras—pudiese sustentar ideas tan inhumanas y con la familiaridad suficiente para no convocarse ante las escenas de sangre y desolación que yo había pintado como los comunes efectos de aquellas máquinas destructoras, las cuales—dijo—habría sido sin duda el primero en concebir algún genio maléfico enemigo de la Humanidad. Por lo que a él mismo tocaba, aseguró que, aun cuando pocas cosas le satisfacían tanto como los nuevos descubrimientos en las artes o en la Naturaleza, mejor querría perder la mitad de su reino que no ser consabidor de este secreto, que me ordenaba, si estimaba mía vida, no volver a mencionarlo nunca.
A strange effect of narrow principles and views! that a prince possessed of every quality which procures veneration, love, and esteem; of strong parts, great wisdom, and profound learning, endowed with admirable talents, and almost adored by his subjects, should, from a nice, unnecessary scruple, whereof in Europe we can have no conception, let slip an opportunity put into his hands that would have made him absolute master of the lives, the liberties, and the fortunes of his people! Neither do I say this, with the least intention to detract from the many virtues of that excellent king, whose character, I am sensible, will, on this account, be very much lessened in the opinion of an English reader: but I take this defect among them to have risen from their ignorance, by not having hitherto reduced politics into a science, as the more acute wits of Europe have done.

For, I remember very well, in a discourse one day with the king, when I happened to say, “there were several thousand books among us written upon the art of government,” it gave him (directly contrary to my intention) a very mean opinion of our understandings. He professed both to abominate and despise all mystery, refinement, and intrigue, either in a prince or a minister. He could not tell what I meant by secrets of state, where an enemy, or some rival nation, were not in the case. He confined the knowledge of governing within very narrow bounds, to common sense and reason, to justice and lenity, to the speedy determination of civil and criminal causes; with some other obvious topics, which are not worth considering. And he gave it for his opinion, “that whoever could make two ears of corn, or two blades of grass, to grow upon a spot of ground where only one grew before, would deserve better of mankind, and do more essential service to his country, than the whole race of politicians put together.”

The learning of this people is very defective, consisting only in morality, history, poetry, and mathematics, wherein they must be allowed to excel. But the last of these is wholly applied to what may be called professional uses, and even there so servilely and ignorantly as to be attended with but few, if any, useful effects. Of the first, which is the most obvious of all, they have some rather than nothing; but it is too much corrupted by translation and paraphrase to deserve the name of learning.

Los estudios de este pueblo son muy defectuosos, pues consisten únicamente en moral, historia, poesía y matemáticas, aunque hay que reconocer que en estas materias descuelga. Pero la última se aplica tan sólo a aquello que puede ser útil.
be useful in life, to the improvement of agriculture, and all mechanical arts; so that among us, it would be little esteemed. And as to ideas, entities, abstractions, and transcendentals, I could never drive the least conception into their heads.

No law in that country must exceed in words the number of letters in their alphabet, which consists only of two and twenty. But indeed few of them extend even to that length. They are expressed in the most plain and simple terms, wherein those people are not mercurial enough to discover above one interpretation: and to write a comment upon any law, is a capital crime. As to the decision of civil causes, or proceedings against criminals, their precedents are so few, that they have little reason to boast of any extraordinary skill in either.

They have had the art of printing, as well as the Chinese, time out of mind: but their libraries are not very large; for that of the king, which is reckoned the largest, does not amount to above a thousand volumes, placed in a gallery of twelve hundred feet long, whence I had liberty to borrow what books I pleased. The queen’s joiner had contrived in one of Glumdalclitch’s rooms, a kind of wooden machine five-and-twenty feet high, formed like a standing ladder; the steps were each fifty feet long. It was indeed a moveable pair of stairs, the lowest end placed at ten feet distance from the wall of the chamber. The book I had a mind to read, was put up leaning against the wall: I first mounted to the upper step of the ladder, and turning my face towards the book began at the top of the page, and so walking to the right and left about eight or ten paces, according to the length of the lines, till I had gotten a little below the level of mine eyes, and then descending gradually till I came to the bottom; after which I mounted again, and began the other page in the same manner, and so turned over the leaf, which I could easily do with both my hands, for it was as thick and stiff as a pasteboard, and in the largest folios not above eighteen or twenty feet long.
Their style is clear, masculine, and smooth, but not florid; for they avoid nothing more than multiplying unnecessary words, or using various expressions. I have perused many of their books, especially those in history and morality. Among the rest, I was much diverted with a little old treatise, which always lay in Glumdalclitch’s bed chamber, and belonged to her governess, a grave elderly gentlewoman, who dealt in writings of morality and devotion. The book treats of the weakness of human kind, and is in little esteem, except among the women and the vulgar. However, I was curious to see what an author of that country could say upon such a subject. This writer went through all the usual topics of European moralists, showing “how diminutive, contemptible, and helpless an animal was man in his own nature; how unable to defend himself from inclemencies of the air, or the fury of wild beasts: how much he was excelled by one creature in strength, by another in speed, by a third in foresight, by a fourth in industry.” He added, “that nature was degenerated in these latter declining ages of the world, and could now produce only small abortive births, in comparison of those in ancient times.” He said “it was very reasonable to think, not only that the species of men were originally much larger, but also that there must have been giants in former ages; which, as it is asserted by history and tradition, so it has been confirmed by huge bones and skulls, casually dug up in several parts of the kingdom, far exceeding the common dwindled race of men in our days.” He argued, “that the very laws of nature absolutely required we should have been made, in the beginning of a size more large and robust; not so liable to destruction from every little accident, of a tile falling from a house, or a stone cast from the hand of a boy, or being drowned in a little brook.” From this way of reasoning, the author drew several moral applications, useful in the conduct of life, but needless here to repeat. For my own part, I could not avoid reflecting how universally this talent was spread, of drawing lectures in morality, or indeed rather matter of discontent and repining, not avoid reflecting how universally this talent was spread, of drawing lectures in morality, or indeed rather
from the quarrels we raise with nature. And I believe, upon a strict inquiry, those quarrels might be shown as ill-grounded among us as they are among that people.

As to their military affairs, they boast that the king’s army consists of a hundred and seventy-six thousand foot, and thirty-two thousand horse: if that may be called an army, which is made up of tradesmen in the several cities, and farmers in the country, whose commanders are only the nobility and gentry, without pay or reward. They are indeed perfect enough in their exercises, and under very good discipline, wherein I saw no great merit; for how should it be otherwise, where every farmer is under the command of his own landlord, and every citizen under that of the principal men in his own city, chosen after the manner of Venice, by ballot?

I have often seen the militia of Lorbrulgrud drawn out to exercise, in a great field near the city of twenty miles square. They were in all not above twenty-five thousand foot, and six thousand horse; but it was impossible for me to compute their number, considering the space of ground they took up. A cavalier, mounted on a large steed, might be about ninety feet high. I have seen this whole body of horse, upon a word of command, draw their swords at once, and brandish them in the air.

Imagination can figure nothing so grand, so surprising, and so astonishing! it looked as if ten thousand flashes of lightning were darting at the same time from every quarter of the sky.

I was curious to know how this prince, to whose dominions there is no access from any other country, came to think of armies, or to teach his people the practice of military discipline. But I was soon informed, both by conversation and reading their histories; for, in the course of many ages, they have been troubled with the same disease to which the whole race of mankind is subject; the nobility often contending for power, the people for liberty, and the king for absolute dominion. All which, however happily

En cuanto a cuestiones militares, se hace gala allí de que el ejército del rey consiste en ciento setenta y seis mil infantos y treinta y dos mil caballos, si es que puede llamarse ejército el formado por comerciantes en varias ciudades y por agricultores en los campos, bajo el único mando de la nobleza y de las gentes principales, que no reciben paga ni recompensa ninguna. Cierto que alcanzan bastante perfección en el ejército y observan muy buena disciplina. Pero yo no veo en ello gran mérito; porque ¿cómo podría ser de otro modo en un sitio donde cada campesino está bajo el mando del propio señor de las tierras y cada ciudadano bajo el de un hombre principal de su misma edad elegido por votación, a la manera de Venecia?

He visto muchas veces a la milicia de Lorbrulgrud salir a ejercitarse en un gran campo próximo a la ciudad, de unas veinte millas en cuadrado. No eran en conjunto más de veinticinco mil infantes y seis mil caballos; pero a mi me era imposible calcular el número a causa del mucho terreno que ocupaban. Un jinete montado en un caballo de buena alzada levantaba del suelo unos noventa pies. Yo he visto a todo aquel cuerpo de caballería sacar a la voz de mando las espadas y blandirlas.

La imaginación no puede concebir nada tan grande, tan sorprendente, tan asombroso. Parecía como si diez mil llamadas de relámpagos fuesen lanzados a la vez de todo el ámbito de los cielos.

Tuve curiosidad de saber cómo este príncipe, a cuyos dominios no puede llegarse desde ningún otro país, había podido pensar en ejércitos ni instruir a su pueblo en la práctica de la disciplina militar. Pero pronto quedé informado, tanto por conversaciones que sostuve como por las historias que lei; pues supe que por espacio de largas épocas aquel pueblo había sufrido la enfermedad a que está sujeta toda la especie humana: la lucha frecuente de la nobleza por el poder, del pueblo por la libertad y del rey por el dominio absoluto. Todo lo cual,
tempered by the laws of that kingdom, have been sometimes violated by each of the three parties, and have more than once occasioned civil wars; the last whereof was happily put an end to by this prince's grand-father, in a general composition; and the militia, then settled with common consent, has been ever since kept in the strictest duty.

CHAPTER VIII.

I had always a strong impulse that I should some time recover my liberty, though it was impossible to conjecture by what means, or to form any project with the least hope of succeeding. The ship in which I sailed, was the first ever known to be driven within sight of that coast, and the king had given strict orders, that if at any time another appeared, it should be taken ashore, and with all its crew and passengers brought in a tumbril to Lorbrulgrud. He was strongly bent to get me a woman of my own size, by whom I might propagate the breed: but I think I should rather have died than undergo the disgrace of leaving a posterity to be kept in cages, like tame canary-birds, and perhaps, in time, sold about the kingdom, to persons of quality, for curiosities. I was indeed treated with much kindness: I was the favourite of a great king and queen, and the delight of the whole court; but it was upon such a foot as ill became the dignity of humankind. I could never forget those domestic pledges I had left behind me. I wanted to be among people, with whom I could converse upon even terms, and walk about the streets and fields without being afraid of being trod to death like a frog or a young puppy. But my deliverance came sooner than I expected, and in a

Capítulo VIII

Tenía yo siempre una firme confianza en que recobraría la libertad alguna vez, aunque me era imposible conjeturar por qué medios, ni formar proyecto ninguno que tuviese probabilidad de salir bien. El barco en que yo navegaba fue el único del que supiese que hubiera llegado a la vista de aquellas costas, y el rey había dado rigurosas órdenes para que, si algún otro apareciera, lo sacaran del agua y en un carro lo llevaran a Lorbrulgrud. Tenía él grandes deseos de procurarme una mujer de mi mismo tamaño con quien pudiera propagar la casta; pero yo creo que hubiese consentido morir antes que sufrir la desventura de dejar una descendencia para ser enjaulada como canarios domésticos, y quizá alguna vez vendida por todo el reino a las personas de condición, en calidad de rareza. Cierto que se me trataba con mucha amabilidad y que era el favorito de unos poderosos reyes y el deleite de toda la corte; pero todo ello bajo un pie que resultaba en desdoro de la dignidad humana. Nunca podía olvidarme de los cariños domésticos que había dejado detrás de mí. Deseaba estar entre gentes con quienes pudiese conversar en términos llanos y pasear por las calles y los campos sin miedo a ser muerto de un pisotón, como una rana o un perrillo faldero. Pero mi liberación vino más pronto de lo que yo
manner not very common; the whole story and circumstances of which I shall faithfully relate.

I had now been two years in this country; and about the beginning of the third, Glumdalclitch and I attended the king and queen, in a progress to the south coast of the kingdom. I was carried, as usual, in my travelling-box, which as I have already described, was a very convenient closet, of twelve feet wide. And I had ordered a hammock to be fixed, by silken ropes from the four corners at the top, to break the jolts, when a servant carried me before him on horseback, as I sometimes desired; and would often sleep in my hammock, while we were upon the road. On the roof of my closet, not directly over the middle of the hammock, I ordered the joiner to cut out a hole of a foot square, to give me air in hot weather, as I slept; which hole I shut at pleasure with a board that drew backward and forward through a groove.

When we came to our journey’s end, the king thought proper to pass a few days at a palace he has near Flanflasnic, a city within eighteen English miles of the seaside. Glumdalclitch and I were much fatigued: I had gotten a small cold, but the poor girl was so ill as to be confined to her chamber. I longed to see the ocean, which must be the only scene of my escape, if ever it should happen. I pretended to be worse than I really was, and desired leave to take the fresh air of the sea, with a page, whom I was very fond of, and who had sometimes been trusted with me. I shall never forget with what unwillingness Glumdalclitch consented, nor the strict charge she gave the page to be careful of me, bursting at the same time into a flood of tears, as if she had some forboding of what was to happen. The boy took me out in my box, about half an hours walk from the palace, towards the rocks on the seashore. I ordered him to set me down, and lifting up one of my sashes, cast many a wistful melancholy look towards the sea. I found myself not very well, and told the page that I had a mind to take a nap in my hammock, which I hoped would do me esperaba y por caminos nada comunes. Relataré fielmente la completa historia y las circunstancias de ella.

Llevaba ya dos años en aquel país, y hacia el principio del tercero, Glumdalclitch y yo acompañábamos al rey y a la reina en un viaje a la costa Sur del reino. A mí me llevaban, según costumbre, en mi caja de viaje, que, como ya he referido, era un muy cómodo gabinete de doce pies de anchura. Yo había mandado que me colgaran una hamaca con cuerdas de seda sujetas a los cuatro ángulos superiores a fin de amortiguar los vaivenes cuando un criado me llevaba delante de él en el caballo, como muchas veces solicité, y con frecuencia dormía en ella cuando estábamos en camino. En el techo de mi gabinete, justamente sobre el centro de la hamaca, abrió el carpintero por encargo mío un agujerito de un pie cuadrado para que me entrara aire en tiempo caluroso mientras dormía, agujero que yo cerraba y abría a voluntad con un tablero que se deslizaba por una muesca.

Cuando llegamos al término de nuestro viaje, el rey encontró de su gusto pasar unos días en un palacio que tenía cerca de Flanfasnic, ciudad enclavada a unas dieciocho millas inglesas del mar. Glumdalclitch y yo estábamos muy fatigados. Yo me había enfriado un poco, y en cuanto a la pobre niña, estaba tan delicada, que no salía de su habitación. Yo ansiaba ver el océano, que había de ser el único escenario de mi escapatoria, si era que alguna vez llegaba. Fingía yo estar más enfermo de lo que estaba realmente y pedí licencia para tomar el aire fresco del mar con un paj a quien yo apreciaba mucho y a quien algunas veces me habían confiado. Nunca olvidaré con qué mala gana consintió Glumdalclitch, ni el severo encargo que hizo al paj a que tuviese cuidado conmigo, al mismo tiempo que se deshacía en lágrimas, como si tuviese algún presentimiento de lo que había de ocurrir. El joven me llevó en mi caja durante una media hora de camino desde el palacio hacia las rocas de la costa. Le ordené que me pusiera en el suelo, y levantando una de las vidrieras miré melancólica y atentamente hacia el mar. No me contraba bueno del todo y dije al paj a que iba a echar en la hamaca una
good.  I got in, and the boy shut the window close down, to keep out the cold.  I soon fell asleep, and all I can conjecture is, while I slept, the page, thinking no danger could happen, went among the rocks to look for birds’ eggs, having before observed him from my window searching about, and picking up one or two in the clefts.  Be that as it will, I found myself suddenly awaked with a violent pull upon the ring, which was fastened at the top of my box for the conveniency of carriage.  I felt my box raised very high in the air, and then borne forward with prodigious speed.  The first jolt had like to have shaken me out of my hammock, but afterward the motion was easy enough.  I called out several times, as loud as I could raise my voice, but all to no purpose.  I looked towards my windows, and could see nothing but the clouds and sky.  I heard a noise just over my head, like the clapping of wings, and then began to perceive the woful condition I was in; that some eagle had got the ring of my box in his beak, with an intent to let it fall on a rock, like a tortoise in a shell, and then pick out my body, and devour it:  for the sagacity and smell of this bird enables him to discover his quarry at a great distance, though better concealed than I could be within a two-inch board.

In a little time, I observed the noise and flutter of wings to increase very fast, and my box was tossed up and down, like a sign in a windy day.  I heard several bangs or buffets, as I thought given to the eagle (for such I am certain it must have been that held the ring of my box in his beak), and then, all on a sudden, felt myself falling perpendicularly down, for above a minute, but with such incredible swiftness, that I almost lost my breath.  My fall was stopped by a terrible squash, that sounded louder to my ears than the cataract of Niagara; after which, I now perceived I was fallen into the sea.  My box, by the weight of my body, the goods that were in, and the broad plates of iron fixed for strength at the four corners of the top and bottom, floated about five feet deep in water.  I did then, and do now suppose, that the siesta, que esperaba que me hiciese bien. Entré y el muchacho cerró la ventana para preservarme del frío. Me dormí pronto, y todo lo que puedo deducir es que mientras yo dormía, el paje, pensando que nada podría ocurrirme, iría a buscar entre las rocas huevos de pájaros, pues antes le había visto desde la ventana coger uno o dos de las hendeduras. Sea lo que fuere, me despertó de pronto un violento tirón del anillo que tenía la caja en la parte superior para facilitar el transporte. Sentí mi caja levantada por los aires a gran altura y luego llevada hacia adelante con velocidad prodigiosa. La primera sacudida casi me lanzó de la hamaca; pero luego el movimien-to se hizo bastante suave. Grité varias veces tan alto como pude, pero no me sirvió de nada. Miré hacia las ventanas y no vi sino nubes y cielo. Oía sobre mi cabeza un ruido como de batir de alas, y entonces empezó a darme cuenta de la espantosa situación en que me veía: alguna águila había cogido sin duda en el pico mi caja por la anilla con la intención de dejarla caer sobre una peña, como una tortuga dentro de su concha, y sacar luego mi cuerpo y devorarlo. Sabido es que la sagacidad y el olfato de esta ave le permiten descubrir su presa a gran distancia y aunque esté más escondida que pudiera yo estar bajo una tabla de dos pulgadas.

A poco advertí que el ruido y el aleteo aumentaban rápidamente, al tiempo que mi caja era agitada de arriba abajo como poste de señales en un día de viento. Oí como si diessen de puñadas al águila —pues estoy cierto de que tal debía de ser la que llevaba mi caja en el pico cogida por la anilla—, y de pronto me sentí caer perpendicu-larmente por espacio de un minuto y con tan increíble celeridad, que casi me faltó el aliento. Mi caída terminó en un choque terrible contra un cuerpo blando, que sonó en mis oídos más fuerte que las cataratas del Niágara; después quedé durante otro mi-nuto en obscuridad completa, y luego mi caja empezó a subir hasta una altura que me permitía ver la luz por la parte superior de las ventanas. Me di cuenta entonces de que había caído en el mar. La caja, por el peso de mi cuerpo, de los objetos que en ella había y de las anchas láminas de hierro puestas como refuerzo en las cuatro esquinas de la tapa y del fondo, flotaba...
eagle which flew away with my box was pursued by two or three others, and forced to let me drop, while he defended himself against the rest, who hoped to share in the prey. The plates of iron fastened at the bottom of the box (for those were the strongest) preserved the balance while it fell, and hindered it from being broken on the surface of the water. Every joint of it was well grooved; and the door did not move on hinges, but up and down like a sack, which kept my closet so tight that very little water came in. I got with much difficulty out of my hammock, having first ventured to draw back the slip-board on the roof already mentioned, contrived on purpose to let in air, for want of which I found myself almost stifled.

How often did I then wish myself with my dear Glumdalclitch, from whom one single hour had so far divided me! And I may say with truth, that in the midst of my own misfortunes I could not forbear (abstain) lamenting my poor nurse, the grief she would suffer for my loss, the displeasure of the queen, and the ruin of her fortune. Perhaps many travellers have not been under greater difficulties and distress than I was at this juncture, expecting every moment to see my box dashed to pieces, or at least overset by the first violent blast, or rising wave. A breach in one single pane of glass would have been immediate death: nor could any thing have preserved the windows, but the strong lattice wires placed on the outside, against attacks in travelling. I saw the water ooze in at several crannies, although the leaks were not considerable, and I endeavoured to stop them as well as I could. I was not able to lift up the roof of my closet, which otherwise I certainly should have done, and sat on the top of it; where I might at least preserve myself some hours longer, than by being shut up (as I may call it) in the hold. Or if I escaped these dangers for a day or two, what could I expect but a miserable death of cold and hunger? I was four hours under these circumstances, expecting, and indeed wishing, every moment to be my last.

I have already told the reader that there were two strong staples fixed upon the queen, and the ruin of her fortune. Probable-
that side of my box which had no window, and into which the servant, who used to carry me on horseback, would put a leathern belt, and buckle it about his waist. Being in this disconsolate state, I heard, or at least thought I heard, some kind of grating noise on that side of my box where the staples were fixed; and soon after I began to fancy that the box was pulled or towed along the sea; for I now and then felt a sort of tugging, which made the waves rise near the tops of my windows, leaving me almost in the dark. This gave me some faint hopes of relief, although I was not able to imagine how it could be brought about. I ventured to unscrew one of my chairs, which were always fastened to the floor; and having made a hard shift to screw it down again, directly under the slipping-board that I had lately opened, I mounted on the chair, and putting my mouth as near as I could to the hole, I called for help in a loud voice, and in all the languages I understood. I then fastened my handkerchief to a stick I usually carried, and thrusting it up the hole, waved it several times in the air, that if any boat or ship were near, the seamen might conjecture some unhappy mortal to be shut up in the box.

I found no effect from all I could do, but plainly perceived my closet to be moved along; and in the space of an hour, or better, that side of the box where the staples were, and had no windows, struck against something that was hard. I apprehended it to be a rock, and found myself tossed more than ever. I plainly heard a noise upon the cover of my closet, like that of a cable, and the grating of it as it passed through the ring. I then found myself hoisted up, by degrees, at least three feet higher than I was before. Whereupon I again thrust up my stick and handkerchief, calling for help till I was almost hoarse. In return to which, I heard a great shout repeated three times, giving me such transports of joy as are not to be conceived but by those who feel them. I now heard a trampling over my head, and somebody calling through the hole with a loud voice, in the English tongue, "If there be any body below, let them speak." I answered, "I was an Englishman, drawn by ill fortune into the greatest calamity that ever any creature underwent, and begged, by all that was moving, to be

dos fuertes colgaderos, por los cuales el criado que me llevaba a caballo pasaba su cinto de correa que se ceñía luego al cuerpo. Cuando estaba en aquella desconsoladora situación o, al menos me pareció oír, en el lado de la caja donde estaban los colgaderos, una especie de ruido como si rasparan; poco después experimenté la sensación de que empujaran o remolearan la caja mar adentro, pues de vez en cuando sentía como un tirón que levantaba las olas cerca del filo de las ventanas, dejándose casi en la obscuridad. Esto me dio alguna débil esperanza de socorro, aunque no podía imaginar por dónde había de llegarme. Me decidí a destornillar una de mis sillas, que iban sujetas al suelo; y habiendo logrado con gran esfuerzo atornillarla nuevamente debajo de la corredera que antes había abierto, me subí en la silla, y, con la boca lo más cerca que pude de la abertura, pedí socorro a grandes voces y en todos los idiomas que conocía. Luego até el pañuelo a un bastón que de ordinario llevaba, y pasándolo por el agujero, lo ondeé repetidamente, a fin de que si algún bote o barco estuviera cerca pudiesen deducir los marineros que dentro de aquella caja estaba encerrado un infeliz mortal.

No saqué provecho ninguno de nada de lo que hice. Pero yo advertía claramente que empujaban mi gabinete; y al cabo de una hora, o más, el lado de la caja donde estaban los colgaderos y no había ventana chocó contra alguna cosa dura. Calculé que fuese una roca y me vi más sacudido y agitado que me había visto hasta entonces. Oí claramente un ruido en la tapa de mi gabinete, como el que hiciese un cable, y el roce de él al pasar por la anilla. Luego me sentí levantado poco a poco, al menos tres pies de donde estaba. A esto saqué nuevamente el pañuelo y el bastón, pidiendo auxilio hasta casi quedarme ronco, y en respuesta oí un fuerte grito, repetido por tres veces, que me produjo transportes de alegría que sólo podría concebir quien los hubiese experimentado iguales. Oí entonces pasos por encima de mi cabeza y que alguien en voz alta y en lengua inglesa decía por el agujero que si había alguna persona abajo, hablase. Respondí que yo era un inglés arrojado por la mala suerte a la mayor calamidad que nunca sufriera humana criatura y rogué en los términos más lastimeros.
delivered out of the dungeon I was in.”
The voice replied, “I was safe, for my box was fastened to their ship; and the carpenter should immediately come and saw a hole in the cover, large enough to pull me out.” I answered, “that was needless, and would take up too much time; for there was no more to be done, but let one of the crew put his finger into the ring, and take the box out of the sea into the ship, and so into the captain’s cabin.” Some of them, upon hearing me talk so wildly, thought I was mad: others laughed; for indeed it never came into my head, that I was now got among people of my own stature and strength. The carpenter came, and in a few minutes sawed a passage about four feet square, then let down a small ladder, upon which I mounted, and thence was taken into the ship in a very weak condition.

The sailors were all in amazement, and asked me a thousand questions, which I had no inclination to answer. I was equally confounded at the sight of so many pigmies, for such I took them to be, after having so long accustomed mine eyes to the monstrous objects I had left. But the captain, Mr. Thomas Wilcocks, an honest worthy Shropshire man, observing I was ready to faint, took me into his cabin, gave me a cordial to comfort me, and made me turn in upon his own bed, advising me to take a little rest, of which I had great need. Before I went to sleep, I gave him to understand that I had some valuable furniture in my box, too good to be lost: a fine hammock, a handsome field-bed, two chairs, a table, and a cabinet; that my closet was hung on all sides, or rather quilted, with silk and cotton; that if he would let one of the crew bring my closet into his cabin, I would open it there before him, and show him my goods. The captain, hearing me utter these absurdities, concluded I was raving; however (I suppose to pacify me) he promised to give order as I desired, and going upon deck, sent some of his men down into my closet, whence (as I afterwards found) they drew up all my goods, and stripped off the quilting; but the chairs, cabinet, and bedstead, being screwed to the floor, were much damaged by the ignorance of the seamen, who tore them up by force. Then they knocked off some of the que me sacasen del calabozo en que estaba. Replicó la voz que estaba a salvo, porque mi caja estaba sujeta al barco suyo, y que inmediatamente llegaría el carpintero y abriría un agujero en la cubierta lo bastante grande para poder sacarme. Contesté que era innecesario y llevaría demasiado tiempo, y que no había que hacer más sino que uno de la tripulación metiera el dedo por la anilla y llevase la caja del mar al barco y luego al camarote del capitán. Algunos, oyéndome hablar tan disparatadamente, pensaron que estaba loco; otros se echaron a reír; pues era el caso que no me daba yo cuenta de que estaba ya entre gentes de mi misma fuerza y estatura. Llegó el carpintero y en pocos minutos abrió con la sierra una abertura de unos cuatro pies, por la que salí, y de allí me llevaron al barco en estado de debilidad extrema.

The sailors were all in amazement, and asked me a thousand questions, which I had no inclination to answer. I was equally confounded at the sight of so many pigmies, for such I took them to be, after having so long accustomed mine eyes to the monstrous objects I had left. But the captain, Mr. Thomas Wilcocks, an honest worthy Shropshire man, observing I was ready to faint, took me into his cabin, gave me a cordial to comfort me, and made me turn in upon his own bed, advising me to take a little rest, of which I had great need. Before I went to sleep, I gave him to understand that I had some valuable furniture in my box, too good to be lost: a fine hammock, a handsome field-bed, two chairs, a table, and a cabinet; that my closet was hung on all sides, or rather quilted, with silk and cotton; that if he would let one of the crew bring my closet into his cabin, I would open it there before him, and show him my goods. The captain, hearing me utter these absurdities, concluded I was raving; however (I suppose to pacify me) he promised to give order as I desired, and going upon deck, sent some of his men down into my closet, whence (as I afterwards found) they drew up all my goods, and stripped off the quilting; but the chairs, cabinet, and bedstead, being screwed to the floor, were much damaged by the ignorance of the seamen, who tore them up by force. Then they knocked off some of the
boards for the use of the ship, and when they had got all they had a mind for, let the hull drop into the sea, which by reason of many breaches made in the bottom and sides, sunk to rights. And, indeed, I was glad not to have been a spectator of the havoc they made, because I am confident it would have sensibly touched me, by bringing former passages into my mind, which I would rather have forgot.

I slept some hours, but perpetually disturbed with dreams of the place I had left, and the dangers I had escaped. However, upon waking, I found myself much recovered. It was now about eight o’clock at night, and the captain ordered supper immediately, thinking I had already fasted too long. He entertained me with great kindness, observing me not to look wildly, or talk inconsistently: and, when we were left alone, desired I would give him a relation of my travels, and by what accident I came to be set adrift, in that monstrous wooden chest. He said “that about twelve o’clock at noon, as he was looking through his glass, he spied [made out] it at a distance, and thought it was a sail, which he had a mind to make, being not much out of his course, in hopes of buying some biscuit, his own beginning to fall short. That upon coming nearer, and finding his error, he sent out his long-boat to discover what it was; that his men came back in a fright, swearing they had seen a swimming house. That he laughed at their folly, and went himself in the boat, ordering his men to take a strong cable along with them. That the weather being calm, he rowed round me several times, observed my windows and wire lattices that defended them. That he discovered two staples upon one side, which was all of boards, without any passage for light. He then commanded his men to row up to that side, and fastening a cable to one of the staples, ordered them to tow my chest, as they called it, toward the ship. When it was there, he gave directions to fasten another cable to the ring fixed in the cover, and to raise up my chest with pulleys, which all the sailors were not able to do above two or three feet.” He said, “they saw my stick and handkerchief for emplearlas en el barco, y cuando hubieron cogido todo lo que les vino en gana, tiraron al mar el armatoste, que a causa de las numerosas brechas que le habían abierto en el fondo y en los costados, se hundió rápidamente. Y por cierto que tuve a ventura no haber sido espectador del estrago que hicieron, pues tengo la seguridad de que me hubiera impresionado profundamente recordándome episodios que prefería olvidar.

Dormí algunas horas, aunque intransquilizado continuamente con sueños que me devolvían al país de donde acababa de salir y me representaban los riesgos de que había escapado. Sin embargo, al despertar me sentí muy aliviado. Eran sobre las ocho de la noche y el capitán mandó disponer la cena inmediatamente suponiendo que yo llevaría demasiado tiempo en ayunas. Me habló con gran cortesía y observó que yo no tenía aspecto extraviado ni hablaba sin fundamento, y cuando quedamos solos me pidió que le hiciese relación de mi viaje y del accidente en virtud del cual me había visto flotando a la ventura en aquella extraordinaria barca de madera. Me dijo que a eso de las doce del día estaba mirando con el anteojito y la divisó a alguna distancia, y suponiendo que fuese una vela formó propósito de acercarse —ya que no estaba muy apartado de su ruta—, con la esperanza de comprar algo de galleta, que empezaba a faltarle. Al aproximarse descubrió su error, y entonces envió la lancha para que averiguase lo que era. Sus hombres volvieron asustados, jurando que habían visto una casa que nadaba; se rió de la sencillez y entró él mismo en el bote, dando a sus hombres orden de que llevaran un cable fuerte con ellos. Aprovechando el tiempo de calma que hacía, remó a mi alrededor varias veces y observó mis venas y los enredados de alambre que las protegían. Descubrió dos colgadizos en un costado, que era todo de madera, sin paso ninguno para la luz. Entonces mandó a sus hombres remar hacia aquel lado, y, atando el cable a uno de los colgadizos, les ordenó remolcar mi arca —como él decía— en dirección al barco. Cuando estuvo allí dispuso que atasen otro cable a la anilla de la tapa y que se guindase mi arca por medio de poleas, lo que entre todos los marineros no lograron en más de dos o tres pies. Añadió que había visto mi bas-

---

**tow** 1 n. to take in tow, remolcar 2 v. t. remolcar
in tow en compañía de
in tow a remolque
tow hook gancho de remolque
tow hook gancho de sirga
in tow remolque

---

132
thrust out of the hole, and concluded that some unhappy man must be shut up in the cavity.” I asked, “whether he or the crew had seen any prodigious birds in the air, about the time he first discovered me.” To which he answered, that discoursing this matter with the sailors while I was asleep, one of them said, he had observed three eagles flying towards the north, but remarked nothing of their being larger than the usual size:” which I suppose must be imputed to the great height they were at; and he could not guess the reason of my question. I then asked the captain, “how far he reckoned we might be from land?” He said, “by the best computation he could make, we were at least a hundred leagues.” I assured him, “that he must be mistaken by almost half, for I had not left the country whence I came above two hours before I dropped into the sea.” Whereupon he began again to think that my brain was disturbed, of which he gave me a hint, and advised me to go to bed in a cabin he had provided. I assured him, “I was well refreshed with his good entertainment and company, and as much in my senses as ever I was in my life.” He then grew serious, and desired to ask me freely, “whether I were not troubled in my mind by the consciousness of some enormous crime, for which I was punished, at the command of some prince, by exposing me in that chest; as great criminals, in other countries, have been forced to sea in a leaky vessel, without provisions: for although he should be sorry to have taken so ill a man into his ship, yet he would engage his word to set me safe ashore, in the first port where we arrived.” He added, “that his suspicions were much increased by some very absurd speeches I had delivered at first to his sailors, and afterwards to himself, in relation to my closet or chest, as well as by my odd looks and behaviour while I was at supper.”

I begged his patience to hear me tell my story, which I faithfully did, from the last time I left England, to the moment he first discovered me. And, as truth always forces its way into rational minds, so this honest worthy gentleman, who had some tón y mi pañuelo salir por la abertura, y juzgó que algún desventurado debía de estar encerrado en el interior. Le pregunté si él o la tripulación habían visto en los aires alguna gigantesca ave por el tiempo en que echaron de ver la caja por primera vez. A ello me contestó que hablando de este asunto con sus marineros, mientras yo dormía, dijo uno de ellos que había visto tres águilas que volaban hacia el Norte; pero no hizo observación ninguna en cuanto a que fuesen mayores del tamaño normal, lo cual supongo yo que ha de atribuirse a la gran altura a que estaban. No acertaba el capitán a comprender la razón de mi pregunta; le interrogué entonces a qué distancia de tierra calculaba que estaríamos. Me dijo que, según su cómputo más exacto, estábamos por lo menos a cien leguas. Le aseguré que debía de estar equivocado casi en una mitad, puesto que yo no había salido del país de que procedía más de dos horas antes de mi caída en el mar. Con esto él empezó a creer nuevamente que mi cabeza no estaba firme, lo cual me sugirió en cierto modo, y me aconsejó que me fuese a acostar, lo que me agradó, y se puso serio entonces y me preguntó francamente si no estaría yo perturbado por el temor interior de algún enorme crimen que fuese la causa de que, por mandato de algún príncipe, se me hubiera castigado poniéndome en aquella arca, al modo que en otros países se ha lanzado a grandes criminales al mar en un barco agujereado, sin provisiones; pues aunque sentiría haber recogido en su barco a hombre tan perverso, comprometería su palabra de dejarme salvo en tierra en el primer puerto a que llegásemos. Añadió que habían aumentado sus sospechas algunos razonamientos absurdos de todo punto que yo había hecho a los marineros primero, y luego a él mismo, en relación con mi gabinete o caja, así como mi conducta y mis miradas extrañas durante la cena.

Le supliqué que tuviese paciencia para oírme referir mi historia, lo que hice puntualmente, desde mi última salida de Inglaterra hasta el momento en que me encontré. Y como la verdad siempre se abre camino en entendimientos racionales, este honrado y digno caballero, que
tincture of learning, and very good sense, was immediately convinced of my candour and veracity. But further to confirm all I had said, I entreated him to give order that my cabinet should be brought, of which I had the key in my pocket; for he had already informed me how the seamen disposed of my closet. I opened it in his own presence, and showed him the small collection of rarities I made in the country from which I had been so strangely delivered. There was the comb I had contrived out of the stumps of the king’s beard, and another of the same materials, but fixed into a paring of her majesty’s thumb-nail, which served for the back. There was a collection of needles and pins, from a foot to half a yard long; four wasp stings, like joiner’s tacks; some combings of the queen’s hair; a gold ring, which one day she made me a present of, in a most obliging manner, taking it from her little finger, and throwing it over my head like a collar. I desired the captain would please to accept this ring in return for his civilities; which he absolutely refused. I showed him a corn that I had cut off with my own hand, from a maid of honour’s toe; it was about the bigness of Kentish pippin, and grown so hard, that when I returned England, I got it hollowed into a cup, and set in silver. Lastly, I desired him to see the breeches I then on, which were made of a mouse’s skin.

I could force nothing on him but a footman’s tooth, which I observed him to examine with great curiosity, and found he had a fancy for it. He received it with abundance of thanks, more than such a trifle could deserve. It was drawn by an unskilful surgeon, in a mistake, from one of Glumdalclitch’s men, who was afflicted with the tooth-ache, but it was as sound as any in his head. I got it cleaned, and put it into my cabinet. It was about a foot long, and four inches in diameter.

The captain was very well satisfied with this plain relation I had given him, and said, “he hoped, when we returned to England, I would oblige the world by putting it on paper, and making it public.” My answer was, tenían sus puntas de instruido y un criterio excelente quedó en seguida conven-cido de mi franqueza y veracidad. Pero para confirmar mejor cuanto le había dicho le rogué que diese orden de que llevaren mi escritorio, cuya llave tenía yo en el bolsillo —pues ya me había con-ado en qué modo habían los marinos usa-do de mi gabinete—. Lo abrí en su pre-sencia y le mostré la pequeña colección de curiosidades que yo había reunido en el país de donde tan extrañamente me había libertado. Estaba el peine que yo había hecho con cañones de la barba de Su Majestad, y otro del mismo material, pero sujeto a una cortadura de uña del pulgar de Su Majestad la reina, que me servía como batidor. Había una colección de agujas y alfileres de un pie a media yarda de longitud; cuatro aguijones de avispas como tachuelas de carpintero; algunos cabellos de los que se le desprendían a la reina cuando la peinaban; un anillo de oro que ella me regaló un día de la manera más delicada, quitándoselo del dedo pequeño y pasándomelo por la cabeza a modo de collar. Rogué al capi-tán que aceptase este anillo en correspon-dencia a sus amabilidades; pero rehusó en absoluto. Le mostré un callo que ha-bía cortado con mis propias manos del pie de una dama de honor; venía a tener el tamaño de una manzana de Kent y es-taba tan duro que a mi vuelta a Inglate-rra lo hice ahuecar en forma de copa y lo monté en plata. Por último, le invité a que mirase los calzones que llevaba puestos, y que estaban hechos con la piel de un ratón.

No consintió en quedarse más que con un diente de un lacayo, que advirtió que exa-minaba con gran curiosidad y comprendió que tenía capricho por él. Lo recibió con abundancia de palabras de agradecimiento, muchas más de las que tal chuchería pudo merecer. Se lo había sacado un ciru-jano ignorante a uno de los servidores de Glumdalclitch que padecía dolor de mue-las, pero estaba tan sano como cualquiera otro de su boca. Lo hice limpiar y lo guar-dé en mi escritorio. Tenía como un pie de largo y cuatro pulgadas de diámetro.

Quedó el capitán muy satisfecho de la sencilla relación que le hice, y me dijo que confiaba en que a mi regreso a Inglaterra haría al mundo la merced de escribirla y publicarla. Mi respuesta fue que, a mi juicio, teníamos ya demasia-
“that we were overstocked with books of travels: that nothing could now pass which was not extraordinary; wherein I doubted some authors less consulted truth, than their own vanity, or interest, or the diversion of ignorant readers; that my story could contain little beside common events, without those ornamental descriptions of strange plants, trees, birds, and other animals; or of the barbarous customs and idolatrie of savage people, with which most writers abound. However, I thanked him for his good opinion, and promised to take the matter into my thoughts.”

He said “he wondered at one thing very much, which was, to hear me speak so loud;” asking me “whether the king or queen of that country were thick of hearing?” I told him, “it was what I had been used to for above two years past, and that I admired as much at the voices of him and his men, who seemed to me only to whisper, and yet I could hear them well enough. But, when I spoke in that country, it was like a man talking in the streets, to another looking out from the top of a steeple, unless when I was placed on a table, or held in any person’s hand.” I told him, “I had likewise observed another thing, that, when I first got into the ship, and the sailors stood all about me, I thought they were the most little contemptible creatures I had ever beheld.” For indeed, while I was in that prince’s country, I could never endure to look in a glass, after mine eyes had been accustomed to such prodigious objects, because the comparison gave me so despicable a conceit of myself. The captain said, “that while we were at supper, he observed me to look at everything with a sort of wonder, and that I often seemed hardly able to contain my laughter, which he knew not well how to take, but imputed it to some disorder in my brain.” I answered, “it was very true; and I wondered how I could forbear [abstain], when I saw his dishes of the size of a silver three-pence, a leg of pork hardly a mouthful, a cup not so big as a nutshell;” and so I went on, describing the rest of his household-stuff and provisions, after the same manner. For, although he queen had ordered a little equipage of all things necessary
dos libros de viaje, y apenas sucedía nada en la época que no fuese extraordinario, de donde sospechaba yo que algunos autores consultaban más que a la verdad, a su vanidad, a su interés o a la diversion de los lectores ignorantes. Y añadi que en mi historia casi no habría otra cosa que acontecimientos vulgares, sin aquellas ornamentales descripciones de extraños árboles, plantas, pájaros y otros animales, o de las costumbres bárbaras y la idolatria de pueblos salvajes, en que abundan la mayor parte de los escritores. No obstante, le di las gracias por la buena opinión en que me tenía y le ofrecí pensar el asunto.

Una cosa dijo que le había llamado mucho la atención, y era oírme hablar tan alto, y me preguntó si el rey o la reina de aquel país eran duros de oídos. Le contesté que me había acostumbrado a ello por más de dos años, y que yo me admiraba no menos de su voz y la de sus hombres, que me parecía solamente un murmullo, aunque la oía bastante bien. Cuando yo hablaba en aquel país lo hacía en el tono que lo haría un hombre que desde la calle hablase con otro a lo alto de un campanario, a menos que me tuviesen colocado sobre una mesa o en la mano de alguna persona. Le dije que también había observado otra cosa, y era que cuando al entrar en el barco se pusieron a mi alrededor todos los marineros, me parecieron las más pequeñas e insignificantes criaturas que hubiese visto en la vida; pues a buen seguro que mientras estuve en los dominios de aquel príncipe jamás consentí mirarme a un espejo una vez que mis ojos se acostumbraron a objetos tan descomunales, porque la comparación me inspiraba un lamentable concepto de mi mismo. Me dijo el capitán que mientras cenábamos observó que yo lo miraba todo con una especie de asombro y que muchas veces apenas pude contener la risa, lo que no sabía a qué atribuir, como no fuese a algún barrunto de desequilibrio mental. Le respondí que era cierto; que me maravillaba de cómo había podido contenerme viendo sus fuentes del tamaño de una moneda de tres peniques, un pernil de puerco con que apenas había para un bocado, una taza más chica que una cáscara de nuez, y así continué describiendo el resto de su menaje y sus provisiones en parecidos términos. Pues he de advertir que aunque la reina me había encargado una pequeña recámara de todas las cosas

barruntar. 1. Prever, conjeturar o presentir por alguna señal o indicio.

barrunto 1 indicio, sospecha, noticia, inkling, suspicion, doubt, hope, desire, indication, conjecture, reason. Asomo, atisbo, augurio.
for me, while I was in her service, yet my ideas were wholly taken up with what I saw on every side of me, and I winked at my own littleness, as people do at their own faults. The captain understood my raillery very well, and merrily replied with the old English proverb, “that he doubted mine eyes were bigger than my belly, for he did not observe my stomach so good, although I had fasted all day;” and, continuing in his mirth, protested “he would have gladly given a hundred pounds, to have seen my closet in the eagle’s bill, and afterwards in its fall from so great a height into the sea; which would certainly have been a most astonishing object, worthy to have the description of it transmitted to future ages:” and the comparison of Phaeton was so obvious, that he could not forbear applying it, although I did not much admire the conceit.

The captain having been at Tonquin, was, in his return to England, driven north-eastward to the latitude of 44 degrees, and longitude of 143. But meeting a trade-wind two days after I came on board him, we sailed southward a long time, and coasting New Holland, kept our course west-south-west, and then south-south-west, till we doubled the Cape of Good Hope. Our voyage was very prosperous, but I shall not trouble the reader with a journal of it. The captain called in at one or two ports, and sent in his long-boat for provisions and fresh water; but I never went out of the ship till we came into the Downs, which was on the third day of June, 1706, about nine months after my escape. I offered to leave my goods in security for payment of my freight: but the captain protested he would not receive one farthing. We took a kind leave of each other, and I made him promise he would come to see me at my house in Redriff. I hired a horse and guide for five shillings, which I borrowed of the captain.

As I was on the road, observing the littleness of the houses, the trees, the cattle, and the people, I began to think myself in Liliput. I was afraid of trampling on every traveller I met, and often called aloud to have them stand out of the way, so that I had like to have precisas para mí cuando estuve a su servicio, se había apoderado de mis ideas completamente lo que por todas partes me rodeaba, y pasaba por alto mi propia pequeñez, como es corriente en cada uno hacer con sus defectos. El capitán comprendió perfectamente mis burlas, y alegremente contestó, empleando el antiguo proverbio inglés, que sospechaba que mis ojos eran mayores que mi barriga, pues no había notado que mi estómago estuviese con muchos ánimos, aunque había ayunado todo el día; y prosiguiendo en su tono regocijado, aseguró que hubiese de muy buena gana dado cien libras por ver mi gabinete en el pico del águila y después su caída en el mar desde tan grande altura, lo que, sin duda, hubiera sido un espectáculo de lo más maravilloso, y su descripción digna de ser transmitida a las edades venideras. El recuerdo de Faetón era tan obvio, que no pudo privarse de aplicarlo, aunque yo no admiré mucho la ingeniosidad.

El capitán, que había estado en Tonquin, fue empujado a su regreso a Inglaterra hacia el Nordeste, hasta los 44 grados de latitud y los 143 de longitud. Pero habiendo encontrado un viento general dos días después de estar yo a bordo, navegamos al Sur largo tiempo, y costeando Nueva Holanda guardamos nuestra ruta Oeste—sudoeste, y luego Sur—sudoeste hasta que doblamos el Cabo de Buena Esperanza. La travesía fue muy próspera, y no molesté al lector con un diario de ella. El capitán hizo escala en uno o dos puertos y mandó la lancha en busca de provisiones y agua dulce; pero yo no salí del barco hasta que llegamos a Las Dunas, lo que sucedió el 3 de junio de 1706, nueve meses después de mi escapatoria. Ofrecí dejar mis muebles en prenda del pago de mi viaje; pero el capitán protestó que no consentiría en tomar un céntimo. Nos despedimos amablemente y le pedí promesa de que iría a visitarme a mi casa de Recriff. Alquilé un caballo y un guía por cinco chelines que pedí prestados al capitán.

Conforme iba de camino, viendo la pequeñez de las casas, los árboles, el ganado y las personas, se me venía a las mientes mi estancia en Liliput. Tenía miedo de pisar a los caminantes que tropezaba, y muchas veces les grité que se apartasen del camino, impertinencia con
gotten one or two broken heads for my impertinence.

When I came to my own house, for which I was forced to inquire, one of the servants opening the door, I bent down to go in, (like a goose under a gate,) for fear of striking my head. My wife ran out to embrace me, but I stooped lower than her knees, thinking she could otherwise never be able to reach my mouth. My daughter kneeled to ask my blessing, but I could not see her till she arose, having been so long used to stand with my head and eyes erect to above sixty feet; and then I went to take her up with one hand by the waist. I looked down upon the servants, and one or two friends who were in the house, as if they had been pigmies and I a giant. I told my wife, “she had been too thrifty, for I found she had starved herself and her daughter to nothing.” In short, I behaved myself so unaccountably, that they were all of the captain’s opinion when he first saw me, and concluded I had lost my wits. This I mention as an instance of the great power of habit and prejudice.

In a little time, I and my family and friends came to a right understanding: but my wife protested “I should never go to sea any more;” although my evil destiny so ordered, that she had not power to hinder me, as the reader may know hereafter. In the mean time, I here conclude the second part of my unfortunate voyages.

Cuando llegué a mi casa, por la que tuve que preguntar, un criado abrió la puerta y yo me bajé para entrar, temeroso de darme en la cabeza. Mi mujer salió corriendo a besarme, pero yo me agaché hasta más abajo de sus rodillas creyendo que de otro modo no podría alcanzarme a la boca. Mi hija se puso de rodillas para que le diera mi bendición, pero yo no la vi hasta que se hubo levantado, hecho como estaba de tanto tiempo a dirigir la cabeza y los ojos para mirar a más de sesenta pies, y luego fui a levantarla cogiéndola con una mano por la cintura. Miraba de arriba abajo a los criados y a dos o tres amigos que había en casa, como si ellos fuesen pigmeos y yo un gigante. Dije a mi esposa que se había mostrado económicamente en demasía, pues apreciaba que ella y su hija estaban consumidas de hambre. En suma, me comporté de modo tan inexplicable, que todos fueron de la opinión que formó el capitán al principio de verme y dieron por cierto que había perdido el juicio. Cito esto como ejemplo de la gran fuerza de la costumbre y el prejuicio.

En poco tiempo llegué con mi familia y mis amigos a buena inteligencia; pero mi mujer protestó que nunca volvería al mar en mi vida, aunque mi destino desgraciado dispuso de modo que ella no pudo estorbarlo, como verá el lector más adelante. En tanto, doy aquí por concluida la parte segunda de mis desventurados viajes.
PART III.

A VOYAGE TO LAPUTA, BALNIBARBI, LUGGNAGG, GLUBBDUBDRIB, AND JAPAN.

CHAPTER I.

[The author sets out on his third voyage. Is taken by pirates. The malice of a Dutchman. His arrival at an island. He is received into Laputa.]

I had not been at home above ten days, when Captain William Robinson, a Cornish man, commander of the Hopewell, a stout ship of three hundred tons, came to my house. I had formerly been surgeon of another ship where he was master, and a fourth part owner, in a voyage to the Levant. He had always treated me more like a brother, than an inferior officer; and, hearing of my arrival, made me a visit, as I apprehended only out of friendship, for nothing passed more than what is usual after long absences. But repeating his visits often, expressing his joy to find me in good health, asking, “whether I were now settled for life?” adding, “that he intended a voyage to the East Indies in two months,” at last he plainly invited me, though with some apologies, to be surgeon of the ship; “that I should have another surgeon under me, beside our two mates; that my salary should be double to the usual pay; and that having experienced my knowledge in sea-affairs to be at least equal to his, he would enter into any engagement to follow my advice, as much as if I had shared in the command.”

He said so many other obliging things, and I knew him to be so honest a man, that I could not reject this proposal; the thirst I had of seeing the world, notwithstanding my past misfortunes, continuing as violent as ever. The only difficulty that remained, was to persuade my wife, whose consent however I at last obtained, by the prospect of advantage she proposed to her children.

We set out the 5th day of August, 1706, and arrived at Fort St. George the 11th of April, 1707. We staid there three weeks to refresh our crew, many of
whom were sick. From thence we went to Tonquin, where the captain resolved to continue some time, because many of the goods he intended to buy were not ready, nor could he expect to be dispatched in several months. Therefore, in hopes to defray some of the charges he must be at, he bought a sloop, loaded it with several sorts of goods, wherewith the Tonquineuse usually trade to the neighbouring islands, and putting fourteen men on board, whereof three were of the country, he appointed me master of the sloop, and gave me power to traffic, while he transacted his affairs at Tonquin.

We had not sailed above three days, when a great storm arising, we were driven five days to the north-north-east, and then to the east: after which we had fair weather, but still with a pretty strong gale from the west. Upon the tenth day we were chased by two pirates, who soon overtook us; for my sloop was so deep laden, that she sailed very slow, neither were we in a condition to defend ourselves.

We were boarded about the same time by both the pirates, who entered furiously at the head of their men; but finding us all prostrate upon our faces (for so I gave order), they pinioned us with strong ropes, and setting guard upon us, went to search the sloop.

I observed among them a Dutchman, who seemed to be of some authority, though he was not commander of either ship. He knew us by our countenances to be Englishmen, and jabbering to us in his own language, swore we should be tied back to back and thrown into the sea. I spoken Dutch tolerably well; I told him who we were, and begged him, in consideration of our being Christians and Protestants, of neighbouring countries in strict alliance, that he would move the captains to take some pity on us. This inflamed his rage; he repeated his threatenings, and turning to his companions, spoke with great vehemence in the Japanese language, as I suppose, often using the word CHRISTIANOS.
The largest of the two pirate ships was commanded by a Japanese captain, who spoke a little Dutch, but very imperfectly. He came up to me, and after several questions, which I answered in great humility, he said, “we should not die.” I made the captain a very low bow, and then, turning to the Dutchman, said, “I was sorry to find more mercy in a heathen, than in a brother christian.” But I had soon reason to repent those foolish words: for that malicious reprobate, having often endeavoured in vain to persuade both the captains that I might be thrown into the sea (which they would not yield to, after the promise made me that I should not die), however, prevailed so far, as to have a punishment inflicted on me, worse, in all human appearance, than death itself. My men were sent by an equal division into both the pirate ships, and my sloop new manned. As to myself, it was determined that I should be set adrift in a small canoe, with paddles and a sail, and four days’ provisions; which last, the Japanese captain was so kind to double out of his own stores, and would permit no man to search me. I got down into the canoe, while the Dutchman, standing upon the deck, loaded me with all the curses and injurious terms his language could afford.

About an hour before we saw the pirates I had taken an observation, and found we were in the latitude of 46 N. and longitude of 183. When I was at some distance from the pirates, I discovered, by my pocket-glass, several islands to the south-east. I set up my sail, the wind being fair, with a design to reach the nearest of those islands, which I made a shift to do, in about three hours. It was all rocky; however I got many birds’ eggs; and, striking fire, I kindled some heath and dry sea-weed, by which I roasted my eggs. I ate no other supper, being resolved to spare my provisions as much as I could. I passed the night under the shelter of a rock, strewing some heath under me, and slept pretty well.

The next day I sailed to another island, and thence to a third and fourth, sometimes using my sail, and sometimes my paddles. But, not to trouble the reader with a particular account of my
distresses, let it suffice, that on the fifth day I arrived at the last island in my sight, which lay south-south-east to the former.

This island was at a greater distance than I expected, and I did not reach it in less than five hours. I encompassed it almost round, before I could find a convenient place to land in; which was a small creek, about three times the wideness of my canoe. I found the island to be all rocky, only a little intermingled with tufts of grass, and sweet-smelling herbs. I took out my small provisions and after having refreshed myself, I secured the remainder in a cave, whereof there were great numbers; I gathered plenty of eggs upon the rocks, and got a quantity of dry sea-weed, and parched grass, which I designed to kindle the next day, and roast my eggs as well as I could, for I had about me my flint, steel, match, and burning-glass. I lay all night in the cave where I had lodged my provisions. My bed was the same dry grass and sea-weed which I intended for fuel. I slept where I had laid my provisions. Fue mi lecho las mismas algas y hierbas secas que había cogido para hacer fuego. Dormí muy poco, pues la intranquilidad de mi espíritu pudo más que mi cansancio y me tuvo despierto. Consideraba cuán imposible me sería conservar la vida en sitio tan desolado y qué miserable fin había de ser el mío. Con todo, me sentía tan indiferente y desalentado, que no tenía ánimo para levantarme, y primero que reuní el suficiente para arrastrarme fuera de la cueva, el día era muy entrado ya. Pasé un rato entre las rocas; el cielo estaba raso completamente, y el sol quemaba de tal modo, que me hizo desviar la cara de sus rayos; cuando, de repente, se hizo una obscuridad, muy distinta, según me pareció, de la que se produce por la interposición de una nube. Me volví y percibi un vasto cuerpo opaco entre el sol y yo, que se movía avanzando hacia la isla. Juzgué que estaría a unas dos millas de altura, y ocultó el sol por seis o siete minutos; pero, al modo que sí me encontrase a la sombra de una montaña, no noté que el aire fuese mucho más frío ni el cielo estuviese más obscuro. Conforme se acercaba al sitio en que estaba yo, me fue pareciendo un cuerpo sólido, de fondo plano, liso y que brillaba con gran intensidad al reflejarse el mar en él. Yo me hallaba de pie en una altura separada unas doscientas yardas de la costa, y vi que este vasto cuerpo descendía casi hasta ponerse en la misma li-
at less than an English mile distance. I took out my pocket perspective, and could plainly discover numbers of people moving up and down the sides of it, which appeared to be sloping; but what those people where doing I was not able to distinguish.

The natural love of life gave me some inward motion of joy, and I was ready to entertain a hope that this adventure might, some way or other, help to deliver me from the desolate place and condition I was in. But at the same time the reader can hardly conceive my astonishment, to behold an island in the air, inhabited by men, who were able (as it should seem) to raise or sink, or put it into progressive motion, as they pleased. But not being at that time in a disposition to philosophise upon this phenomenon, I rather chose to observe what course the island would take, because it seemed for awhile to stand still. Yet soon after, it advanced nearer, and I could see the sides of it encompassed with several gradations of galleries, and stairs, at certain intervals, to descend from one to the other. In the lowest gallery, I beheld some people fishing with long angling rods, and others looking on. I waved my cap (for my hat was long since worn out) and my handkerchief toward the island; and upon its nearer approach, I called and shouted with the utmost strength of my voice; and then looking circumspectly, I beheld a crowd gather to that side which was most in my view. I found by their pointing towards me and to each other, that they plainly discovered me, although they made no return to my shouting. But I could see four or five men running in great haste, up the stairs, to the top of the island, who then disappeared. I happened rightly to conjecture, that these were sent for orders to some person in authority upon this occasion.

The number of people increased, and, in less than half all hour, the island was moved and raised in such a manner, that the lowest gallery appeared in a parallel of less then a hundred yards distance from the height where I stood. I then put myself in the most supplicating posture, and spoke in the nea horizontal que yo, a menos de una milla inglesa de distancia. Saqué mi an- teojo de bolsillo y pude claramente divi- sar multitud de gentes subiendo y bajan- do por los bordes, que parecían estar en declive; pero lo que hicieran aquellas gentes no podía distinguirlor.

El natural cariño a la vida despertó en mi interior algunos movimientos de alegría, y me veía pronto a acariciar la esperanza de que aquel suceso viniese de algún modo en mi ayuda para librarme del lugar desolado y la triste situación en que me hallaba. Pero, al mismo tiempo, difícilmente podrá concebir el lector mi asombro al contemplar una isla en el aire, habitada por hombres que podían —por lo que aparentaba— hacerla subir o bajar, o ponerse en movimiento progresivo, a medida de su deseo. Pero, poco en disposición enton- ces de darme a filosofías sobre este fenómeno, preferí más bien observar qué ruta tomaba la isla, que parecía llevar quieta un rato. Al poco tiempo se acer- có más, y pude distinguir los lados de ella circundados de varias series de ga- lerías y escaleras, con determinados in- tervalos, como para bajar de unas a otras. En la galería inferior advertí que había algunas personas pescando con caña y otras mirando. Agité la gorra —el sombrero se me había roto hacía mu- cho tiempo— y el pañuelo hacia la isla; cuando se hubo acercado más aún, lla- mé y grité con toda la fuerza de mis pul- mones, y entonces vi, mirando atenta- mente, que se reunía gentío en aquel lado que estaba enfrente de mí. Por el modo en que me señalaban y en que me indicaban unos a otros conoci que me percibían claramente, aunque no daban respuesta ninguna a mis voces. Después pude ver que cuatro o cinco hombres corrían apresuradamente escaleras arri- ba, a la parte superior de la isla, y des- aparecían luego. Supuse inmediatamen- te que iban a recibir órdenes de alguna persona con autoridad para proceder en el caso.
humblest accent, but received no answer. Those who stood nearest over against me, seemed to be persons of distinction, as I supposed by their habit. They conferred [granted] earnestly with each other, looking often upon me. At length one of them called out in a clear, polite, smooth dialect, not unlike in sound to the Italian: and therefore I returned an answer in that language, hoping at least that the cadence might be more agreeable to his ears. Although neither of us understood the other, yet my meaning was easily known, for the people saw the distress I was in.

They made signs for me to come down from the rock, and go towards the shore, which I accordingly did; and the flying island being raised to a convenient height, the verge directly over me, a chain was let down from the lowest gallery, with a seat fastened to the bottom, to which I fixed myself, and was drawn up by pulleys.

CHAPTER II.

[The humours and dispositions of the Laputians described. An account of their learning. Of the king and his court. The author’s reception there. The inhabitants subject to fear and disquietudes. An account of the women.]

Ay my alighting, I was surrounded with a crowd of people, but those who stood nearest seemed to be of better quality. They beheld me with all the marks and circumstances of wonder; neither indeed was I much in their debt, having never till then seen a race of mortals so singular in their shapes, habits, and countenances. Their heads were all inclined, either to the right, or the left; one of their eyes turned inward, and the other directly up to the zenith. Their outward garments were adorned with the figures of suns, moons, and stars; interwoven with those of fiddles, flutes, harps, trumpets, guitars, harpsichords, and many other instruments of music, unknown to us in response. Quienes estaban más próximos, frente por frente conmigo, parecían personas de distinción, a juzgar por sus trajes. Conferenciaban gravemente unos con otros, mirándome con frecuencia. Por fin, uno de ellos me gritó en un dialecto claro, agradable, suave, no muy diferente en sonido del italiano; de consiguiente, yo contesté en este idioma, esperando, al menos que la cadencia sería más grata a los oídos de quien se me dirigía. Aunque no nos entendíamos, el significado de mis palabras podía comprenderse fácilmente, pues la gente veía el apuro en que me encontraba.

Me hicieron señas de que descendiese de la roca y avanzase a la playa, como lo hice; fue colocada a conveniente altura la isla volante, cuyo borde quedó sobre mí; soldaron desde la galería más baja una cadena con un asiento atado al extremo, en el cual me sujeté, y me subieron por medio de poleas.
Europe. I observed, here and there, many in the habit of servants, with a blown bladder, fastened like a flail [mayal] to the end of a stick, which they carried in their hands. In each bladders was a small quantity of dried peas, or little pebbles, as I was afterwards informed. With these bladders, they now and then flapped the mouths and ears of those who stood near them, of which practice I could not then conceive the meaning. It seems the minds of these people are so taken up with intense speculations, that they neither can speak, nor attend to the discourses of others, without being roused by some external taction upon the organs of speech and hearing; for which reason, those persons who are able to afford it always keep a flapper (the original is CLIMENOLE) in their family, as one of their domestics; nor ever walk abroad, or make visits, without him. And the business of this officer is, when two, three, or more persons are in company, gently to strike with his bladder the mouth of him who is to speak, and the right ear of him or them to whom the speaker addresses himself. This flapper is likewise employed diligently to attend his master in his walks, and upon occasion to give him a soft flap on his eyes; because he is always so wrapped up in cogitation, that he is in manifest danger of falling down every precipice, and bouncing his head against every post; and in the streets, of justling others, or being justled himself into the kennel.

It was necessary to give the reader this information, without which he would be at the same loss with me to understand the proceedings of these people, as they conducted me up the stairs to the top of the island, and from thence to the royal palace. While we were ascending, they forgot numerous times what they were about, and left me to myself, till their memories were again roused by their flappers; for they appeared altogether unmoved by the sight of my foreign habit and countenance, and by the shouts of the vulgar, whose thoughts and minds were more disengaged.

At last we entered the palace, and proceeded into the chamber of presence, en Europa. Distingui, repartidos entre la multitud, a muchos, vestidos de criados, que llevaban en la mano una vejiga hinchada y atada, como especie de un mayal, a un bastoncillo corto. Dentro de estas vejigas había unos cuantos guisantes secos o unas piedrecillas, según me dijeron más tarde. Con ellas mosquearan de vez en cuando la boca y las orejas de quienes estaban más próximos, práctica cuyo alcance no pude por entonces comprender. A lo que parece, las gentes aquellas tienen el entendimiento de tal modo enfrascado en profundas especulaciones, que no pueden hablar ni escuchar los discursos ajenos si no se les hace volver sobre sí con algún contacto externo sobre los órganos del habla y del oído. Por esta razón, las personas que pueden costearlo tienen siempre al servicio de la familia un criado, que podríamos llamar, así como el instrumento, mosqueeador —allí se llama climenole— y nunca salen de casa ni hacen visitas sin él. La ocupación de este servidor es, cuando están juntas dos o tres personas, golpear suavemente con la vejiga en la boca a aquella que debe hablar, y en la oreja derecha a aquel o aquellos a quienes el que habla se dirige. Asimismo, se dedica el mosqueeador a asistir diligentemente a su señor en los paseos que da y, cuando la ocasión llega, saludarle los ojos con un suave mosqueeo, pues va siempre tan absorto en su meditación, que está en peligro manifiesto de caer en todo precipicio y embestir contra todo poste, y en las calles, de ser lanzado o lanzar a otros de un empujón al arroyo.

Era preciso dar esta explicación al lector, sin la cual se hubiese visto tan desorientado como yo, para comprender el proceder de estas gentes cuando me condujeron por las escaleras hasta la parte superior de la isla y de allí al palacio real. Mientras subíamos olvidaron numerosas veces lo que estaban haciendo, y me abandonaron a mí mismo, hasta que les despertaron la memoria los respectivos mosqueeadores, pues aparentaban absoluta indiferencia a la vista de mi vestido y mi porte extranjero y ante los gritos del vulgo, cuyos pensamientos y espíritu estaban más desenfrenados.

Entramos, por fin, en el palacio, y luego en la sala de audiencia, donde vi al rey...
where I saw the king seated on his throne, attended on each side by persons of prime quality. Before the throne, was a large table filled with globes and spheres, and mathematical instruments of all kinds. His majesty took not the least notice of us, although our entrance was not without sufficient noise, by the concourse of all persons belonging to the court. But he was then deep in a problem; and we attended at least an hour, before he could solve it. There stood by him, on each side, a young page with flaps in their hands, and when they saw he was at leisure, one of them gently struck his mouth, and the other his right ear; at which he startled like one awakened on the sudden, and looking towards me and the company I was in, recollected the occasion of our coming, whereof he had been informed before. He spoke some words, whereupon immediately a young man with a flap came up to my side, and flapped me gently on the right ear; but I made signs, as well as I could, that I had no occasion for such an instrument; which, as I afterwards found, gave his majesty, and the whole court, a very mean opinion of my understanding. The king, as far as I could conjecture, asked me several questions, and I addressed myself to him in all the languages I had. When it was found I could neither understand nor be understood, I was conducted by his order to an apartment in his palace (this prince being distinguished above all his predecessors for his hospitality to strangers), where two servants were appointed to attend me. My dinner was brought, and four persons of quality, whom I remembered to have seen very near the king’s person, did me the honour to dine with me. We had two courses, of three dishes each. In the first course, there was a shoulder of mutton cut into an equilateral triangle, a piece of beef into a rhomboides, and a pudding into a cycloid. The second course was two ducks trussed up in the form of fiddles; sausages and puddings resembling flutes and hautboys, and a breast of veal in the shape of a harp. The servants cut our bread into cones, cylinders, parallelograms, and several other mathematical figures.

While we were at dinner, I made bold to ask the names of several things in their language, and those noble persons, sentado en su trono; a ambos lados le dan asistencia personas de principal calidad. Ante el trono había una gran mesa llena de globos, esferas e instrumentos matemáticos de todas clases, Su Majestad no hizo el menor caso de nosotros, aunque nuestra entrada no dejó de acompañarse de ruido suficiente, al que contribuyeron todas las personas pertenecientes a la corte. Pero él estaba entonces enfrascado en un problema, y hubimos de esperar lo menos una hora a que lo resolviese. A cada lado suyo había un joven paje en pie, con sendos mosqueteros en la mano, y cuando vieron que estaba ocioso, uno de ellos le golpeó suavemente en la boca, y el otro en la oreja derecha, a lo cual se estremeció como hombre a quien despertaran de pronto, y mirándome a mí y a la compañía que tenía en su presencia recordó el motivo de nuestra llegada, de que ya le había informado antes. Habló algunas palabras, e inmediatamente un joven con un mosquetero se llegó a mi lado y me dio suavemente en la oreja derecha; pero yo di a entender con las señas más claras que pude que no necesitaba semejante instrumento, lo que, según supe después, hizo formar a Su Majestad y a toda la corte tristísima opinión de mi inteligencia. El rey, por lo que pude suponer, me hizo varias preguntas, y yo me dirigí a él en todos los idiomas que sabía. Cuando se vio que yo no podía entender ni hacerme entender, se me condujo, por orden suya, a una habitación de su palacio —sobresalía este príncipe entre todos sus predecesores por su hospitalidad a los extranjeros—, y se designaron dos criados para mi servicio. Me llevaron la comida, y cuatro personas de calidad, a quienes yo recordaba haber visto muy cerca del rey, me hicieron el honor de comer conmigo. Nos sirvieron dos entradas, de tres platos cada una. La primera fue un brazuelo de carnero cortado en triángulo equilátero, un trozo de vaca en romboide y un pudín en cicloide. La segunda, dos patos, empaquetados en forma de violín; salchichas y pudines imitando flautas y oboes, y un pecho de ternera en figura de arpa. Los criados nos cortaron el pan en conos, cilindros, paralelogramos y otras diferentes figuras matemáticas.

Mientras comíamos me tomé la libertad de preguntar los nombres de varias cosas en su idioma, y aquellos nobles ca-
by the assistance of their flappers, delighted to give me answers, hoping to raise my admiration of their great abilities if I could be brought to converse with them. I was soon able to call for bread and drink, or whatever else I wanted.

After dinner my company withdrew, and a person was sent to me by the king’s order, attended by a flapper. He brought with him pen, ink, and paper, and three or four books, giving me to understand by signs, that he was sent to teach me the language. We sat together four hours, in which time I wrote down a great number of words in columns, with the translations over against them; I likewise made a shift to learn several short sentences; for my tutor would order one of my servants to fetch something, to turn about, to make a bow, to sit, or to stand, or walk, and the like. Then I took down the sentence in writing. He showed me also, in one of his books, the figures of the sun, moon, and stars, the zodiac, the tropics, and polar circles, together with the denominations of many plains and solids. He gave me the names and descriptions of all the musical instruments, and the general terms of art in playing on each of them. After he had left me, I placed all my words, with their interpretations, in alphabetical order. And thus, in a few days, by the help of a very faithful memory, I got some insight into their language. The word, which I interpret the flying or floating island, is in the original LAPUTA, whereof I could never learn the true etymology. LAP, in the old obsolete language, signifies high; and UNTUH, a governor; from which they say, by corruption, was derived LAPUTA, from LAPUNTUH. But I do not approve of this derivation, that Laputa was QUASI LAP OUTED; LAP, signifying properly, the dancing of the sunbeams in the sea, and OUTED, a wing; which, however, I shall not obtrude, but submit to the judicious reader.

Aquellos a quienes el rey me había confiado, viendo lo mal vestido que me encontraba, encargaron a un sastrer que fuese a la mañana siguiente para tomar-
of clothes. This operator did his office after a different manner from those of his trade in Europe. He first took my altitude by a quadrant, and then, with a rule and compasses, described the dimensions and outlines of my whole body, all which he entered upon paper; and in six days brought my clothes very ill made, and quite out of shape, by happening to mistake a figure in the calculation. But my comfort was, that I observed such accidents very frequent, and little regarded.

During my confinement for want of clothes, and by an indisposition that held me some days longer, I much enlarged my dictionary; and when I went next to court, was able to understand many things the king spoke, and to return him some kind of answers. His majesty had given orders, that the island should move north-east and by east, to the vertical point over Lagado, the metropolis of the whole kingdom below, upon the firm earth. It was about ninety leagues distant, and our voyage lasted four days and a half. I was not in the least sensible of the progressive motion made in the air by the island. On the second morning, about eleven o'clock, the king himself in person, attended by his nobility, courtiers, and officers, having prepared all their musical instruments, played on them for three hours without interruption, so that I was quite stunned with the noise; neither could I possibly guess the meaning, till my tutor informed me. He said that, the people of their island had their ears adapted to hear "the music of the spheres, which always played at certain periods, and the court was now prepared to bear their part, in whatever instrument they most excelled."

In our journey towards Lagado, the capital city, his majesty ordered that the island should stop over certain towns and villages, from whence he might receive the petitions of his subjects. And to this purpose, several packthreads were let down, with small weights at the bottom. On these packthreads the people strung their petitions, which mounted up directly, like the scraps of paper fastened by school boys at the end of the string that
holds their kite. Sometimes we received wine and victuals from below, which were drawn up by pulleys.

The knowledge I had in mathematics, gave me great assistance in acquiring their phraseology, which depended much upon that science, and music; and in the latter I was not unskilled. Their ideas are perpetually conversant in lines and figures. If they would, for example, praise the beauty of a woman, or any other animal, they describe it by rhombs, circles, parallelograms, ellipses, and other geometrical terms, or by words of art drawn from music, needless here to repeat. I observed in the king’s kitchen all sorts of mathematical and musical instruments, after the figures of which they cut up the joints that were served to his majesty’s table.

Their houses are very ill built, the walls bevil, without one right angle in any apartment; and this defect arises from the contempt they bear to practical geometry, which they despise as vulgar and mechanic; those instructions they give being too refined for the intellects of their workmen, which occasions perpetual mistakes. And although they are dexterous enough upon a piece of paper, in the management of the rule, the pencil, and the divider, yet in the common actions and behaviour of life, I have not seen a more clumsy, awkward, and unhandy people, nor so slow and perplexed in their conceptions upon all other subjects, except those of mathematics and music. They are very bad reasoners, and vehemently given to opposition, unless when they happen to be of the right opinion, which is seldom their case. Imagination, fancy, and invention, they are wholly strangers to, nor have any words in their language, by which those ideas can be expressed; the whole compass of their thoughts and mind being shut up within the two forementioned sciences.

Most of them, and especially those who deal in the astronomical part, have great faith in judicial astrology, although they are ashamed to own it publicly. But what I chiefly admired, and thought altogether unaccountable, was the strong disposition I observed

El conocimiento de las matemáticas que tenía yo me ayudó mucho en el aprendizaje de aquella fraseología, que dependía en gran parte de esta ciencia y de la música: y en esta última tampoco era profano. Las ideas de aquel pueblo se refieren perpetuamente a líneas y figuras. Si quieren, por ejemplo, alabar la belleza de una mujer, o de un animal cualquiera, la describen con rombos, círculos, paralelogramos, elipses y otros términos geométricos, o con palabras de arte sacadas de la música, que no es necesario repetir aquí. Encontré en la cocina del rey toda clase de instrumentos matemáticos y músicos, en cuyas figuras cortan los cuartos de res que se sirven a la mesa de Su Majestad.

Sus casas están muy mal construidas, con las paredes trazadas de modo que no se puede encontrar un ángulo recto en una habitación. Débese este defecto al desprecio que tienen allí por la geometría recta, que juzgan mecánica y vulgar; y como las instrucciones que dan son demasiado profundas para el intelecto de sus trabajadores, de ahí las equivocaciones perpetuas. Aunque son aquellas gentes bastante diestras para manejar sobre una hoja de papel, regla, lápiz y compás de división, sin embargo, en los actos corrientes y en el modo de vivir yo no he visto pueblo más tosco, poco diestro y desmañado, ni tan lento e indeciso en sus concepciones sobre todos los asuntos que no se refieran a matemáticas y música. Son malos razonadores y dados, con gran vehemencia a la contradicción, menos cuando aciertan a sustentar la opinión oportuna, lo que les sucede muy rara vez. La imaginación, la fantasía y la inventiva les son por completo extrañas, y no hay en su idioma palabras con qué expresar estas ideas; todo el círculo de sus pensamientos y de su raciocinio está encerrado en las dos ciencias ya mencionadas.

Muchos de ellos, y especialmente los que se dedican a la parte astronómica, tienen gran fe en la astrología judiciaria, aunque se avergüenzan de confesarlo en público. Pero lo que principalmente admiré en ellos, y me pareció por completo inexplicable, fue la decidida inclinación que les
in them towards news and politics, perpetually inquiring into public affairs, giving their judgments in matters of state, and passionately disputing every inch of a party opinion. I have indeed observed the same disposition among most of the mathematicians I have known in Europe, although I could never discover the least analogy between the two sciences; unless those people suppose, that because the smallest circle has as many degrees as the largest, therefore the regulation and management of the world require no more abilities than the handling and turning of a globe; but I rather take this quality to spring from a very common infirmity of human nature, inclining us to be most curious and conceited in matters where we have least concern, and for which we are least adapted by study or nature.

These people are under continual disquietudes, never enjoying a minutes peace of mind; and their disturbances proceed from causes which very little affect the rest of mortals. Their apprehensions arise from several changes they dread in the celestial bodies: for instance, that the earth, by the continual approaches of the sun towards it, must, in course of time, be absorbed, or swallowed up; that the face of the sun, will, by degrees, be encrusted with its own effluvia, and give no more light to the world; that the earth very narrowly escaped a brush from the tail of the last comet, which would have infallibly reduced it to ashes; and that the next, which they have calculated for one-and-thirty years hence, will probably destroy us. For if, in its perihelion, it should approach within a certain degree of the sun (as by their calculations they have reason to dread) it will receive a degree of heat ten thousand times more intense than that of red hot glowing iron, and in its absence from the sun, carry a blazing tail ten hundred thousand and fourteen miles long, through which, if the earth should pass at the distance of one hundred thousand miles from the nucleus, or main body of the comet, it must in its passage be set on fire, and reduced to ashes: that the sun, daily spending its rays without any nutriment to supply them, will at last be wholly aprecié para la política, y que de continuo los tiene averiguando negocios públicos, dando juicios sobre asuntos de Estado y disputando apasionadamente sobre cada letra de un programa de partido. Ciertamente que yo había observado igual disposición en la mayor parte de los matemáticos que he conocido en Europa, aunque nunca pude descubrir la menor analogía entre las dos ciencias, a no ser que estas gentes imaginen que, por el hecho de tener el círculo más pequeño tantos grados como el más gran, la regulación y el gobierno del mundo no exigen más habilidades que el manejo y volteo de una esfera terrestre. Pero me inclino más bien a pensar que esta condición nace de un mal muy común en la naturaleza humana, que nos lleva a sentirnos en extremo curiosos y afectados por asuntos con que nada tenemos que ver y para entender en los cuales estamos lo menos adaptados posible por el estudio o por las naturales disposiciones.

Aquella gente vive bajo constantes inquietudes, y no goza nunca un minuto de paz su espíritu; pero sus confusiones proceden de causas que importan muy poco al resto de los mortales. Sus recelos nacen de determinados cambios que temen en los cuerpos celestes. Por ejemplo, que la Tierra, a causa de las continuas aproximaciones del Sol, debe, en el curso de los tiempos, ser absorbida o engullida. Que la faz del Sol irá gradualmente cubriéndose de una costa de sus propios efluvios y dejará de dar luz a la Tierra. Que el mundo se libró por muy poco de un choque con la cola del último cometa, que le hubiese reducido infaliblemente a cenizas, y que el próximo, que ellos han calculado para dentro de treinta y un años, nos destrozaría probablemente. Porque si en su perihelio se aproxima al Sol más allá de cierto grado —lo que, por sus cálculos, tienen razones para temer—, desarrollará un grado de calor diez mil veces más intenso que el de un hierro puesto al rojo, y al apartarse del Sol llevará una cola inflamada de un millón y catorce millas de largo, y la Tierra, si la atraviesa a una distancia de cien mil millas del núcleo o cuerpo principal del cometa, deberá ser a su paso incendiada y reducida a cenizas; que el Sol, como gasta sus rayos diariamente, sin recibir ningún alimento para suplirlos, acabará por consumir-
consumed and **annihilated**; which must be attended with the destruction of this earth, and of all the planets that receive their light from it.

They are so perpetually alarmed with the apprehensions of these, and the like **impending** [imminent] dangers, that they can neither sleep quietly in their beds, nor have any relish for the common pleasures and amusements of life. When they meet an acquaintance in the morning, the first question is about the sun’s health, how he looked at his setting and rising, and what hopes they have to avoid the stroke of the approaching comet. This conversation they are apt to run into with the same temper that boys discover in delighting to hear terrible stories of spirits and **hobgoblins**, which they greedily listen to, and dare not go to bed for fear.

The women of the island have abundance of vivacity: they, contemn their husbands, and are exceedingly fond of strangers, whereof there is always a considerable number from the continent below, attending at court, either upon affairs of the several towns and corporations, or their own particular occasions, but are much despised, because they want the same endowments. Among these the ladies choose their gallants: but the vexation is, that they act with too much ease and security; for the husband is always so rapt in speculation, that the mistress and lover may proceed to the greatest familiarities before his face, if he be but provided with paper and implements, and without his flapper at his side.

The wives and daughters lament their confinement to the island, although I think it the most delicious spot of ground in the world; and although they live here in the greatest plenty and magnificence, and are allowed to do whatever they please, they long to see the world, and take the diversions of the metropolis, which they are not allowed to do without a particular license from the king; and this is not easy to be obtained, because the people of quality have found, by frequent experience, how hard it is to persuade their women to return from below. I was told that a great court...
lady, who had several children,—is married to the prime minister, the richest subject in the kingdom, a very graceful person, extremely fond of her, and lives in the finest palace of the island,—went down to Lagado on the pretence of health, there hid herself for several months, till the king sent a warrant to search for her; and she was found in an obscure eating-house all in rags, having pawned her clothes to maintain an old deformed footman, who beat her every day, and in whose company she was taken, much against her will. And although her husband received her with all possible kindness, and without the least reproach, she soon after contrived to steal down again, with all her jewels, to the same gallant, and has not been heard of since.

This may perhaps pass with the reader rather for an European or English story, than for one of a country so remote. But he may please to consider, that the caprices of womankind are not limited by any climate or nation, and that they are much more uniform, than can be easily imagined.

In about a month’s time, I had made a tolerable proficiency in their language, and was able to answer most of the king’s questions, when I had the honour to attend him. His majesty discovered not the least curiosity to inquire into the laws, government, history, religion, or manners of the countries where I had been; but confined his questions to the state of mathematics, and received the account I gave him with great contempt and indifference, though often roused by his flapper on each side.

CHAPTER III.

[A phenomenon solved by modern philosophy and astronomy. The Laputians’ great improvements in the latter. The king’s method of suppressing insurrections.]

I desired leave of this prince to see the curiosities of the island, which he de la corte — que tenía varios hijos y estaba casada con el primer ministro, el súbdito más rico del reino, hombre muy agraciado y enamorado de ella y que vive en el más bello palacio de la isla — bajó a Lagado con el pretexto de su salud; allí estuvo escondida varios meses, hasta que el rey mandó un auto para que fuese buscada, y la encontraron en un lóbrego figón, vestida de harapos y con las ropas empeñadas para mantener a un lacayo viejo y feo que le pegaba todos los días, y en cuya compañía estaba ella muy contra su voluntad. Pues bien: aunque su marido la recibió con toda la amabilidad posible y sin hacerle el menor reproche, poco tiempo después se huyó nuevamente abajo, con todas sus joyas, en busca del mismo galán, y no ha vuelto a saberse de ella.

Quizá, para el lector, esto pase más bien por una historia europea o inglesa que no de un país tan remoto. Pero debe pararse a meditar que los caprichos de las mujeres no están limitados por frontera ni clima ninguno, y son más uniformes de lo que fácilmente pudiera imaginarse.

En cosa de un mes había hecho yo un regular progreso en el idioma y podía contestar a la mayoría de las preguntas del rey cuando tenía el honor de acompañarlo. Su Majestad no mostró nunca la menor curiosidad por enterarse de las leyes, el gobierno, la historia, la religión ni las costumbres de los países en que yo había estado, sino que limitaba sus preguntas al estado de las matemáticas y recibía las noticias que yo le daba con el mayor desprecio e indiferencia, aunque su mosquero le acariciaba frecuentemente por uno y otro lado.

CHAPTER III

Un problema resuelto por la Filosofía y la Astronomía moderna. —Los grandes progresos de los laputianos en la última. El método del rey para suprimir la insurrección.

Suplicé a este príncipe que me diese licencia para ver las curiosidades de la isla,
was graciously pleased to grant, and
ordered my tutor to attend me. I chiefly
wanted to know, to what cause, in art or
in nature, it owed its several motions,
whereof I will now give a philosophical
account to the reader.

The flying or floating island is
exactly circular, its diameter 7837 yards,
or about four miles and a half, and
consequently contains ten thousand
acres. It is three hundred yards thick.
The bottom, or under surface, which
appears to those who view it below, is
one even regular plate of adamant,
shooting up to the height of about two
hundred yards. Above it lie the several
minerals in their usual order, and over
all is a coat of rich mould, ten or twelve
feet deep. The declivity of the upper
durface, from the circumference to the
centre, is the natural cause why all the
dews and rains, which fall upon the
island, are conveyed in small rivulets
toward the middle, where they are
emptied into four large basins, each of
about half a mile in circuit, and two
hundred yards distant from the centre.
From these basins the water is
continually exhaled by the sun in the
daytime, which effectually prevents
their overflowing. Besides, as it is in
the power of the monarch to raise the
island above the region of clouds and
vapours, he can prevent the falling of
dews and rain whenever he pleases. For
the highest clouds cannot rise above two
miles, as naturalists agree, at least they
were never known to do so in that
country.

At the centre of the island there is
a chasm about fifty yards in diameter,
whence the astronomers descend into
a large dome, which is therefore
called FLANDONA GAGNOLE, or
the astronomer’s cave, situated at the
dept of a hundred yards beneath the
upper surface of the adamant. In this
cave are twenty lamps continually
burning, which, from the reflection of
the adamant, cast a strong light into
every part. The place is stored with
great variety of sextants, quadrants,
telescopes, astrolabes, and other
astronomical instruments. But the
greatest curiosity, upon which the fate
of the island depends, is a loadstone
of a prodigious size, in shape
resembling a weaver’s shuttle. It is

La isla volante o flotante es exacta-
mente circular; su diámetro, de 7.837
yardas, es, unas cuatro millas y
media, y contiene, por lo tanto, diez mil
acres. Su grueso es de 300 yardas. El
piso o superficie inferior que se presen-
ta a quienes la ven des de abajo es una
plancha regular, lisa, de diamante, que
tiene hasta unas 200 yardas de altura.
Sobre ella yacen los varios minerales en
el orden corriente, y encima de todos
hay una capa de riquísima tierra, pro-
funda de diez o doce pies. El declive de
la superficie superior, de la circunferen-
cia al centro, es la causa natural de que
todos los rocíos y lluvias que caen so-
bre la isla sean conducidos formando
pequeños riachuelos hacia el interior,
donde vierten en cuatro grandes estan-
ques, cada uno como de media milla en
redondo y 200 yardas distante del cen-
tro. De estos estanques el Sol evapora
continuamente el agua durante el día, lo
que impide que rebasen. Además, como
el monarca tiene en su poder elevar la
isla por encima de la región de las nu-
bes y los vapores, puede impedir la ca-
da de rocíos y lluvias siempre que le
place, pues las nubes más altas no pa-
san de las dos millas, punto en que to-
dos los naturalistas convienen; al me-
os, nunca se conoció que sucediese de
otro modo en aquel país.

En el centro de la isla hay un hueco
de unas 50 yardas de diámetro, por don-
de los astrónomos descienden a un gran
aposento, de ahí llamado Flandona
Gagnole, que vale tanto como la Cue-
va del Astrónomo, situado a la profun-
didad de 100 yardas por bajo de la su-
perficie superior del diamante. En esta
cueva hay veinte lámparas ardiendo
continuamente; las cuales, como el dia-
mante refleja su luz, arrojan viva cla-
ridad a todos lados. Se atesoran allí
gran variedad de sextantes, cua-
drantes, telescopios, astrolabios y
otros instrumentos astronómicos.

Pero la mayor rareza, de la cual
dependen la suerte de la isla, es un
imán de tamaño prodigioso, parecido
en la forma a una lanzadera de tejedor. Tiene de
in length six yards, and in the thickest part at least three yards over. This magnet is sustained by a very strong axle of adamant passing through its middle, upon which it plays, and is poised so exactly that the weakest hand can turn it. It is hooped round with a hollow cylinder of adamant, four feet yards in diameter, placed horizontally, and supported by eight adamantine feet, each six yards high. In the middle of the concave side, there is a groove twelve inches deep, in which the extremities of the axle are lodged, and turned round as there is occasion.

The stone cannot be removed from its place by any force, because the hoop and its feet are one continued piece with that body of adamant which constitutes the bottom of the island.

By means of this loadstone, the island is made to rise and fall, and move from one place to another. For, with respect to that part of the earth over which the monarch presides, the stone is endowed at one of its sides with an attractive power, and at the other with a repulsive. Upon placing the magnet erect, with its attracting end towards the earth, the island descends; but when the repelling extremity points downwards, the island mounts directly upwards. When the position of the stone is oblique, the motion of the island is so too: for in this magnet, the forces always act in lines parallel to its direction.

By this oblique motion, the island is conveyed to different parts of the monarch’s dominions. To explain the manner of its progress, let A B represent a line drawn across the dominions of Balnibarbi, let the line C D represent the loadstone, of which let D be the repelling end, and C the attracting end, the island being over C: let the stone be placed in position C D, with its repelling end downwards; then the island will be driven upwards obliquely towards D. When it is arrived at D, let the stone be turned upon its axle, till its attracting end points towards E, and then the island will be carried obliquely towards E; where, if the stone be again turned upon its axle till it stands in the position E F, with its repelling point downwards, the island is carried obliquely towards E; and so continues till it comes to D, where its repelling extremity points downwards, and the island descends. In this manner, the island passes from one dominion to another, repeating its progress from one end to the other, until it arrives at its place of beginning. This is the manner in which the island is moved from one dominion to another, and is an illustration of the principles of magnetism.
island will rise obliquely towards $F$, where, by directing the attracting end towards $G$, the island may be carried to $G$, and from $G$ to $H$, by turning the stone, so as to make its repelling extremity to point directly downward. And thus, by changing the situation of the stone, as often as there is occasion, the island is made to rise and fall by turns in an oblique direction, and by those alternate risings and fallings (the obliquity being not considerable) is conveyed from one part of the dominions to the other.

But it must be observed, that this island cannot move beyond the extent of the dominions below, nor can it rise above the height of four miles. For which the astronomers (who have written large systems concerning the stone) assign the following reason: that the magnetic virtue does not extend beyond the distance of four miles, and that the mineral, which acts upon the stone in the bowels of the earth, and in the sea about six leagues distant from the shore, is not diffused through the whole globe, but terminated with the limits of the king’s dominions; and it was easy, from the great advantage of such a superior situation, for a prince to bring under his obedience whatever country lay within the attraction of that magnet.

When the stone is put parallel to the plane of the horizon, the island stands still; for in that case the extremities of it, being at equal distance from the earth, act with equal force, the one in drawing downwards, the other in pushing upwards, and consequently no motion can ensue.

This loadstone is under the care of certain astronomers, who, from time to time, give it such positions as the monarch directs.

They spend the greatest part of their lives in observing the celestial bodies, which they do by the assistance of glasses, far excelling ours in goodness. For, although their largest telescopes do not exceed three feet, they magnify much more than those of a hundred with us, and show the stars with greater clearness. This advantage has enabled them to extend their discoveries much further than our...
astronomers in Europe; for they have made a catalogue of ten thousand fixed stars, whereas the largest of ours do not contain above one third part of that number. They have likewise discovered two lesser stars, or satellites, which revolve about Mars; whereof the innermost is distant from the centre of the primary planet exactly three of his diameters, and the outermost, five; the former revolves in the space of ten hours, and the latter in twenty-one and a half; so that the squares of their periodical times are very near in the same proportion with the cubes of their distance from the centre of Mars; which evidently shows them to be governed by the same law of gravitation that influences the other heavenly bodies.

They have observed ninety-three different comets, and settled their periods with great exactness. If this be true (and they affirm it with great confidence) it is much to be wished, that their observations were made public, whereby the theory of comets, which at present is very lame and defective, might be brought to the same perfection with other arts of astronomy.

The king would be the most absolute prince in the universe, if he could but prevail on a ministry to join with him; but these having their estates below on the continent, and considering that the office of a favourite has a very uncertain tenure, would never consent to the enslaving of their country.

If any town should engage in rebellion or mutiny, fall into violent factions, or refuse to pay the usual tribute, the king has two methods of reducing them to obedience. The first and the mildest course is, by keeping the island hovering over such a town, and the lands about it, whereby he can deprive them of the benefit of the sun and the rain, and consequently afflict the inhabitants with dearth and diseases: and if the crime deserve it, they are at the same time pelted from above with great stones, against which they have no defence but by creeping into cellars or caves, while the roofs of their houses are beaten to pieces. But if they still continue obstinate, or offer to raise insurrections, he proceeds to the last
remedy, by letting the island drop directly upon their heads, which makes a universal destruction both of houses and men. However, this is an extremity to which the prince is seldom driven, neither indeed is he willing to put it in execution; nor dare his ministers advise him to an action, which, as it would render them odious to the people, so it would be a great damage to their own estates, which all lie below; for the island is the king’s demesne.

But there is still indeed a more weighty reason, why the kings of this country have been always averse from executing so terrible an action, unless upon the utmost necessity. For, if the town intended to be destroyed should have in it any tall rocks, as it generally falls out in the larger cities, a situation probably chosen at first with a view to prevent such a catastrophe; or if it abound in high spires, or pillars of stone, a sudden fall might endanger the bottom or under surface of the island, which, although it consist, as I have said, of one entire adamant, two hundred yards thick, might happen to crack by too great a shock, or burst by approaching too near the fires from the houses below, as the backs, both of iron and stone, will often do in our chimneys. Of all this the people are well apprised, and understand how far to carry their obstinacy, where their liberty or property is concerned. And the king, when he is highest provoked, and most determined to press a city to rubbish, orders the island to descend with great gentleness, out of a pretence of tenderness to his people, but, indeed, for fear of breaking the adamantine bottom; in which case, it is the opinion of all their philosophers, that the loadstone could no longer hold it up, and the whole mass would fall to the ground.

By a fundamental law of this realm, neither the king, nor either of his two eldest sons, are permitted to leave the island; nor the queen, till she is past child-bearing.

el rey al último recurso; y es dejar caer la isla derechamente sobre sus cabezas, lo que ocasiona universal destrucción, lo mismo de casas que de hombres. No obstante, es éste un extremo a que el príncipe se ve arrastrado rara vez, y que no gusta de poner por obra, así como sus ministros tampoco se atreven a aconsejarle una medida que los haría odiosos al pueblo y sería gran daño para sus propias haciendas, que están abajo, ya que la isla es posesión del rey.

Pero aun existe, ciertamente, otra razón de más peso para que los reyes de aquel país hayan sido siempre contrarios a ejecutar acción tan terrible, a no ser en casos de extremada necesidad. Si la ciudad que se pretende destruir tiene en su recinto elevadas rocas, como por regla general acontece en las mayores poblaciones, que probablemente han escogido de antemano esta situación con miras a evitar semejante catástrofe, o si abunda en altos obeliscos o columnas de piedra, una caída rápida pondría en peligro el fondo o superficie inferior de la Isla, que, aun cuando consiste, como ya he dicho, en un diamante entero de doscientas yardas de espesor, podría suceder que se partiese con un choque demasiado grande o saltase al aproximarse demasiado a los hogares de las casas de abajo, como a menudo ocurre a los cortafuegos de nuestras chimeneas, sean de piedra o de hierro. El pueblo sabe todo esto muy bien, y conoce hasta dónde puede llegar en su obstinación cuando ve afectada su libertad o su fortuna. Y el rey, cuando la provocación alcanza el más alto grado y más firmemente se determina a deshacer en escombros una ciudad, ordena que la isla descienda con gran blandura, bajo pretexto de terneza para su pueblo, pero, en realidad, por miedo de que se rompa el fondo de diamante, en cuyo caso es opinión de todos los filósofos que el imán no podría seguir sosteniendo la isla y la masa entera se vendría al suelo.

Por una ley fundamental del reino está prohibido al rey y a sus dos hijos mayores salir de la isla, así como a la reina hasta que ha dado a luz.
CHAPTER IV.

[The author leaves Laputa; is conveyed to Balnibarbi; arrives at the metropolis. A description of the metropolis, and the country adjoining. The author hospitably received by a great lord. His conversation with that lord.]

Although I cannot say that I was ill treated in this island, yet I must confess I thought myself too much neglected, not without some degree of contempt; for neither prince nor people appeared to be curious in any part of knowledge, except mathematics and music, wherein I was far their inferior, and upon that account very little regarded.

On the other side, after having seen all the curiosities of the island, I was very desirous to leave it, being heartily weary of those people. They were indeed excellent in two sciences for which I have great esteem, and wherein I am not unversed; but, at the same time, so abstracted and involved in speculation, that I never met with such disagreeable companions. I conversed only with women, tradesmen, flappers, and court-pages, during two months of my abode there; by which, at last, I rendered myself extremely contemptible; yet these were the only people from whom I could ever receive a reasonable answer.

I had obtained, by hard study, a good degree of knowledge in their language: I was weary of being confined to an island where I received so little countenance, and resolved to leave it with the first opportunity.

There was a great lord at court, nearly related to the king, and for that reason alone used with respect. He was universally reckoned the most ignorant and stupid person among them. He had performed many eminent services for the crown, had great natural and acquired parts, adorned with integrity and honour; but so ill an ear for music, that his detractors reported, “he had been often known to beat time in the wrong place;” neither could his tutors, without extreme difficulty, teach him to demonstrate the most easy proposition in the mathematics. He was pleased to...
show me many marks of favour, often did me the honour of a visit, desired to be informed in the affairs of Europe, the laws and customs, the manners and learning of the several countries where I had travelled. He listened to me with great attention, and made very wise observations on all I spoke. He had two flappers attending him for state, but never made use of them, except at court and in visits of ceremony, and would always command them to withdraw, when we were alone together.

I entreated [besought] this illustrious person, to intercede in my behalf with his majesty, for leave to depart; which he accordingly did, as he was pleased to tell me, with regret: for indeed he had made me several offers very advantageous, which, however, I refused, with expressions of the highest acknowledgment.

On the 16th of February I took leave of his majesty and the court. The king made me a present to the value of about two hundred pounds English, and my protector, his kinsman, as much more, together with a letter of recommendation to a friend of his in Lagado, the metropolis. The island being then hovering over a mountain about two miles from it, I was let down from the lowest gallery, in the same manner as I had been taken up.

The continent, as far as it is subject to the monarch of the flying island, passes under the general name of BALNIBARBI; and the metropolis, as I said before, is called LAGADO. I felt some little satisfaction in finding myself on firm ground. I walked to the city without any concern, being clad like one of the natives, and sufficiently instructed to converse with them. I soon found out the person’s house to whom I was recommended, presented my letter from his friend the grandee in the island, and was received with much kindness. This great lord, whose name was Munodi, ordered me an apartment in his own house, where I continued during my stay, and was entertained in a most hospitable manner.

The next morning after my arrival, he took me in his chariot to see the town, which is about half the bigness of

El 16 de febrero me despedí de Su Majestad y de la corte. El rey me hizo un regalo por valor de unas doscientas libras inglesas, y mi protector su pariente, otro tanto, con más una carta de recomendación para un amigo suyo de Lagado, la metrópoli. La isla estaba en la sazón suspendida sobre una montaña situada a unas dos millas de la ciudad, y me bajaron desde la galería inferior igual que me habían subido.

A la mañana siguiente de mi llegada me sacó en su coche a ver la ciudad, que viene a ser la mitad que Lon-
London; but the houses very strangely built, and most of them out of repair. The people in the streets walked fast, looked wild, their eyes fixed, and were generally in rags. We passed through one of the town gates, and went about three miles into the country, where I saw many labourers working with several sorts of tools in the ground, but was not able to conjecture what they were about: neither did observe any expectation either of corn or grass, although the soil appeared to be excellent. I could not forbear admiring at these odd appearances, both in town and country; and I made bold to desire my conductor, that he would be pleased to explain to me, what could be meant by so many busy heads, hands, and faces, both in the streets and the fields, because I did not discover any good effects they produced; but, on the contrary, I never knew a soil so unhappily cultivated, houses so ill contrived and so ruinous, or a people whose countenances and habit expressed so much misery and want.

This lord Munodi was a person of the first rank, and had been some years governor of Lagado; but, by a cabal of ministers, was discharged for insufficiency. However, the king treated him with tenderness, as a well-meaning man, but of a low contemptible understanding.

When I gave that free censure of the country and its inhabitants, he made no further answer than by telling me, “that I had not been long enough among them to form a judgment; and that the different nations of the world had different customs;” with other common topics to the same purpose. But, when we returned to his palace, he asked me “how I liked the building, what absurdities I observed, and what quarrel I had with the dress or looks of his domestics?” This he might safely do; because every thing about him was magnificent, regular, and polite. I answered, “that his excellency’s prudence, quality, and fortune, had exempted him from those defects, which folly and beggary had produced in others.” He said, “if I would go with him to his country-house, about twenty miles distant, where his estate lay, there would be more leisure for this kind of dres, pero de casas muy extrañamente construidas y, las más, faltas de reparación. La gente va por las calles de prisa, con expresión aturdida, los ojos fijos y generalmente vestida con andrajos. Pasamos por una o dos puertas y salimos unas tres millas al campo, donde vi muchos obreros trabajando con herramientas de varias clases, sin poder conjeturar yo a qué se dedicaban, pues no descubrí el menor rastro de grano ni de hierba, por más que la tierra pareciera excelente. No pude por menos de sorprenderme ante estas extrañas apariencias de la ciudad y del campo, y me tomé la libertad de pedir a mi guía que se sirviese explicarme qué significaban tantas cabezas, manos y semblantes ocupados, lo mismo en los campos que en la ciudad, pues yo no alcanzaba a descubrir los buenos efectos que producían; antes al contrario, yo no había visto nunca suelo tan desdichadamente cultivado, casas tan mal hechas y ruinosas ni gente cuyo porte y traje expresaran tanta miseria y necesidad.

El señor Munodi era persona de alto rango, que había sido varios años gobernador de Lagado; pero por maquinaciones de ministros fue destituído como incapaz. Sin embargo, el rey le trataba con gran cariño, teniéndole por hombre de buena intención, aunque de entendimiento menos que escaso.

Cuando hube hecho esta franca censura del país y de sus habitantes no me dio otra respuesta sino que yo no llevaba entre ellos el tiempo suficiente para formar un juicio, y que las diferentes naciones del mundo tienen costumbres diferentes con otros tópicos en el mismo sentido. Pero cuando volvimos a su palacio me preguntó qué tal me parecía el edificio, qué absurdos apreciaba y qué tenía que decir de la vestidura y el aspecto de su servidumbre. Podía hacerlo con toda seguridad, ya que todo cuanto le rodeaba era magnífico, correcto y agradable. Respondí que la prudencia, la calidad y la fortuna de Su Excelencia le habían eximido de aquellos defectos que la insensatez y la indigencia habían causado en los demás. Dijome que si quería ir con él a su casa de campo, situada a veinte millas de distancia, y donde estaba su hacienda, habría más lugar para esta clase de conversación.
conversation.” I told his excellency “that I was entirely at his disposal;” and accordingly we set out next morning.

During our journey he made me observe the several methods used by farmers in managing their lands, which to me were wholly unaccountable; for, except in some very few places, I could not discover one ear of corn or blade of grass. But, in three hours travelling, the scene was wholly altered; we came into a most beautiful country; farmers’ houses, at small distances, neatly built; the fields enclosed, containing vineyards, corn-grounds, and meadows. Neither do I remember to have seen a more delightful prospect. His excellency observed my countenance to clear up; he told me, with a sigh, “that there his estate began, and would continue the same, till we should come to his house: that his countrymen ridiculed and despised him, for managing his affairs no better, and for setting so ill an example to the kingdom; which, however, was followed by very few, such as were old, and wilful, and weak like himself.”

We came at length to the house, which was indeed a noble structure, built according to the best rules of ancient architecture. The fountains, gardens, walks, avenues, and groves, were all disposed with exact judgment and taste. I gave due praises to every thing I saw, whereof his excellency took not the least notice till after supper; when, there being no third companion, he told me with a very melancholy air “that he doubted he must throw down his houses in town and country, to rebuild them after the present mode; destroy all his plantations, and cast others into such a form as modern usage required, and give the same directions to all his tenants, unless he would submit to incur the censure of pride, singularity, affectation, ignorance, caprice, and perhaps increase his majesty’s displeasure; that the admiration I appeared to be under would cease or diminish, when he had informed me of some particulars which, probably, I never heard of at court, the people there being too much taken up in their own speculations, to have regard to what passed here below.”

The sum of his discourse was to this effect:

Durante el viaje me hizo observar los diversos métodos empleados por los labradores en el cultivo de sus tierras, lo que para mí resultaba completamente inexplicable, porque, exceptuando poquísimos sitios, no podía distinguir una espiga de grano ni una brizna de hierba. Pero a las tres horas de viaje, la escena cambió totalmente; entramos en una hermosísima campiña: casas de labranza poco distanciadas entre sí y lindamente construidas; sembrados, praderas y viñedos con sus cercas en torno. No recuerdo haber visto más delicioso paraje. Su Excelencia advirtió que mi semblante se había despejado. Díjome, con un suspiro, que allí empezaba su hacienda y todo seguiría lo mismo hasta que llegáramos a su casa, y que sus conciudadanos le ridiculizaban y despreciaban por no llevar mejor sus negocios y por dar al reino tan mal ejemplo; ejemplo que, sin embargo, sólo era seguido por muy pocos, viejos, porfiados y débiles como él.

Llegamos, por fin, a la casa, que era, a la verdad, de muy noble estructura y edificada según las mejores reglas de la arquitectura antigua. Los jardines, fuentes, paseos, avenidas y arboledas estaban dispuestos con mucho conocimiento y gusto. Alabé debidamente cuanto vi, de lo que Su Excelencia no hizo el menor caso, hasta que después de cenar, y cuando no había con nosotros tercera persona, me dijo con expresión melancólica que temía temer que derribar sus casas de la ciudad y del campo para reedificarlas según la moda actual, y destruir todas sus plantaciones para hacer otras en la forma que el uso moderno exigía, y dar las mismas instrucciones a sus renteros, se parecía a incurrir en censura por su orgullo, singularidad, afectación, ignorancia y capricho, y quizás de aumentar el descontento de Su Majestad. Añadió que la admiración que yo parecía sentir se acabaría, o disminuiría al menos, cuando él me habiese informado de algunos detalles de que probablemente no habría oído hablar en la corona, por lo que allí la gente estaba demasiado sumida en sus especulaciones como para mirar lo que pasaba aquí abajo.
“That about forty years ago, certain persons went up to Laputa, either upon business or diversion, and, after five months continuance, came back with a very little smattering in mathematics, but full of volatile spirits acquired in that airy region: that these persons, upon their return, began to dislike the management of every thing below, and fell into schemes of putting all arts, sciences, languages, and mechanics, upon a new foot. To this end, they procured a royal patent for erecting an academy of projectors in Lagado; and the humour prevailed so strongly among the people, that there is not a town of any consequence in the kingdom without such an academy. In these colleges the professors contrive new rules and methods of agriculture and building, and new instruments, and tools for all trades and manufactures; whereby, as they undertake, one man shall do the work of ten; a palace may be built in a week, of materials so durable as to last for ever without repairing. All the fruits of the earth shall come to maturity at whatever season we think fit to choose, and increase a hundred fold more than they do at present; with innumerable other happy proposals. The only inconvenience is, that none of these projects are yet brought to perfection; and in the mean time, the whole country lies miserably waste, the houses in ruins, and the people without food or clothes. By all which, instead of being discouraged, they are fifty times more violently bent upon prosecuting their schemes, driven equally on by hope and despair: that as for himself, being not of an enterprising spirit, he was content to go on in the old forms, to live in the houses his ancestors had built, and act as they did, in every part of life, without innovation: that some few other persons of quality and gentry had done the same, but were looked on with an eye of contempt and ill-will, as enemies to art, ignorant, and ill common-wealth’s men, preferring their own ease and sloth before the general improvement of their country."

His lordship added, “That he would not, by any further particulars, prevent the pleasure I should certainly take in...”

Agregó Su Señoría que no quería con nuevos detalles privarme del placer que seguramente tendría en ver la...
viewing the grand academy, whither he was resolved I should go.” He only desired me to observe a ruined building, upon the side of a mountain about three miles distant, of which he gave me this account: “That he had a very convenient mill within half a mile of his house, turned by a current from a large river, and sufficient for his own family, as well as a great number of his tenants; that about seven years ago, a club of those projectors came to him with proposals to destroy this mill, and build another on the side of that mountain, on the long ridge whereof a long canal must be cut, for a repository of water, to be conveyed up by pipes and engines to supply the mill, because the wind and air upon a height agitated the water, and thereby made it fitter for motion, and because the water, descending down a declivity, would turn the mill with half the current of a river whose course is more upon a level.” He said, “that being then not very well with the court, and pressed by many of his friends, he complied with the proposal; and after employing a hundred men for two years, the work miscarried, the projectors went off, laying the blame entirely upon him, railing at him ever since, and putting others upon the same experiment, with equal assurance of success, as well as equal disappointment.”

In a few days we came back to town; and his excellency, considering the bad character he had in the academy, would not go with me himself, but recommended me to a friend of his, to bear me company thither. My lord was pleased to represent me as a great admirer of projects and a person of much curiosity and easy belief; which, indeed, was not without truth; for I had myself been a sort of projector in my younger days.

CHAPTER V.

[The author permitted to see the grand academy of Lagado. The academy largely described. The arts wherein the professors employ themselves.]

This academy is not an entire single
building, but a continuation of several houses on both sides of a street, which growing waste, was purchased and applied to that use.

I was received very kindly by the warden, and went for many days to the academy. Every room has in it one or more projectors; and I believe I could not be in fewer than five hundred rooms.

The first man I saw was of a meagre aspect, with sooty hands and face, his hair and beard long, ragged, and *singed* [chamuscar] in several places. His clothes, shirt, and skin, were all of the same colour. He has been eight years upon a project for extracting sunbeams out of cucumbers, which were to be put in phials hermetically sealed, and let out to warm the air in raw inclement summers. He told me, he did not doubt, that, in eight years more, he should be able to supply the governor’s gardens with sunshine, at a reasonable rate: but he complained that his stock was low, and entreated [besought] me “to give him something as an encouragement to ingenuity, especially since this had been a very dear season for cucumbers.” I made him a small present, for my lord had furnished me with money on purpose, because he knew their practice of begging from all who go to see them.

I went into another chamber, but was ready to hasten back, being almost overcome with a horrible stink. My conductor pressed me forward, conjuring me in a whisper “to give no offence, which would be highly resented;” and therefore I *durst* not so much as stop my nose. The projector of this cell was the most ancient student of the academy; his face and beard were of a pale yellow; his hands and clothes daubed over with filth. When I was presented to him, he gave me a close embrace, a compliment I could well have excused. His employment, from his first coming into the academy, was an operation to reduce human excrement to its original food, by separating the several parts, removing the tincture which it receives from the gall, making the odour exhale, and *scumming* off the saliva. He had a weekly allowance, from the society, of a vessel filled with human ordure, about
the bigness of a Bristol barrel.

I saw another at work to calcine ice into gunpowder; who likewise showed me a treatise he had written concerning the malleability of fire, which he intended to publish.

There was a most ingenious architect, who had contrived a new method for building houses, by beginning at the roof, and working downward to the foundation; which he justified to me, by the like practice of those two prudent insects, the bee and the spider.

There was a man born blind, who had several apprentices in his own condition: their employment was to mix colours for painters, which their master taught them to distinguish by feeling and smelling. It was indeed my misfortune to find them at that time not very perfect in their lessons, and the professor himself happened to be generally mistaken. This artist is much encouraged and esteemed by the whole fraternity.

In another apartment I was highly pleased with a projector who had found a device of ploughing the ground with hogs, to save the charges of ploughs, cattle, and labour. The method is this: in an acre of ground you bury, at six inches distance and eight deep, a quantity of acorns [bellotas], dates, chestnuts, and other mast or vegetables, whereof these animals are fondest; then you drive six hundred or more of them into the field, where, in a few days, they will root up the whole ground in search of their food, and make it fit for sowing, at the same time manuring it with their dung: it is true, upon experiment, they found the charge and trouble very great, and they had little or no crop. However it is not doubted, that this invention may be capable of great improvement.

I went into another room, where the walls and ceiling were all hung round with cobwebs, except a narrow passage for the artist to go in and out. At my entrance, he called aloud to me, “not to disturb his webs.” He lamented “the fatal mistake the world had been so long in, of using silkworms, while we had such plenty of domestic insects who

Vi a otro que trabajaba en reducir hielo a pólvora por la calcinación, y que también me enseñó un tratado que había escrito y pensaba publicar, concerniente a la maleabilidad del fuego.

Estaba un ingeniosísimo arquitecto que había discubierto un nuevo método de edificar casas empezando por el tejado y trabajando en sentido descendente—hasta los cimientos, lo que justificó ante mí con la práctica semejante de dos tan prudentes insectos como la abeja y la araña.

Había un hombre, ciego de nacimiento, que tenía varios discípulos de su misma condición y los dedicaba a mezclar colores para pintar, y que su maestro les había enseñado a distinguir por el tacto y el olfato. Fue en verdad desgracia mía encontrarlos en aquella ocasión no muy diestros en sus lecciones, y aun al mismo profesor le acontecía equivocarse generalmente. Este artista cuenta en el más alto grado con el estímulo y la estima de toda la hermandad.

En otra habitación me complació grandemente encontrarme con un arbitrista que había descubierto un plan para arar la tierra por medio de puercos, a fin de ahorrar los gastos de aperos, ganado y labor. El método es éste: en un acre de terreno se entierra, a seis pulgadas de distancia entre sí, cierta cantidad de bellotas, dátiles, castañas y otros frutos o verduras de que tanto gustan estos animales. Luego se sueltan dentro del campo seiscientos o más de ellos, que a los pocos días habrán hozado todo el terreno en busca de comida y dejándolo dispuesto para la siembra. Cierto que la experiencia ha mostrado que la molestia y el gasto son muy grandes y la cosecha poca o nula; sin embargo, no se duda que este invento es susceptible de gran progreso.
infinitely excelled the former, because they understood how to weave, as well as spin.” And he proposed further, “that by employing spiders, the charge of dyeing silks should be wholly saved;” whereof I was fully convinced, when he showed me a vast number of flies most beautifully coloured, wherewith he fed his spiders, assuring us “that the webs would take a tincture from them; and as he had them of all hues, he hoped to fit everybody’s fancy, as soon as he could find proper food for the flies, of certain gums, oils, and other glutinous matter, to give a strength and consistence to the threads.”

There was an astronomer, who had undertaken to place a sun-dial upon the great weathercock on the town-house, by adjusting the annual and diurnal motions of the earth and sun, so as to answer and coincide with all accidental turnings of the wind.

I was complaining of a small fit of the colic, upon which my conductor led me into a room where a great physician resided, who was famous for curing that disease, by contrary operations from the same instrument. He had a large pair of bellows, with a long slender muzzle of ivory: this he conveyed eight inches up the anus, and drawing in the wind, he affirmed he could make the guts as lank as a dried bladder. But when the disease was more stubborn and violent, he let in the muzzle while the bellows were full of wind, which he discharged into the body of the patient; then withdrew the instrument to replenish it, clapping his thumb strongly against the orifice of then fundament; and this being repeated three or four times, the adventitious wind would rush out, bringing the noxious along with it, (like water put into a pump), and the patient recovered.

I saw him try both experiments upon a dog, but could not discern any effect from the former. After the latter the animal was ready to burst, and made so violent a discharge as was very offensive to me and my companion.

The dog died on the spot, and we left the doctor endeavouring to recover him, by the same operation.

I visited many other apartments, but I shall not trouble my reader with all the
I had hitherto seen only one side of the academy, the other being appropriated to the advancers of speculative learning, of whom I shall say something, when I have mentioned one illustrious person more, who is called among them “the universal artist.” He told us “he had been thirty years employing his thoughts for the improvement of human life.” He had two large rooms full of wonderful curiosities, and fifty men at work. Some were condensing air into a dry tangible substance, by extracting the nitre, and letting the aqueous or fluid particles percolate; others softening marble, for pillows and pin-cushions; others petrifying the hoofs of a living horse, to preserve them from founder

das las rarezas que vi, en gracia a la brevedad.

Hasta entonces había visto tan sólo uno de los lados de la Academia, pues el otro estaba asignado a los propagadores del estudio especulativo, de quienes diré algo cuando haya dado a conocer a otro ilustre personaje, llamado entre ellos el artista universal. Éste nos dijo que durante treinta años había dedicado sus pensamientos al progreso de la vida humana. Tenía dos grandes apsentos llenos de maravillosas rarezas y cincuenta hombres trabajando. Unos condensaban aire para convertirlo en una substancia tangible dura, extrayendo el nitro y colando las partículas acuosas o fluidas; otros ablandaban mármol para almohadas y acericos; otros petrificaban los cascos a un caballo vivo para impedir que se despease. El mismo artista en persona hallándose ocupado a la sazón en dos grandes proyectos: el primero, sembrar en arena los hollejos del grano, donde afirmaba estar contenida la verdadera virtud seminal, como demostró con varios experimentos que yo no fui bastante inteligente para comprender. Era el otro impedir, por medio de una cierta composición de gomas minerales y vegetales, aplicada externamente, que les creciera la lana a dos corderitos, y esperaba, en un plazo de tiempo razonable, propagar la raza de corderos desnudos por todo el reino.

We crossed a walk to the other part of the academy, where, as I have already said, the projectors in speculative learning resided.

The first professor I saw, was in a very large room, with forty pupils about him. After salutation, observing me to look earnestly upon a frame, which took up the greatest part of both the length and breadth of the room, he said, “Perhaps I might wonder to see him employed in a project for improving speculative knowledge, by practical and mechanical operations. But the world would soon be sensible of its usefulness; and he flattered himself, that a more noble, exalted thought never sprang in any other man’s head. Every one knew how laborious the usual method is of attaining to arts and sciences; whereas, by his contrivance, the most ignorant person, at a reasonable charge, and with
a little bodily labour, might write books in philosophy, poetry, politics, laws, mathematics, and theology, without the least assistance from genius or study.”

He then led me to the frame, about the sides, whereof all his pupils stood in ranks. It was twenty feet square, placed in the middle of the room. The superfices was composed of several bits of wood, about the bigness of a die, but some larger than others. They were all linked together by slender wires. These bits of wood were covered, on every square, with paper pasted on them; and on these papers were written all the words of their language, in their several moods, tenses, and declensions; but without any order. The professor then desired me “to observe; for he was going to set his engine at work.” The pupils, at his command, took each of them hold of an iron handle, whereof there were forty fixed round the edges of the frame; and giving them a sudden turn, the whole disposition of the words was entirely changed. He then commanded six-and-thirty of the lads, to read the several lines softly, as they appeared upon the frame; and where they found three or four words together that might make part of a sentence, they dictated to the four remaining boys, who were scribes. This work was repeated three or four times, and at every turn, the engine was so contrived, that the words shifted into new places, as the square bits of wood moved upside down.

Six hours a day the young students were employed in this labour; and the professor showed me several volumes in large folio, already collected, of broken sentences, which he intended to piece together, and out of those rich materials, to give the world a complete body of all arts and sciences; which, however, might be still improved, and much expedited, if the public would raise a fund for making and employing five hundred such frames in Lagado, and oblige the managers to contribute in common their several collections.

He assured me “that this invention had employed all his thoughts from his youth; that he had emptied the whole vocabulary into his frame, and made the strictest computation of the general proportion there is in books between the numbers of particles, nouns, and verbs, pequeño trabajo corporal, puede escribir libros de filosofía, poesía, política, leyes, matemáticas y teología, sin que para nada necesite el auxilio del talento ni del estudio. Me llevó luego al tablero, que rodeaban por todas partes los alumnos formando filas. Tenía veinte pies cuadrados y estaba colocado en medio de la habitación. La superficie estaba constituida por varios trozos de madera del tamaño de un dedo próximo, aunque algo mayores unos que otros. Todos estaban ensartados juntos en alambres delgados. Estos trozos de madera estaban por todos lados cubiertos de papel pegado a ellos; y sobre estos pequeños aparecían escritas todas las palabras del idioma en sus varios modos, tiempos y declinaciones, pero sin orden ninguno. Dijo el profesor que atendiese, porque iba a enseñarme el funcionamiento de su aparato. Los discípulos, a una orden suya, echaron mano a unos mangos de hierro que había alrededor del borde del tablero, en número de cuarenta, y, dándoles una vuelta rápida, toda la disposición de las palabras quedó cambiada totalmente. Mandó luego a treinta y seis de los muchachos que leyesen despacio las diversas líneas tales como habían quedado en el tablero, y cuando encontraban tres o cuatro palabras juntas que podían formar parte de una sentencia las dictaban a los cuatro restantes, que servían de escribir. Repitióse el trabajo tres veces o cuatro, y cada una, en virtud de la disposición de la máquina, las palabras se mudaban a otro sitio al dar vuelta los cuadrados de madera.

Durante seis horas diarias se dedicaban los jóvenes estudiantes a esta tarea, y el profesor mostró varios volúmenes en gran folio, ya reunidos en sentencias cortadas, que pensaba enlazar, para, sacándola de ellas, ofrecer al mundo una obra completa de todas las ciencias y artes, la cual podría mejorar y facilitarse en gran modo con que el público crease un fondo para construir y utilizar quinientos de aquellos tableros en Lagado, obligando a los directores a contribuir a la obra común con sus colecciones respectivas.

Me aseguró que había dedicado a este invento toda su inteligencia desde su juventud, y que había agotado el vocabulario completo en su tablero y hecho un serio cálculo de la proporción general que en los libros existe entre el número de artículos, nombres, verbos y demás
and other parts of speech."

I made my humblest acknowledgment to this illustrious person, for his great communicativeness; and promised, "if ever I had the good fortune to return to my native country, that I would do him justice, as the sole inventor of this wonderful machine;" the form and contrivance of which I desired leave to delineate on paper, as in the figure here annexed. I told him, "although it were the custom of our learned in Europe to steal inventions from each other, who had thereby at least this advantage, that it became a controversy which was the right owner; yet I would take such caution, that he should have the honour entire, without a rival."

We next went to the school of languages, where three professors sat in consultation upon improving that of their own country.

The first project was, to shorten discourse, by cutting polysyllables into one, and leaving out verbs and participles, because, in reality, all things imaginable are but norms.

The other project was, a scheme for entirely abolishing all words whatsoever; and this was urged as a great advantage in point of health, as well as brevity. For it is plain, that every word we speak is, in some degree, a diminution of our lunge by corrosion, and, consequently, contributes to the shortening of our lives. An expedient was therefore offered, "that since words are only names for things, it would be more convenient for all men to carry about them such things as were necessary to express a particular business they are to discourse on." And this invention would certainly have taken place, to the great ease as well as health of the subject, if the women, in conjunction with the vulgar and illiterate, had not threatened to raise a rebellion unless they might be allowed the liberty to speak with their tongues, after the manner of their forefathers; such constant irreconcilable enemies to science are the common people.

However, many of the most learned parts of the oración.

Expresé mi más humilde reconocimiento a aquella ilustre persona por haberse mostrado de tal modo comunicativa y le prometí que si alguna vez tenía la dicha de regresar a mi país le haría la justicia de proclamarle único inventor de aquel aparato maravilloso, cuya forma y combinación le rogué que delinease en un papel, Y aparecen en la figura de esta página. Le dije que, aunque en Europa los sabios tenían la costumbre de robarse los inventos unos a otros, y de este modo lograban cuando menos la ventaja de que se discutiese cuál era el verdadero autor, tomaría yo tales precauciones, que él solo disfrutase el honor íntegro, sin que viniera a mermársele ningún rival.

Fuimos luego a la escuela de idiomas, donde tres profesores celebraban consulta sobre el modo de mejorar el de su país.

El primer proyecto consistía en hacer más corto el discurso, dejando a los polisílabos una sílaba nada más, y prescindiendo de verbos y participios; pues, en realidad, todas las cosas imaginables son nombres y nada más que nombres.

El otro proyecto era un plan para abolir por completo todas las palabras, cualesquiera que fuesen; y se defendía como una gran ventaja, tanto respecto de la salud como de la brevedad. Es evidente que cada palabra que hablamos supone, en cierto grado, una disminución de nuestros pulmones por corrosión, y, por lo tanto, contribuye a acortarnos la vida; en consecuencia, se ideó que, siendo las palabras simplemente los nombres de las cosas, sería más conveniente que cada persona llevase consigo todas aquellas cosas de que fuese necesario hablar en el asunto especial sobre que había de discurrir. Y este invento se hubiese implantado, ciertamente, con gran comodidad y ahorro de salud para los individuos, de no haber las mujeres, en consorcio con el vulgar y los ignorantes, amenazado con alzarse en rebelión si no se les dejaba en libertad de hablar con la lengua, al modo de sus antepasados; que a tales extremos llegó siempre el vulgo en su enemiga por la ciencia.

Sin embargo, muchos de los más sa-
and wise adhere to the new scheme of expressing themselves by things; which has only this inconvenience attending it, that if a man’s business be very great, and of various kinds, he must be obliged, in proportion, to carry a greater bundle of things upon his back, unless he can afford one or two strong servants to attend him. I have often beheld two of those sages almost sinking under the weight of their packs, like pedlars among us, who, when they met in the street, would lay down their loads, open their sacks, and hold conversation for an hour together; then put up their implements, help each other to resume their burdens, and take their leave.

But for short conversations, a man may carry implements in his pockets, and under his arms, enough to supply him; and in his house, he cannot be at a loss. Therefore the room where company meet who practise this art, is full of all things, ready at hand, requisite to furnish matter for this kind of artificial converse.

Another great advantage proposed by this invention was, that it would serve as a universal language, to be understood in all civilised nations, whose goods and utensils are generally of the same kind, or nearly resembling, so that their uses might easily be comprehended. And thus ambassadors would be qualified to treat with foreign princes, or ministers of state, to whose tongues they were utter strangers.

I was at the mathematical school, where the master taught his pupils after a method scarce imaginable to us in Europe. The proposition, and demonstration, were fairly written on a thin wafer, with ink composed of a cephalic tincture. This, the student was to swallow upon a fasting stomach, and for three days following, eat nothing but bread and water. As the wafer digested, the tincture mounted to his brain, bearing the proposition along with it. But the success has not hitherto been answerable, partly by some error in the QUANTUM or composition, and partly by the perverseness of lads, to whom this bolus is so nauseous, that they generally steal aside, and discharge it upwards, before it can operate; neither have they been yet

bios y eruditos se adhirieron al nuevo método de expresarse por medio de cosas: lo que presenta como único inconveniente el de que cuando un hombre se ocupa en grandes y diversos asuntos se ve obligado, en proporción, a llevar a espaldas un gran talego de cosas, a menos que pueda pagar uno o dos robustos criados que le asistan. Yo he visto muchas veces a dos de estos sabios, casi abrumados por el peso de sus farros, como van nuestros buhoneros, encontrarse en la calle, echar la carga a tierra, abrir los talegos y conversar durante una hora; y luego, meter los utensilios, ayudarse mutuamente a reasumir la carga y despedirse.

Mas para conversaciones cortas, un hombre puede llevar los necesarios utensilios en los bolsillos o debajo del brazo, y en su casa no puede faltarle lo que precise. Así, en la estancia donde se reúnen quienes practican este arte hay siempre a mano todas las cosas indispensables para alimentar este género artificial de conversaciones.

Estuve en la escuela de matemáticas, donde el maestro enseñaba a los discípulos por un método que nunca hubiéramos imaginado en Europa. Se escribían la proporción y la demostración en una oblea delgada, con tinta compuesta de un colorante cefálico. El estudiante tenía que tragarse esto en ayunas y no tomar durante los tres días siguientes más que pan y agua. Cuando se digería la oblea, el colorante subía al cerebro llevando la proposición. Pero el éxito no ha respondido aún a lo que se esperaba; en parte, por algún error en la composición o en la dosis, y en parte, por la perversidad de los muchachos a quienes resultan de tal modo nauseabundas aquellas bolitas, que generalmente las disimulan en la boca y las disparan a lo alto antes de que puedan operar. Y tampoco
persuaded to use so long an abstinence, as the prescription requires.

CHAPTER VI.

[A further account of the academy. The author proposes some improvements, which are honourably received.]

In the school of political projectors, I was but ill entertained; the professors appearing, in my judgment, wholly out of their senses, which is a scene that never fails to make me melancholy. These unhappy people were proposing schemes for persuading monarchs to choose favourites upon the score of their wisdom, capacity, and virtue; of teaching ministers to consult the public good; of rewarding merit, great abilities, eminent services; of instructing princes to know their true interest, by placing it on the same foundation with that of their people; of choosing for employments persons qualified to exercise them, with many other wild, impossible chimeras, that never entered before into the heart of man to conceive; and confirmed in me the old observation, “that there is nothing so extravagant and irrational, which some philosophers have not maintained for truth.”

But, however, I shall so far do justice to this part of the Academy, as to acknowledge that all of them were not so visionary. There was a most ingenious doctor, who seemed to be perfectly versed in the whole nature and system of government. This illustrious person had very usefully employed his studies, in finding out effectual remedies for all diseases and corruptions to which the several kinds of public administration are subject, by the vices or infirmities of those who govern, as well as by the licentiousness of those who are to obey. For instance: whereas all writers and reasoners have agreed, that there is a strict universal resemblance between the natural and the political body; can there be any thing more evident, than that the health of both must be preserved, and the diseases cured, by the same prescriptions? It is allowed, that senators and great councils are often troubled

ha podido persuadirseles hasta ahora de que practiquen la larga abstinencia que requiere la prescripción.

Capítulo VI

Siguen las referencias sobre la Academia. —El autor propone algunas mejoras, que son recibidas con todo honor.

En la escuela de arbitristas políticos pasé mal rato. Los profesores parecían, a mi juicio, haber perdido el suyo; era una escena que me ponía triste siempre que la recordaba. Aquellas pobres gentes presentaban planes para persuadir a los monarcas de que escogieran los favoritos en razón de su sabiduría, capacidad y virtud; enseñaran a los ministros a consultar el bien común; recomendaran el mérito, las grandes aptitudes y los servicios eminentes; instruyeran a los príncipes en el conocimiento de que su verdadero interés es aquel que se asienta sobre los mismos cimientos que el de su pueblo; escogieran para los empleos a las personas capacitadas para desempeñarlos; con otras extrañas imposibles quimeras que nunca pasaron por cabeza humana, y confirmaron mi vieja observación de que no hay cosa tan irracional y extravagante que no haya sido sostenida como verdad alguna vez por un filósofo.
with redundant, ebullient, and other peccant humours; with many diseases of the head, and more of the heart; with strong convulsions, with grievous contractions of the nerves and sinews in both hands, but especially the right; with spleen, flatus, vertigos, and deliriums; with scrofulous tumours, full of fetid purulent matter; with sour eructations: with canine appetites, and crudeness of digestion, besides many others, needless to mention.

This doctor therefore proposed, “that upon the meeting of the senate, certain physicians should attend it the three first days of their sitting, and at the close of each day’s debate feel the pulses of every senator; after which, having maturely considered and consulted upon the nature of the several maladies, and the methods of cure, they should on the fourth day return to the senate house, attended by their apothecaries stored with proper medicines; and before the members sat, administer to each of them lenitives, aperitives, abstersives, corrosives, restringents, palliatives, laxatives, cephalalgics, icteries, apophlegmatics, acoustics, as their several cases required; and, according as these medicines should operate, repeat, alter, or omit them, at the next meeting.”

This project could not be of any great expense to the public; and might in my poor opinion, be of much use for the despatch of business, in those countries where senates have any share in the legislative power; beget unanimity, where senates have any share in the legislative power; beget unanimity, acortar los debates, abrir unas pocas bocas que hoy están cerradas, cerrar muchas más que hoy están abiertas, moderar la petulancia de los viejos, despabilar a los tontos y sospechar a los desocupados.

Además, como es general la queja de que los favoritos de príncipes padecen de muy flaca memoria, proponía el mismo doctor que aquel que estuviese al servicio de un primer ministro, después de haberle dado conocimiento de los asuntos con la mayor brevedad y las más sencillas palabras posibles, diese al tal un tirón de narices o un puntapié en el vientre, o le pisase los callos, o le tirase tres veces de las orejas, o le pasa-
ears, or run a pin into his breech; or pinch his arm black and blue, to prevent forgetfulness; and at every levee day, repeat the same operation, till the business were done, or absolutely refused."

He likewise directed, “that every senator in the great council of a nation, after he had delivered his opinion, and argued in the defence of it, should be obliged to give his vote directly contrary; because if that were done, the result would infallibly terminate in the good of the public.”

When parties in a state are violent, he offered a wonderful contrivance to reconcile them. The method is this: You take a hundred leaders of each party; you dispose them into couples of such whose heads are nearest of a size; then let two nice operators saw off the occiput of each couple at the same time, in such a manner that the brain may be equally divided. Let the occiputs, thus cut off, be interchanged, applying each to the head of his opposite party-man. It seems indeed to be a work that requires some exactness, but the professor assured us, “that if it were dexterously performed, the cure would be infallible.” For he argued thus: “that the two half brains being left to debate the matter between themselves within the space of one skull, would soon come to a good understanding, and produce that moderation, as well as regularity of thinking, so much to be wished for in the heads of those, who imagine they come into the world only to watch and govern its motion: and as to the difference of brains, in quantity or quality, among those who are directors in faction, the doctor assured us, from his own knowledge, that “it was a perfect trifle.”

I heard a very warm debate between two professors, about the most commodious and effectual ways and means of raising money, without grieving the subject. The first affirmed, “the justest method would be, to lay a certain tax upon vices and folly; and the sum fixed upon every man to be rated, after the fairest manner, by a jury of his neighbours.” The second was of an opinion directly contrary; “to tax those se con un alfiler los calzones y algunos pun- tos más, o le pellizcase en un brazo hasta acardenárselo, a fin de evitar el olvido; operación que debía repetir todos los días cuando el ministro se levantara, hasta que el asunto se hiciere o fuera totalmente rechazado.

Igualmente pretendía que a todo senador del gran consejo de un país, una vez que hubiese dado su opinión y arguido en defensa de ella, se le obligase a votar justamente en sentido contrario; pues si esto se hiciere, el resultado conduciría infaliblemente al bien público.

Presentaba un invento maravilloso para reconciliar a los partidos de un Estado cuando se mostrasen violentos. El método es éste: tomar cien adalides de cada partido; disponerlos por parejas, acoplan- do a los que tuviesen la cabeza de tamaño más parecido; hacer luego que dos buenos operadores asieren los occipucios de cada pareja al mismo tiempo, de modo que los cerebros queden divididos igualmente, y cambiar los occipucios de esta manera aserrados, aplicando cada uno a la cabeza del contrario. Ciertamente, se ve que la operación exige bastante exactitud; pero el profesor nos aseguró que si se realizaba con destreza, la curación sería infalible. Y lo razonaba así: los dos medios cerebros llevados a debatir la cuestión entre sí en el espacio de un cráneo llegarían pronto a una inteligencia y producirían aquella moderación y regularidad de pensamiento tan de desear en las cabezas de quienes imaginan haber venido al mundo para guardar y gobernar su movimiento. Y en cuanto a la diferencia que en cantidad o en calidad pudiera existir entre los cerebros de quienes están al frente de las facciones, nos aseguró el doctor, basado en sus conocimientos, que era una cosa insignificante de todo punto.

Oí un acalorado debate entre dos profesores que discutían los caminos y procedimientos más cómodos y eficaces para allegar recursos de dinero sin oprimir a los súbditos. Afirmando que el primeramente más justo era establecer un impuesto sobre los vicios y la necedad, debiendo fijar, según los medios más perfectos, la cantidad por que cada uno hubiere de contribuir un jurado de sus vecinos. El segundo era de opinión abier- tamente contraria, y quería imponer tributo a
qualities of body and mind, for which men chiefly value themselves; the rate to be more or less, according to the degrees of excelling; the decision whereof should be left entirely to their own breast." The highest tax was upon men who are the greatest favourites of the other sex, and the assessments, according to the number and nature of the favours they have received; for which, they are allowed to be their own vouchers. Wit, valour, and politeness, were likewise proposed to be largely taxed, and collected in the same manner, by every person’s giving his own word for the quantum of what he possessed. But as to honour, justice, wisdom, and learning, they should not be taxed at all; because they are qualifications of so singular a kind, that no man will either allow them in his neighbour or value them in himself.

The women were proposed to be taxed according to their beauty and skill in dressing, wherein they had the same privilege with the men, to be determined by their own judgment. But constancy, chastity, good sense, and good nature, were not rated, because they would not bear the charge of collecting.

To keep senators in the interest of the crown, it was proposed that the members should raffle for employment; every man first taking an oath, and giving security, that he would vote for the court, whether he won or not; after which, the losers had, in their turn, the liberty of raffling upon the next vacancy. Thus, hope and expectation would be kept alive; none would complain of broken promises, but impute their disappointments wholly to fortune, whose shoulders are broader and stronger than those of a ministry.

Another professor showed me a large paper of instructions for discovering plots and conspiracies against the government. He advised great statesmen to examine into the diet of all suspected persons; their times of eating; upon which side they lay in bed; with which hand they wipe their posteriors; take a strict view of their excrements, and, from the colour, the odour, the taste, the consistence, the crudeness or maturity of digestion, form a judgment of their thoughts and designs; because

aquellas cualidades del cuerpo y de la inteligencia en las cuales basan principalmente los hombres su valor; la cuota sería mayor o menor, según los grados de superioridad, y su determinación quedaría por entero a la conciencia de cada uno. El impuesto más alto pesaría sobre los hombres que se ven particularmente favorecidos por el sexo contrario, y la tasa estaría de acuerdo con el número y la naturaleza de los favores que hubiesen recibido, lo que los interesados mismos serían llamados a atestiguar. El talento, el valor y la cortesía debían ser asimismo fuertemente gravados, y el cobro, igualmente fundado en la palabra que diese cada persona respecto de la cantidad que poseyera. Pero el honor, la justicia, la prudencia y el estudio no habían de ser gravados en absoluto, pues son cualidades de índole tan singular, que nadie se las reconoce a su vecino ni en sí mismo las estima.

Se proponía que las mujeres contribuyeran según su belleza y su gracia para vestir; para lo cual, como con los hombres se hacia, tendrían el privilegio de ser clasificadas según su criterio propio. Pero no se tasarían la constancia, la castidad, la bondad ni el buen sentido, porque no compensarían el gasto de la recaudación.

Para que no se apartasen los senadores del interés de la Corona se proponía que se rifaran entre ellos los empleos, después de jurar y garantizar todos que votarían con la corte, tanto si ganaban como si perdían, reservando a los que perdiésemos el derecho, a su vez, de rifarse la vacante próxima. Así se mantendrían la esperanza y la expectación y nadie podría quejarse de promesas incumplidas, ya que sus desengaños serían por entero imputables a la Fortuna, cuyas espaldas son más anchas y robustas que las de un ministerio.

Otro profesor me mostró un largo escrito con instrucciones para descubrir conjurias y conspiraciones contra el Gobierno. Estaba todo él redactado con gran agudeza y contenía muchas observaciones a la par curiosas y útiles para los políticos; pero, a mi juicio no era completo. Así me permití decírselo al autor, con el ofrecimiento de proporcionarle, si lo tenía a bien, algunas adiciones. Recibí mi propuesta mucho más complacido de lo que es uso entre escritores, y especialmente entre los de la cuerda arbitrista, y manifestó que recibiría
men are never so serious, thoughtful, and intent, as when they are at stool, which he found by frequent experiment; for, in such conjunctures, when he used, merely as a trial, to consider which was the best way of murdering the king, his ordure would have a tincture of green; but quite different, when he thought only of raising an insurrection, or burning the metropolis.

The whole discourse was written with great acuteness, containing many observations, both curious and useful for politicians; but, as I conceived, not altogether complete. This I ventured to tell the author, and offered, if he pleased, to supply him with some additions. He received my proposition with more compliance than is usual among writers, especially those of the projecting species, professing “he would be glad to receive further information.”

I told him, “that in the kingdom of Tribnia, (3) by the natives called Langdon, (4) where I had sojourned some time in my travels, the bulk of the people consist in a manner wholly of discoverers, witnesses, informers, accusers, prosecutors, evidences, swearers, together with their several subservient and subaltern instruments, all under the colours, the conduct, and the pay of ministers of state, and their deputies. The plots, in that kingdom, are usually the workmanship of those persons who desire to raise their own characters of profound politicians; to restore new vigour to a crazy administration; to stifle or divert general discontents; to fill their coffers with forfeitures; and raise, or sink the opinion of public credit, as either shall best answer their private advantage. It is first agreed and settled among them, what suspected persons shall be accused of a plot; then, effectual care is taken to secure all their letters and papers, and put the owners in chains. These papers are delivered to a set of artists, very dexterous in finding out the mysterious meanings of words, syllables, and letters: for instance, they can discover a close stool, to signify a privy council; a flock of geese, a senate; a lame dog, an invader; the plague, a standing army; a buzzard, a prime minister; the gout, a high priest; a gibbet, a secretary of state; a chamber pot, a committee of...
grandees; a sieve, a court lady; a broom, a revolution; a mouse-trap, an employment; a bottomless pit, a treasury; a sink, a court; a cap and bells, a favourite; a broken reed, a court of justice; an empty tun, a general; a running sore, the administration. (5)

“When this method fails, they have two others more effectual, which the learned among them call acrostics and anagrams. First, they can decipher all initial letters into political meanings. Thus N, shall signify a plot; B, a regiment of horse; L, a fleet at sea; or, secondly, by transposing the letters of the alphabet in any suspected paper, they can lay open the deepest designs of a discontented party. So, for example, if I should say, in a letter to a friend, ‘Our brother Tom has just got the piles,’ a skilful decipherer would discover, that the same letters which compose that sentence, may be analysed into the following words, ‘Resist—, a plot is brought home—The tour.’ And this is the **anagrammatic** method.”

The professor made me great acknowledgments for communicating these observations, and promised to make honourable mention of me in his treatise.

I saw nothing in this country that could invite me to a longer continuance, and began to think of returning home to England.

CHAPTER VII.

[The author leaves Lagado: arrives at Maldonada. No ship ready. He takes a short voyage to Glubbdubdrib. His reception by the governor.]

The continent, of which this kingdom is apart, extends itself, as I have reason to believe, eastward, to that unknown tract of America westward of California; and north, to the Pacific Ocean, which is not above a hundred and fifty miles from Lagado; where there is a good port, and much commerce with the great de corte; una escoba, una revolución; una ratonera, un empleo; un pozo sin fondo, un tesoro; una sentina, una corte; un gorro y unos escalofríos, un favorito; una caña rota, un tribunal de justicia; un túnel vacío, un general; una llaga supurando, la Administración.

Por si este método fracasa, tienen otros dos más eficaces, llamados por los que entre aquellas gentes se tienen como instruidos, acrósticos y anagramas. Con el primero pueden descifrar significados políticos en todas las letras iniciales: así, _N_ significa conjura; _B_ , regimiento de caballería; _L_ , una flota en el mar. Con el segundo, trasponiendo las letras del alfabeto en cualquier papel sospechoso, pueden dejar al descubierto los más profundos designios de un partido disgustado. Así, por ejemplo, si yo escribo a un amigo una carta que a nuestro hermano Tom acaban de salirle almorranas, un descifrador hábil descubrirá que las mismas letras que componen esta sentencia pueden analizarse en las palabras siguientes: resistir—hay una conspiración dentro del país—el viaje (1). Y éste es el método **anagramático**.

El profesor me expresó su gran reconocimiento por haberle comunicado estas observaciones y me prometió hacer honorífica mención de mí en su tratado.

Y como no encontraba en esta ciudad nada que me invitase a más dilatada permanencia, empecé a pensar en volverme a mi país.
island of Luggnagg, situated to the north-west about 29 degrees north latitude, and 140 longitude. This island of Luggnagg stands south-eastward of Japan, about a hundred leagues distant. There is a strict alliance between the Japanese emperor and the king of Luggnagg; which affords frequent opportunities of sailing from one island to the other. I determined therefore to direct my course this way, in order to my return to Europe. I hired two mules, with a guide, to show me the way, and carry my small baggage. I took leave of my noble protector, who had shown me so much favour, and made me a generous present at my departure.

My journey was without any accident or adventure worth relating. When I arrived at the port of Maldonada (for so it is called) there was no ship in the harbour bound for Luggnagg, nor likely to be in some time. The town is about as large as Portsmouth. I soon fell into some acquaintance, and was very hospitably received. A gentleman of distinction said to me, “that since the ships bound for Luggnagg could not be ready in less than a month, it might be no disagreeable amusement for me to take a trip to the little island of Glubbdubdrib, about five leagues off to the south-west.” He offered himself and a friend to accompany me, and that I should be provided with a small convenient bark for the voyage.

Glubbdubdrib, as nearly as I can interpret the word, signifies the island of sorcerers or magicians. It is about one third as large as the Isle of Wight, and extremely fruitful: it is governed by the head of a certain tribe, who are all magicians. This tribe marries only among each other, and the eldest in succession is prince or governor. He has a noble palace, and a park of about three thousand acres, surrounded by a wall of hewn stone twenty feet high. In this park are several small enclosures for cattle, corn, and gardening.

The governor and his family are served and attended by domestics of a kind somewhat unusual. By his skill in necromancy he has a power of calling whom he pleases from the dead, and con la gran isla de Luggnagg, situada en el Noroeste, a unos 29 grados de latitud Norte y a 140 de longitud. Esta isla de Luggnagg está al Sudeste y a unas cien leguas de distancia del Japón. Existe una estrecha alianza entre el emperador japonés y el rey de Luggnagg, que ofrece frecuentes ocasiones de navegar de una isla a otra; en consecuencia, determiné dirigir el viaje en ese sentido para mi regreso a Europa. Alquilé un guía con dos mulas para que me enseñase el camino y trasladar mi reducido equipaje. Me despedí de mi noble protector, que tanto me había favorecido y que me hizo un generoso presente a mi partida.

No me ocurrió en el viaje aventura ni incidente digno de mención. Cuando llegué al puerto de Maldodano —que tal es su nombre— no había ningún barco destinado para Luggnagg, ni era probable que lo hubiese en algún tiempo. Pronto hice algunos conocimientos y fui hospitalariamente recibido. Un distinguido caballero me dijo que, pues los barcos destinados para Luggnagg no estarían listos antes de un mes, podría yo encontrar agradable esparcimiento en una excursión a la pequeña isla de Glubbdrubdrib, situada unas cinco leguas al Sudoeste. Se ofreció con un amigo suyo para acompañarme y así mismo para proporcionarme una pequeña embarcación adecuada a la travesía.

Glubbdrubdrib, interpretando la palabra con la mayor exactitud posible, viene a significar la isla de los hechiceros o de los mágicos. Es como una tercera parte de la isla de White y en extremo fértil; está gobernada por el jefe de una cierta tribu en que todos son mágicos. Los matrimonios se verifican solamente entre individuos de la tribu, y el más viejo es por sucesión príncipe o gobernador. Este príncipe tiene un hermoso palacio y un parque de tres mil acres aproximadamente, rodeado de un muro de piedra tallada de veinte pies de altura. En este parque hay pequeños cercados para ganados, mies y jardinería.

Sirven y dan asistencia al gobernador y a su familia criados de una especie en cierto modo extraordinaria. Su habilidad en la nigromancia concede a este gobernador el poder de resucitar a quien quiere y
commanding their service for twenty-four hours, but no longer; nor can he call the same persons up again in less than three months, except upon very extraordinary occasions.

When we arrived at the island, which was about eleven in the morning, one of the gentlemen who accompanied me went to the governor, and desired admittance for a stranger, who came on purpose to have the honour of attending on his highness. This was immediately granted, and we all three entered the gate of the palace between two rows of guards, armed and dressed after a very antic manner, and with something in their countenances that made my flesh creep with a horror I cannot express. We passed through several apartments, between servants of the same sort, ranked on each side as before, till we came to the chamber of presence; where, after three profound obeisances, and a few general questions, we were permitted to sit on three stools, near the lowest step of his highness’s throne. He understood the language of Balnibarbi, although it was different from that of this island. He desired me to give him some account of my travels; and, to let me see that I should be treated without ceremony, he dismissed all his attendants with a turn of his finger; at which, to my great astonishment, they vanished in an instant, like visions in a dream when we awake on a sudden. I could not recover myself in some time, till the governor assured me, “that I should receive no hurt:” and observing my two companions to be under no concern, who had been often entertained in the same manner, I began to take courage, and related to his highness a short history of my several adventures; yet not without some hesitation, and frequently looking behind me to the place where I had seen those domestic spectres. I had the honour to dine with the governor, where a new set of ghosts served up the meat, and waited at table. I now observed myself to be less terrified than I had been in the morning. I stayed till sunset, but humbly desired his highness to excuse me for not accepting his invitation of lodging in the palace. My two friends and I lay at a private house in the town adjoining, which is the capital of this little island; and the next morning we returned to pay our duty to
the governor, as he was pleased to command us.

After this manner we continued in the island for ten days, most part of every day with the governor, and at night in our lodging. I soon grew so familiarized to the sight of spirits, that after the third or fourth time they gave me no emotion at all: or, if I had any apprehensions left, my curiosity prevailed over them. For his highness the governor ordered me “to call up whatever persons I would choose to name, and in whatever numbers, among all the dead from the beginning of the world to the present time, and command them to answer any questions I should think fit to ask; with this condition, that my questions must be confined within the compass of the times they lived in. And one thing I might depend upon, that they would certainly tell me the truth, for lying was a talent of no use in the lower world.”

I made my humble acknowledgments to his highness for so great a favour. We were in a chamber, from whence there was a fair prospect into the park. And because my first inclination was to be entertained with scenes of pomp and magnificence, I desired to see Alexander the Great at the head of his army, just after the battle of Arbela: which, upon a motion of the governor’s finger, immediately appeared in a large field, under the window where we stood. Alexander was called up into the room: it was with great difficulty that I understood his Greek, and had but little of my own. He assured me upon his honour “that he was not poisoned, but died of a bad fever by excessive drinking.”

Next, I saw Hannibal passing the Alps, who told me “he had not a drop of vinegar in his camp.”

I saw Caesar and Pompey at the head of their troops, just ready to engage. I saw the former, in his last great triumph. I desired that the senate of Rome might appear before me, in one large chamber, and an assembly of somewhat a later age in counterview, in another. The first seemed to be an assembly of heroes and demigods; the other, a knot of peddlars,
pick-pockets, highwayman, and bullies.

The governor, at my request, gave the sign for Caesar and Brutus to advance towards us. I was struck with a profound veneration at the sight of Brutus, and could easily discover the most consummate virtue, the greatest intrepidity and firmness of mind, the truest love of his country, and general benevolence for mankind, in every lineament of his countenance. I observed, with much pleasure, that these two persons were in good intelligence with each other; and Caesar freely confessed to me, “that the greatest actions of his own life were not equal, by many degrees, to the glory of taking it away.” I had the honour to have much conversation with Brutus; and was told, “that his ancestor Junius, Socrates, Epaminondas, Cato the younger, Sir Thomas More, and himself were perpetually together;” a sextumvirate, to which all the ages of the world cannot add a seventh.

It would be tedious to trouble the reader with relating what vast numbers of illustrious persons were called up to gratify that insatiable desire I had to see the world in every period of antiquity placed before me. I chiefly fed mine eyes with beholding the destroyers of tyrants and usurpers, and the restorers of liberty to oppressed and injured nations. But it is impossible to express the satisfaction I received in my own mind, after such a manner as to make it a suitable entertainment to the reader.

CHAPTER VIII.

[A further account of Glubbdubdrib. Ancient and modern history corrected.]

Having a desire to see those ancients who were most renowned for wit and learning, I set apart one day on purpose. I proposed that Homer and Aristotle might appear at the head of all their commentators; but these were so buhoneros, raterillos, salteadores de caminos y rufianes.

El gobernador, a ruego mío, hizo señas para que avanzasen hacia nosotros César y Bruto. Sentí súbitamente profunda veneración a la vista de Bruto, en cuyo semblante todas las facciones revelaban la más consumada virtud, la más grande intrepidez, firmeza de entendimiento, el más verdadero amor a su país y general benevolencia para la especie humana. Observé con gran satisfacción que estas dos personas estaban en estrecha inteligencia, y César me confesó francamente que no igualaban con mucho las mayores hazañas de su vida a la gloria de habérsela quitado. Tuve el honor de conversar largamente con Bruto, y me dijo que sus antecesores, Junius, Sócrates, Epaminondas, Catón el joven, sir Thomas Moore y él estaban juntos a perpetuidad; sextunvirato al que entre todas las edades del mundo no pueden añadir un séptimo nombre.

Sería fatigosa para el lector la referencia del gran número de gentes esclavizadas que fueron llamadas para satisfacer el deseo insaciable de ver ante mí el mundo en las diversas edades de la antigüedad. Satisface mis ojos particularmente mirando a los asesinos de tiranos y usurpadores y a los restauradores de la libertad de naciones oprimidas y agraviadas. Pero me es imposible expresar la satisfacción que en el ánimo experimenté de modo que pueda resultar conveniente recreo para el lector.
numerosous, that some hundreds were forced to attend in the court, and outward rooms of the palace. I knew, and could distinguish those two heroes, at first sight, not only from the crowd, but from each other. Homer was the taller and comelier person of the two, walked very erect for one of his age, and his eyes were the most quick and piercing I ever beheld. Aristotle stooped much, and made use of a staff. His visage was meagre, his hair lank and thin, and his voice hollow. I soon discovered that both of them were perfect strangers to the rest of the company, and had never seen or heard of them before; and I had a whisper from a ghost who shall be nameless, “that these commentators always kept in the most distant quarters from their principals, in the lower world, through a consciousness of shame and guilt, because they had so horribly misrepresented the meaning of those authors to posterity.” I introduced Didymus and Eustathius to Homer, and prevailed on him to treat them better than perhaps they deserved, for he soon found they wanted a genius to enter into the spirit of a poet. But Aristotle was out of all patience with the account I gave him of Scotus and Ramus, as I presented them to him; and he asked them, “whether the rest of the tribe were as great dunces as themselves?”

I then desired the governor to call up Descartes and Gassendi, with whom I prevailed to explain their systems to Aristotle. This great philosopher freely acknowledged his own mistakes in natural philosophy, because he proceeded in many things upon conjecture, as all men must do; and he found that Gassendi, who had made the doctrine of Epicurus as palatable as he could, and the vortices of Descartes, were equally to be exploded. He predicted the same fate to ATTRACTION, whereof the present learned are such zealous asserters. He said, “that new systems of nature were but new fashions, which would vary in every age; and even those, who pretend to demonstrate them from mathematical principles, would flourish but a short period of time, and be out of vogue when that was determined.”

I spent five days in conversing with many others of the ancient numerosos, que varios cientos de ellos tuvieron que esperar en el patio y en las habitaciones exteriores del palacio. Conocí y pude distinguir a ambos héroes a primera vista, no sólo entre la multitud, sino también a uno de otro. Homero era el más alto y hermoso de los dos, caminaba muy derecho para su edad y tenía los ojos más vivos y penetrantes que he contemplado en mi vida. Aristóteles marchaba muy inclinado y apoyándose en un báculo; era de cara delgada, pelo lacio y fino y su voz hueca. Aprecié en seguida que ambos eran perfectamente extraños al resto de la compañía y nunca habían visto a aquellas personas ni oído hablar de ellas hasta aquel momento, y un espíritu cuyo nombre no diré me susurró al oído que estos comentadores se mantenían siempre en el mundo interior en los parajes más apartados de aquellos que ocupaban sus inspiradores, a causa del sentimiento de vergüenza y de culpa que les producía haber desfigurado tan horriblemente para la posteridad la significación de aquellos autores. Hice la presentación de Dídimo y Eustathio a Homero, recomendándole que los tratase mejor de lo que quizá merceían, pues él al instante descubrió que habían pretendido encajar un genio en el espíritu de un poeta. Pero Aristóteles no pudo guardar calma ante la cuenta que le di de quiénes eran Escoto y Ramus al tiempo que los presentaba, y les preguntó si todos los demás de la tribu eran tan zotes como ellos.

Pedí después al gobernador que llamase a Descartes y a Gassendi, a quienes hice que explicaran sus sistemas de Aristóteles. Este gran filósofo reconoció francamente sus errores en filosofía natural, debido a que en muchas cosas había tenido que proceder por conjeturas, como todos los hombres, y observó que Gassendi —que había hecho la doctrina de Epicuro todo lo agradable que había podido— y los vórtices de Descartes estaban igualmente desacreditados. Predijo la misma suerte a la atracción, de que los eruditos de hoy son tan ardientes partidarios. Añadió que los nuevos sistemas naturales no son sino nuevas modas, llamadas a variar con los siglos; y aun aquellos cuya demostración se pretende asentar sobre principios matemáticos florecerán solamente un corto espacio de tiempo y caerán en la indiferencia cuando les llegue la hora.

I spent five days in conversing with many others of the ancient...
learned. I saw most of the first Roman emperors. I prevailed on the
governor to call up Heliogabalus’s cooks to dress us a dinner, but they
could not show us much of their skill, for want of materials. A helot of
Agesilaus made us a dish of Spartan broth, but I was not able to get down
a second spoonful.

The two gentlemen, who conducted me to the island, were pressed by their
private affairs to return in three days, which I employed in seeing some of the
modern dead, who had made the greatest figure, for two or three hundred years
past, in our own and other countries of Europe; and having been always a great
admirer of old illustrious families, I desired the governor would call up a
dozen or two of kings, with their ancestors in order for eight or nine
generations. But my disappointment was grievous and unexpected. For,
instead of a long train with royal diadems, I saw in one family two
fiddlers, three spruce courtiers, and an Italian prelate. In another, a barber, an
abbot, and two cardinals. I have too great a veneration for crowned heads,
to dwell any longer on so nice a subject. But as to counts, marquises, dukes,
earls, and the like, I was not so scrupulous. And I confess, it was not
without some pleasure, that I found myself able to trace the particular
features, by which certain families are distinguished, up to their originals. I
could plainly discover whence one family derives a long chin; why a second
has abounded with knaves for two generations, and fools for two more;
why a third happened to be crack-brained, and a fourth to be
sharpers; whence it came, what Polydore Virgil says of a certain great house, NEC VIR
FORTIS, NEC FOEMINA CASTA; how cruelty, falsehood, and cowardice, grew
to be characteristics by which certain families are distinguished as much as by
their coats of arms; who first brought the pox into a noble house, which has
lineally descended scrofulous tumours to their posterity. Neither could I
wonder at all this, when I saw such an interruption of lineages, by pages,
lackeys, valets, coachmen, gamesters, fiddlers, players, captains, and
pickpockets.
I was chiefly disgusted with modern history. For having strictly examined all the persons of greatest name in the courts of princes, for a hundred years past, I found how the world had been misled by prostitute writers, to ascribe the greatest exploits in war, to cowards; the wisest counsel, to fools; sincerity, to flatterers; Roman virtue, to betrayers of their country; piety, to atheists; chastity, to sodomites; truth, to informers: how many innocent and excellent persons had been condemned to death or banishment by the practising of great ministers upon the corruption of judges, and the malice of factions: how many villains had been exalted to the highest places of trust, power, dignity, and profit: how great a share in the motions and events of courts, councils, and senates might be challenged by bawds, whores, pimps, parasites, and buffoons. How low an opinion I had of human wisdom and integrity, when I was truly informed of the springs and motives of great enterprises and revolutions in the world, and of the contemptible accidents to which they owed their success.

Here I discovered the roguery and ignorance of those who pretend to write anecdotes, or secret history; who send so many kings to their graves with a cup of poison; will repeat the discourse between a prince and chief minister, where no witness was by; unlock the thoughts and cabinets of ambassadors and secretaries of state; and have the perpetual misfortune to be mistaken. Here I discovered the true causes of many great events that have surprised the world; how a whore can govern the back-stairs, the back-stairs a council, and the council a senate. A general confessed, in my presence, “that he got a victory purely by the force of cowardice and ill conduct;” and an admiral, “that, for want of proper intelligence, he beat the enemy, to whom he intended to betray the fleet.” Three kings protested to me, “that in their whole reigns they never did once prefer any person of merit, unless by mistake, or treachery of some minister in whom they confided; neither would they do it if they were to live again:” and they showed, with great strength of reason, “that the royal throne could not be

Quedé disgustado muy particularmente de la historia moderna; pues habiendo examinado con detenimiento a las personas de mayor nombre en las cortes de los príncipes durante los últimos cien años, descubrí cómo escritores prostituidos han extraviciado al mundo hasta hacerle atribuir las mayores hazañas de la guerra a los cobardes, los más sabios consejos a los necios, sinceridad a los aduladores, virtud romana a los traídores a su país, piedad a los ateos, veracidad a los espías; cuántas personas inocentes y meritorias han sido condenadas a muerte o destierro por secretas influencias de grandes ministros sobre corrompidos jueces y por la maldad de los bandos; cuántos villanos se han visto exaltados a los más altos puestos de confianza, poder, dignidad y provecho; cuán grande es la parte que en los actos y acontecimientos de cortes, consejos y senados puede imputarse a parásitos y bufones. ¡Qué bajo concepto formé de la sabiduría y la integridad humana cuando estuve realmente enterado de cuáles son los resortes y motivos de las grandes empresas y revoluciones del mundo, y cuáles los despreciables accidentes a que deben su victoria!
supported without corruption, because that positive, confident, restiff temper, which virtue infused into a man, was a perpetual clog to public business."

I had the curiosity to inquire in a particular manner, by what methods great numbers had procured to themselves high titles of honour, and prodigious estates; and I confined my inquiry to a very modern period: however, without gratting upon present times, because I would be sure to give no offence even to foreigners (for I hope the reader need not be told, that I do not in the least intend my own country, in what I say upon this occasion,) a great number of persons concerned were called up; and, upon a very slight examination, discovered such a scene of infamy, that I cannot reflect upon it without some seriousness. Perjury, oppression, subornation, fraud, pandarism, and the like infirmities, were among the most excusable arts they had to mention; and for these I gave, as it was reasonable, great allowance. But when some confessed they owed their greatness and wealth to sodomy, or incest; others, to the prostituting of their own wives and daughters; others, to the betraying of their country or their prince; some, to poisoning; more to the perverting of justice, in order to destroy the innocent, I hope I may be pardoned, if these discoveries inclined me a little to abate of that profound veneration, which I am naturally apt to pay to persons of high rank, who ought to be treated with the utmost respect due to their sublime dignity, by us their inferiors.

I had often read of some great services done to princes and states, and desired to see the persons by whom those services were performed. Upon inquiry I was told, “that their names were to be found on no record, except a few of them, whom history has represented as the vilest of rogues and traitors.” As to the rest, I had never once heard of them. They all appeared with dejected looks, and in the meanest habit; most of them telling me, “they died in poverty and disgrace, and the rest on a scaffold or a gibbet.”
Among others, there was one person, whose case appeared a little singular. He had a youth about eighteen years old standing by his side. He told me, “he had for many years been commander of a ship; and in the sea fight at Actium had the good fortune to break through the enemy’s great line of battle, sink three of their capital ships, and take a fourth, which was the sole cause of Antony’s flight, and of the victory that ensued; that the youth standing by him, his only son, was killed in the action.” He added, “that upon the confidence of some merit, the war being at an end, he went to Rome, and solicited at the court of Augustus to be preferred to a greater ship, whose commander had been killed; but, without any regard to his pretensions, it was given to a boy who had never seen the sea, the son of Libertina, who waited on one of the emperor’s mistresses. Returning back to his own vessel, he was charged with neglect of duty, and the ship given to a favourite page of Publicola, the vice-admiral; whereupon he retired to a poor farm at a great distance from Rome, and there ended his life.” I was so curious to know the truth of this story, that I desired Agrippa might be called, who was admiral in that fight. He appeared, and confirmed the whole account: but with much more advantage to the captain, whose modesty had extenuated or concealed a great part of his merit.

I was surprised to find corruption grown so high and so quick in that empire, by the force of luxury so lately introduced; which made me less wonder at many parallel cases in other countries, where vices of all kinds have reigned so much longer, and where the whole praise, as well as pillage, has been engrossed by the chief commander, who perhaps had the least title to either.

As every person called up made exactly the same appearance he had done in the world, it gave me melancholy reflections to observe how much the race of human kind was degenerated among us within these hundred years past; how the pox, under all its consequences and denominations had altered every lineament of an English countenance; shortened the
size of bodies, unbraced the nerves, relaxed the sinews and muscles, introduced a sallow complexion, and rendered the flesh loose and rancid.

I descended so low, as to desire some English yeoman of the old stamp might be summoned to appear; once so famous for the simplicity of their manners, diet, and dress; for justice in their dealings; for their true spirit of liberty; for their valour, and love of their country. Neither could I be wholly unmoved, after comparing the living with the dead, when I considered how all these pure native virtues were prostituted for a piece of money by their grand-children; who, in selling their votes and managing at elections, have acquired every vice and corruption that can possibly be learned in a court.

CHAPTER IX.

[The author returns to Maldonada. Sails to the kingdom of Luggnagg. The author confined. He is sent for to court. The manner of his admittance. The king’s great lenity to his subjects.]

The day of our departure being come, I took leave of his highness, the Governor of Glubbdubdrib, and returned with my two companions to Maldonada, where, after a fortnight’s waiting, a ship was ready to sail for Luggnagg. The two gentlemen, and some others, were so generous and kind as to furnish me with provisions, and see me on board. We had one violent storm, and were under a necessity of steering westward to get into the trade wind, which holds for above sixty leagues. On the 21st of April, 1708, we sailed into the river of Clumegnig, which is a seaport town, at the south-east point of Luggnagg. We cast anchor within a league of the town, and made a signal for a pilot. Two of them came on board in less than half an hour, by whom we were guided between certain shoals and rocks, which are very dangerous in the passage, to a large basin, where a fleet
may ride in safety within a cable’s length of the town-wall.

Some of our sailors, whether out of treachery or inadvertence, had informed the pilots “that I was a stranger, and great traveller;” whereof these gave notice to a custom-house officer, by whom I was examined very strictly upon my landing. This officer spoke to me in the language of Balnibarbi, which, by the force of much commerce, is generally understood in that town, especially by seamen and those employed in the customs. I gave him a short account of some particulars, and made my story as plausible and consistent as I could; but I thought it necessary to disguise my country, and call myself a Hollander; because my intentions were for Japan, and I knew the Dutch were the only Europeans permitted to enter into that kingdom. I therefore told the officer, “that having been shipwrecked on the coast of Balnibarbi, and cast on a rock, I was received up into Laputa, or the flying island (of which he had often heard), and was now endeavouring to get to Japan, whence I might find a convenience of returning to my own country.” The officer said, “I must be confined till he could receive orders from court, for which he would write immediately, and hoped to receive an answer in a fortnight.” I was carried to a convenient lodging with a sentry placed at the door; however, I had the liberty of a large garden, and was treated with humanity enough, being maintained all the time at the king’s charge. I was invited by several persons, chiefly out of curiosity, because it was reported that I came from countries very remote, of which they had never heard.

I hired a young man, who came in the same ship, to be an interpreter; he was a native of Luggnagg, but had lived some years at Maldonada, and was a perfect master of both languages. By his assistance, I was able to hold a conversation with those who came to visit me; but this consisted only of their questions, and my answers.

The despatch came from court about the time we expected. It

Algunos de nuestros marineros, fuese por traición o por inadvertencia, habían enterado a los prácticos de que yo era extranjero y viajero de alguna cuenta, de lo cual informaron éstos al oficial de la aduana que me examinó muy detenidamente al saltar a tierra. Este oficial me habló en el idioma de Balnibarbi, que, por razón del mucho comercio, conoce en aquella ciudad casi todo el mundo, especialmente los marinos y los empleados de aduanas. Le di breve cuenta de algunos detalles, haciendo mi relación tan espesiosa y sólida como pude; pero creí necesario ocultar mi nacionalidad, cambiándomela por la de holandeses, porque tenía propósito de ir al Japón y sabía que los holandeses eran los únicos europeos a quienes se admitía en aquel reino. De suerte que dije al oficial que, habiendo naufragado en la costa de Balnibarbi y estrellándose la embarcación contra una roca, me recibieron en Laputa, la isla volante —de la que él había oído hablar con frecuencia—, e intentaba a la hora presente llegar al Japón, para de allí regresar a mi país cuando se me ofreciera oportunidad. El oficial me dijo que había de quedar preso hasta que él recibiese órdenes de la corte, adonde escribiría inmediatamente, y que esperaba recibir respuesta en quince días. Me llevaron a un cómodo alojamiento y me pusieron centinela a la puerta; sin embargo, tenía el desahogo de un hermoso jardín y me trataban con bastante humanidad, aparte de coger a cargo del rey mi mantenimiento. Me visitaron varias personas, llevadas principalmente de su curiosidad, porque se cuidó que llegaba de países muy remotos de que no habían oído hablar nunca.

Asalarié en calidad de intérprete a un joven que había ido en el mismo barco; era natural de Luggnagg, pero había vivido varios años en Maldonado y era consumado maestro en ambas lenguas. Con su ayuda pude mantener conversación con quienes acudían a visitarme, aunque ésta consistía sólo en sus preguntas y mis contestaciones.

En el tiempo esperado, aproximadamente, llegó el despacho de la corte. Con-
gracious: 1 amable, cortés, gentil, benevolente, indulgente [lenient] 2 elegante, de buen gusto, grato

gracious 1 kind; indulgent and beneficent to inferiors. 2 (of God) merciful, benign. 3 poet. kindly, courteous. 4 a polite epithet used of royal persons or their acts (the gracious speech from the throne). Amable, cordial.

benign 1 gentle, mild, kindly. 2 fortunate, salutary. 3 (of the climate, soil, etc.) mild, favourable. 4 Med. (of a disease, tumour, etc.) not malignant.

bien 1. adj. Agradable, bello, bien, bonito, guapo, hermoso, lindo, mujer, señor, simpático, atractivo, bonito.

handsome adj. (handsomer, handsomest) 1 (of a person) good-looking. Hermoso, bello, bien parecido. 2 (of a building etc.) imposing, attractive. Hermoso, bello, bien parecido.

gentil 1. adj. Idólatra o pagano. 2 adj. Afable, benévolo, piadoso. 3 fig. Temporal, suave, apacible.

gracioso - witty, amusing, charming

gracious: 1 kind; indulgent to inferiors. 2 (of God) merciful, benign. 3 poet. kindly, courteous. 4 a polite epithet used of royal persons or their acts (the gracious speech from the throne). Amable, cordial.

benign: 1 gentle, mild, kindly. 2 fortunate, salutary. 3 (of the climate, soil, etc.) mild, favourable. 4 Med. (of a disease, tumour, etc.) not malignant.


gentle: 1. adj. Idólatra o pagano. 2 adj. Afable, benévolo, piadoso. 3 fig. Temporal, suave, apacible.

gracioso: - witty, amusing, charming

To return from this digression. When I had crept within four yards of the throne, I raised myself gently upon my knees, and then striking my forehead seven times against the ground, I pronounced the following words, as they had been taught me the night before.

Ickpling gloffthrob squut seruri Clihiop mlashnalt zwin tnoalbukhff shliophad gurdubh asht. This is the compliment, established by the laws of the land, for all persons admitted to the king's presence. It may be rendered into English thus: “May your celestial majesty outlive the sun, eleven moons and a half!” To this the king returned some answer, which, although I could not understand, yet I replied as I had been directed: Fluf drin Yalerick dwuldom prastrad mirpush, which properly signifies, “My tongue is in the mouth of my friend;” and by this expression was meant, that I desired leave to bring my interpreter; whereupon the young man already mentioned was accordingly introduced, by whose intervention I answered as many questions as his majesty could put in above an hour. I spoke in the Balnibarbian tongue, and my interpreter delivering me my common expenses.

The king was much delighted with my company, and ordered his Bliffmarklub, or high-chamberlain, to appoint a lodging in the court for me and my interpreter; with a daily allowance for my table, and a large purse of gold for my common expenses.

Le sirvió de mucho agrado al rey mi compañía y ordenó a su bliffmarklub, o sea su gran chambelán, que se me habilitase en palacio un alojamiento para mí y mi intérprete, con una asignación diaria para la mesa y una gran bolsa de oro para mis gastos ordinarios.

I staid three months in this country, out of perfect obedience to his majesty; who was pleased highly to favour me, ligo de incurrir en el real desagrado. Yo mismo oi al rey dar instrucciones para que se azotase a uno de sus pájaros porque, correspondiéndole ocuparse de la limpieza del suelo después de una ejecución, dejó de hacerlo por mala voluntad, y efecto de esta negligencia, un joven caballero en quien se fundaban grandes esperanzas, al ser recibido en audiencia fue desgraciadamente envenenado, sin que en aquella ocasión estuviese en el ánimo del rey quitarle la vida. Pero este buen príncipe era tan benévolo, que perdonó los azotes al pobre paje bajo la promesa de que no volvería a hacerlo sin órdenes especiales.

Dejando esta digresión: cuando me había arrostrado hasta cuatro yardas del trono, me enderecé dulcemente sobre las rodillas, y luego, golpeando siete veces con la frente en el suelo, pronuncié las siguientes palabras, que me habían enseñado la noche antes: Ickpling gloffthrob squut seruri Clihiop mlashnalt zwin tnoalbukhff shliophad gurdubh asht. Éste es el cumplimiento establecido por las leyes del país para todas las personas admitidas a la presencia del rey. Puede trasladarse al español de este modo: «Pueda Vuestra Celeste Majestad sobrevivir al sol once meses y medio.» A esto, el rey me dio una respuesta que no pude entender, pero a la que repliqué conforme a la instrucción recibida: Fluf drin Yalerick dwuldom prastrad mirpush, que puntualmente significa: «Mi lengua está en la boca de mi amigo.» Con esta expresión di a comprender que suplicaba licencia para que mi intérprete pasase; el joven de que ya he hecho mención fue, en consecuencia, introducido, y con su intervención respondí a cuantas preguntas quiso hacerme Su Majestad en más de una hora. Yo hablaba en lengua balnibarba y mi intérprete traducía el sentido a la de Luggnagg.

neglect, they are in danger of incurring his royal displeasure. I myself heard him give directions, that one of his pages should be whipped, whose turn it was to give notice about washing the floor after an execution, but maliciously had omitted it; by which neglect a young lord of great hopes, coming to an audience, was unfortunately poisoned, although the king at that time had no design against his life. But this good prince was so gracious as to forgive the poor page his whapping, upon promise that he would do so no more, without special orders.

To return from this digression. When I had crept within four yards of the throne, I raised myself gently upon my knees, and then striking my forehead seven times against the ground, I pronounced the following words, as they had been taught me the night before.

Ickpling gloffthrob squut seruri Clihiop mlashnalt zwin tnoalbukhff shliophad gurdubh asht. This is the compliment, established by the laws of the land, for all persons admitted to the king’s presence. It may be rendered into English thus: “May your celestial majesty outlive the sun, eleven moons and a half!” To this the king returned some answer, which, although I could not understand, yet I replied as I had been directed: Fluf drin Yalerick dwuldom prastrad mirpush, which properly signifies, “My tongue is in the mouth of my friend;” and by this expression was meant, that I desired leave to bring my interpreter; whereupon the young man already mentioned was accordingly introduced, by whose intervention I answered as many questions as his majesty could put in above an hour. I spoke in the Balnibarbian tongue, and my interpreter delivering me my common expenses.

The king was much delighted with my company, and ordered his Bliffmarklub, or high-chamberlain, to appoint a lodging in the court for me and my interpreter; with a daily allowance for my table, and a large purse of gold for my common expenses.

I staid three months in this country, out of perfect obedience to his majesty; who was pleased highly to favour me,
and made me very honourable offers. But I thought it more consistent with prudence and justice to pass the remainder of my days with my wife and family.

CHAPTER X.

[The Luggnagrians commended. A particular description of the Struldbrugs, with many conversations between the author and some eminent persons upon that subject.]

The Luggnagrians are a polite and generous people; and although they are not without some share of that pride which is peculiar to all Eastern countries, yet they show themselves courteous to strangers, especially such who are countenanced by the court. I had many acquaintance, and among persons of the best fashion; and being always attended by my interpreter, the conversation we had was not disagreeable.

One day, in much good company, I was asked by a person of quality, “whether I had seen any of their STRULDBRUGS, or immortals?” I said, “I had not;” and desired he would explain to me “what he meant by such an appellation, applied to a mortal creature.” He told me “that sometimes, though very rarely, a child happened to be born in a family, with a red circular spot in the forehead, directly over the left eyebrow, which was an infallible mark that it should never die.” The spot, as he described it, “was about the compass of a silver threepence, but in the course of time grew larger, and changed its colour; for at twelve years old it became green, so continued till five and twenty, then turned to a deep blue: at five and forty it grew coal black, and as large as an English shilling; but never admitted any further alteration.” He said, “these births were so rare, that he did not believe there could be above eleven hundred struldbrugs, of both sexes, in the whole kingdom; of
peculiar (En) odd, queer, unusual, singular, especial, funny. Raro, extraño, especial, singular
peculiar (Sp) particular, característico, curioso, característico, typical, particular, individual

which he computed about fifty in the metropolis, and, among the rest, a young girl born; about three years ago: that these productions were not peculiar to any family, but a mere effect of chance; and that the children of the STRULDBRUGS themselves were equally mortal with the rest of the people."

I freely own myself to have been struck with inexpressible delight, upon hearing this account: and the person who gave it me happening to understand the Balnibarbian language, which I spoke very well, I could not forbear [abstain] breaking out into expressions, perhaps a little too extravagant. I cried out, as in a rapture, "Happy nation, where every child hath at least a chance for being immortal! Happy people, who enjoy so many living examples of ancient virtue, and have masters ready to instruct them in the wisdom of all former ages! but happiest, beyond all comparison, are those excellent STRULDBRUGS, who, being born exempt from that universal calamity of human nature, have their minds free and disengaged, without the weight and depression of spirits caused by the continual apprehensions of death!" I discovered my admiration that I had not observed any of these illustrious persons at court; the black spot on the forehead being so remarkable a distinction, that I could not have easily overlooked it: and it was impossible that his majesty, a most judicious prince, should not provide himself with a good number of such wise and able counsellors. Yet perhaps the virtue of those reverend sages was too strict for the corrupt and libertine manners of a court: and we often find by experience, that young men are too opinionated and volatile to be guided by the sober dictates of their seniors. However, since the king was pleased to allow me access to his royal person, I was resolved, upon the very first occasion, to deliver my opinion to him on this matter freely and at large, by the help of my interpreter; and whether he would please to take my advice or not, yet in one thing I was determined, that his majesty having frequently offered me an establishment in this country, I would, with great thankfulness, accept the favour, and pass my life here in the conversation of those superior beings the STRULDBRUGS, if calculating that they are in the metropolis cincuenta, and that it figured among the rest a child naceda hacia unos tres años. Estos productos no eran privativos de familia ninguna, sino simple efecto del azar, y los hijos de los mismos struldrugs eran mortales, como el común de las gentes.

Volatility significa volátil, en el sentido técnico de evaporable rápidamente, pero volatile es común para describir situaciones como explosivo, inestable, y para personas como voluble, veleidoso, inconstante, fugaz, voluble, veleidoso, inconstante, fugaz, tran-

Volatility y volubilidad comparten el sentido técnico de evaporación y el sentido figurado de volubilidad, veleidad, inconstancia.

Voluble no es voluble, sino locuaz, hablador, charlatán, suelto de lengua, facundo, verboso; en cambio el español voluble es bastante negativo, como changeable, moody [veleidoso], fickle [mudable], inconstant. De modo paralelo, volubility equivale a locuacidad, verbosidad, soltura de lengua, charlatanería, mientras que volubilidad sugiere instability, fickleness.
they would please to admit me.”

The gentleman to whom I addressed my discourse, because (as I have already observed) he spoke the language of Balnibarbi, said to me, with a sort of a smile which usually arises from pity to the ignorant, “that he was glad of any occasion to keep me among them, and desired my permission to explain to the company what I had spoke.” He did so, and they talked together for some time in their own language, whereof I understood not a syllable, neither could I observe by their countenances, what impression my discourse had made on them. After a short silence, the same person told me, “that his friends and mine (so he thought fit to express himself) were very much pleased with the judicious remarks I had made on the great happiness and advantages of immortal life, and they were desirous to know, in a particular manner, what scheme of living I should have formed to myself, if it had fallen to my lot to have been born a STRULDBRUG.”

I answered, “it was easy to be eloquent on so copious and delightful a subject, especially to me, who had been often apt to amuse myself with visions of what I should do, if I were a king, a general, or a great lord: and upon this very case, I had frequently run over the whole system how I should employ myself, and pass the time, if I were sure to live for ever.

“That, if it had been my good fortune to come into the world a STRULDBRUG, as soon as I could discover my own happiness, by understanding the difference between life and death, I would first resolve, by all arts and methods, whatsoever, to procure myself riches. I might reasonably expect, in about two hundred years, to be the wealthiest man in the kingdom. In the second place, I would, from my earliest youth, apply myself to the study of arts and sciences, by which I should arrive in time to excel all others in learning. Lastly, I would carefully record every action and event of consequence, that happened in the public, impartially draw the characters of the several successions of princes and great ministers of state, with my own
observations on every point. I would exactly set down the several changes in customs, language, fashions of dress, diet, and diversions. By all which acquirements, I should be a living treasure of knowledge and wisdom, and certainly become the oracle of the nation.

"I would never marry after threescore, but live in a hospitable manner, yet still on the saving side. I would entertain myself in forming and directing the minds of hopeful young men, by convincing them, from my own remembrance, experience, and observation, fortified by numerous examples, of the usefulness of virtue in public and private life. But my choice and constant companions should be a set of my own immortal brotherhood; among whom, I would elect a dozen from the most ancient, down to my own contemporaries. Where any of these wanted fortunes, I would provide them with convenient lodges round my own estate, and have some of them always at my table; only mingling a few of the most valuable among you mortals, whom length of time would harden me to lose with little or no reluctance, and treat your posterity after the same manner; just as a man diverts himself with the annual succession of pinks and tulips in his garden, without regretting the loss of those which withered the preceding year.

"These STRULDBRUGS and I would mutually communicate our observations and memorials, through the course of time; remark the several gradations by which corruption steals into the world, and oppose it in every step, by giving perpetual warning and instruction to mankind; which, added to the strong influence of our own example, would probably prevent that continual degeneracy of human nature so justly complained of in all ages.

"Add to this, the pleasure of seeing the various revolutions of states and empires; the changes in the lower and upper world; ancient cities in ruins, and obscure villages become the seats of kings; famous rivers lessening into shallow brooks; the ocean leaving one

con observaciones propias sobre cada punto. Escribiría exactamente los varios cambios de costumbres, idiomas, modas en el vestido, en la comida y en las diversiones. Con estas adquisiciones, sería un tesoro viviente de conocimiento y sabiduría, y la nación me tendría, ciertamente, por un oráculo.

No me casaría después de los sesenta años, sino que viviría en prácticas de caridad, aunque siempre dentro de la economía. Me entretendría en formar y dirigir los entendimientos de jóvenes que prometiesen buen fruto, convenciéndoles, basado en mis propios recuerdos, experiencias y observaciones, robustecidos por ejemplos numerosos, de la utilidad de la virtud en la vida pública y privada. Pero mi preferencia y mis constantes compañeros estarian en un grupo de mis propios hermanos en inmortalidad, entre los cuales escogería una docena, desde los más ancianos hasta mis contemporáneos. Si alguno de ellos careciese de medios de fortuna, yo le asistiría con alojamientos cómodos, instalados en torno de mis propiedades, y siempre sentaría a mi mesa a varios de ellos, mezclando sólo algunos de los de mayor mérito de entre vosotros los mortales, a quienes perdería, endurecido por lo dilatado del tiempo, con poco o ningún disgusto, para tratar después lo mismo a su posteridad; justamente como un hombre encuentra diversión en el sucederse anual de los claveles y tulipanes de su jardín, sin lamentar la pérdida de los que marchitó el año precedente.

Estos strulbrugs y yo nos comunicaríamos mutuamente nuestros recuerdos y observaciones a través delcurso de los tiempos; anotaríamos las diversas gradaciones por que la corrupción se desliza en el mundo y la atajábamos en todos sus pasos, dando a la Humanidad constante aviso e instrucción; lo que, unido a la poderosa influencia de nuestro propio ejemplo, evitaría probablemente la continua degeneración de la naturaleza humana, de que con tanta justicia se han quejado todas las edades.

Añádanse a esto los placeres de ver las varias revoluciones de estados e imperios, los cambios del mundo inferior y superior, antiguas ciudades en ruinas y pueblos obscuros convertirse en sedes de reyes; famosos ríos reducidos a números arroyos; el océano dejar unas pla-
coast dry, and overwhelming another; the discovery of many countries yet unknown; barbarity overrunning the politest nations, and the most barbarous
become civilized. I should then see the
discovery of the longitude, the perpetual
motion, the universal medicine, and
many other great inventions, brought to
the utmost perfection.

"What wonderful discoveries should
we make in astronomy, by outliving and
confirming our own predictions; by
observing the progress and return of
comets, with the changes of motion in
the sun, moon, and stars!"

I enlarged upon many other topics,
which the natural desire of endless life,
and sublunary happiness, could easily
furnish me with. When I had ended, and
the sum of my discourse had been
interpreted, as before, to the rest of the
company, there was a good deal of talk
among them in the language of the
country, not without some laughter at my
expense. At last, the same gentleman
who had been my interpreter, said,
"he was desired by the rest to set me
down in a few mistakes, which I had
fallen into through the common
imbecility of human nature, and upon
that allowance was less answerable
for them. That this breed of
STRULDBRUGS was peculiar
to their country, for there were no such people
either in Balni barbi or Japan, where
he had the honour to be ambassador
from his majesty, and found the natives
in both those kingdoms very hard to
believe that the fact was possible:
and it appeared from my astonishment
when he first mentioned the matter to
me, that I received it as a thing wholly
new, and scarcely to be credited. That
in the two kingdoms above
mentioned, where during his
residence, he had conversed very
much, he observed long life to be the
universal desire and wish of mankind.
That whoever had one foot in the gra-
ve was sure to hold back the other as
strongly as he could. That the oldest
had still hopes of living one day longer,
and looked on death as the greatest evil,
from which nature always prompted
him to retreat. Only in this island
of Luggnagg the appetite for living was
not so eager, from the continual
example of the STRULDBRUGS before

peculiar (En) odd, queer, unusual, singular, es-
special, funny. Raro, extraño, especial, singu-
lar
peculiar (Sp) particular, característico, curioso,
characteristic, typical, particular, individual
their eyes.

“That the system of living contrived by me, was unreasonable and unjust; because it supposed a perpetuity of youth, health, and vigour, which no man could be so foolish to hope, however extravagant he may be in his wishes. That the question therefore was not, whether a man would choose to be always in the prime of youth, attended with prosperity and health; but how he would pass a perpetual life under all the usual disadvantages which old age brings along with it. For although few men will avow their desires of being immortal, upon such hard conditions, yet in the two kingdoms before mentioned, of Balnibarbi and Japan, he observed that every man desired to put off death some time longer, let it approach ever so late: and he rarely heard of any man who died willingly, except he were incited by the extremity of grief or torture. And he appealed to me, whether in those countries I had travelled, as well as my own, I had not observed the same general disposition.”

After this preface, he gave me a particular account of the STRULDBRUGS among them. He said, “they commonly acted like mortals till about thirty years old; after which, by degrees, they grew melancholy and dejected, increasing in both till they came to fourscore. This he learned from their own confession: for otherwise, there not being above two or three of that species born in an age, they were too few to form a general observation by. When they came to fourscore years, which is reckoned the extremity of living in this country, they had not only all the follies and infirmities of other old men, but many more which arose from the dreadful prospect of never dying. They were not only opinionative, peevious [complaining], covetous, morose, vain, talkative, but incapable of friendship, and dead to all natural affection, which never descended below their grandchildren. Envy and impotent desires are their prevailing passions. But those objects against which their envy seems principally directed, are the vices of the younger sort and the deaths of the old. By reflecting on the former, the vista.

El sistema de vida que yo imaginaba era, por lo que me dijo, irracional e injusto, porque suponía una perpetuidad de juventud, salud y vigor que ningún hombre podía ser tan insensato que esperase, por muy extravagantes que fuesen sus deseos. La cuestión, por tanto, no era si un hombre preferiría estar siempre en lo mejor de su juventud, acompañada de salud y prosperidad, sino cómo le iría en una vida eterna con las desventajas corrientes que la edad avanzada trae consigo. Aunque pocos hombres confiesan sus deseos de ser inmortales bajo tan duras condiciones, era indudable que en los dos reinos antes mencionados de Balnibarbi y del Japón él halló que todos deseaban alejar la muerte algún tiempo más, que se llegase lo más tarde posible siempre, y por excepción oyó hablar de algún hombre que muriese voluntariamente, a no ser que a ello le impulsase un gran extremo de aflicción o de tortura. Y apelaba a mí para que dijese si no había observado la misma disposición general en los países por que había viajado y aun en mí mismo.

For otherwise, there not being above two or three of that species born in an age, they were too few to form a general observation by. When they came to fourscore years, which is reckoned the extremity of living in this country, they had not only all the follies and infirmities of other old men, but many more which arose from the dreadful prospect of never dying. They were not only opinionative, peevish [complaining], covetous, morose, vain, talkative, but incapable of friendship, and dead to all natural affection, which never descended below their grandchildren. Envy and impotent desires are their prevailing passions. But those objects against which their envy seems principally directed, are the vices of the younger sort and the deaths of the old. By reflecting on the former,
they find themselves cut off from all possibility of pleasure; and whenever they see a funeral, they lament and repine that others have gone to a harbour of rest to which they themselves never can hope to arrive. They have no remembrance of anything but what they learned and observed in their youth and middle-age, and even that is very imperfect; and for the truth or particulars of any fact, it is safer to depend on common tradition, than upon their best recollections. The least miserable among them appear to be those who turn to dotage, and entirely lose their memories; these meet with more pity and assistance, because they want many bad qualities which abound in others.

“If a STRULDBRUG happen to marry one of his own kind, the marriage is dissolved of course, by the courtesy of the kingdom, as soon as the younger of the two comes to be fourscore; for the law thinks it a reasonable indulgence, that those who are condemned, without any fault of their own, to a perpetual continuance in the world, should not have their misery doubled by the load of a wife.

“As soon as they have completed the term of eighty years, they are looked on as dead in law; their heirs immediately succeed to their estates; only a small pittance is reserved for their support; and the poor ones are maintained at the public charge. After that period, they are held incapable of any employment of trust or profit; they cannot purchase lands, or take leases; neither are they allowed to be witnesses in any cause, either civil or criminal, not even for the decision of meers and bounds.

“At ninety, they lose their teeth and hair; they have at that age no distinction of taste, but eat and drink whatever they can get, without relish or appetite. The diseases they were subject to still continue, without increasing or diminishing. In talking, they forget the common appellation of things, and the names of persons, even of those who are their nearest friends and relations. For the same reason, they never can amuse themselves with reading, because their memory will not serve to carry them from the beginning of a sentence to the

---

repine: express discontent; complain; kick; plain; sound off; quetch; kvetch

dotage: a state or period of senile decay marked by decline of mental poise and alertness

misery: miseria, pobreza pero también desdicha, angustia, pena, triateza, sufrimiento

---
end; and by this defect, they are deprived of the only entertainment whereof they might otherwise be capable.

The language of this country being always upon the flux, the STRULDBRUGS of one age do not understand those of another; neither are they able, after two hundred years, to hold any conversation (farther than by a few general words) with their neighbours the mortals; and thus they lie under the disadvantage of living like foreigners in their own country.”

This was the account given me of the STRULDBRUGS, as near as I can remember. I afterwards saw five or six of different ages, the youngest not above two hundred years old, who were brought to me at several times by some of my friends; but although they were told, “that I was a great traveller, and had seen all the world,” they had not the least curiosity to ask me a question; only desired “I would give them SLUMSKUDASK,” or a token of remembrance; which is a modest way of begging, to avoid the law, that strictly forbids it, because they are provided for by the public, although indeed with a very scanty allowance.

They are despised and hated by all sorts of people. When one of them is born, it is reckoned ominous, and their birth is recorded very particularly so that you may know their age by consulting the register, which, however, has not been kept above a thousand years past, or at least has been destroyed by time or public disturbances. But the usual way of computing how old they are, is by asking them what kings or great persons they can remember, and then consulting history; for infallibly the last prince in their mind did not begin his reign after they were four-score years old.

They were the most mortifying sight I ever beheld; and the women more horrible than the men. Besides the usual deformities in extreme old age, they acquired an additional ghastliness, in proportion to their number of years, which is not to be described; and among half a dozen, I soon distinguished which was the eldest, although there was not
above a century or two between them.

The reader will easily believe, that from what I had heard and seen, my keen appetite for perpetuity of life was much abated. I grew heartily ashamed of the pleasing visions I had formed; and thought no tyrant could invent a death into which I would not run with pleasure, from such a life. The king heard of all that had passed between me and my friends upon this occasion, and rallied me very pleasantly; wishing I could send a couple of STRULDBRUGS to my own country, to arm our people against the fear of death; but this, it seems, is forbidden by the fundamental laws of the kingdom, or else I should have been well content with the trouble and expense of transporting them.

I could not but agree, that the laws of this kingdom relative to the STRULDBRUGS were founded upon the strongest reasons, and such as any other country would be under the necessity of enacting, in the like circumstances. Otherwise, as avarice is the necessary consequence of old age, those immortals would in time become proprietors of the whole nation, and engross the civil power, which, for want of abilities to manage, must end in the ruin of the public.

CHAPTER XI.

[The author leaves Luggnagg, and sails to Japan. From thence he returns in a Dutch ship to Amsterdam, and from Amsterdam to England.]

I thought this account of the STRULDBRUGS might be some entertainment to the reader, because it seems to be a little out of the common way; at least I do not remember to have met the like in any book of travels that has come to my hands: and if I am deceived, my excuse must be, that it is necessary for travellers who describe the same country, very often to agree in dwelling on the same particulars, without deserving the censure of having de otras arriba de un siglo o dos.

El lector podrá con facilidad creer que, a causa de lo que acababa de mirar y oir, mengué mucho mi apetito de vivir eternamente. Me avergoncé muy de veras de las agradables ilusiones que había concebido, y pensé que no había tirano capaz de inventar una muerte en que yo no me precipitase con gusto huyendo de tal vida. Supo el rey todo lo pasado entre mis amigos y yo, e hizo de mi gran donaire. Dijome que sería de desear que enviasse a mi país una pareja de struldbugs para armar a nuestras gentes contra el miedo a la muerte. Pero esto, a lo que parece, está prohibido por las leyes fundamentales del reino; de otro modo, hubiese echado sobre mí con gusto el precio y la molestia de transportarlos.

Tuve que convenir en que las leyes de aquel reino relativas a los struldbugs estaban fundadas en las más sólidas razones, y que las mismas ditaría cualquier otro país en análogas circunstancias. De otra manera, como la avaricia es la necesaria consecuencia de la vejez, aquellos inmortales acabarían con el tiempo por ser propietarios de toda la nación y monopolizar el poder civil, lo que, por falta de disposiciones para administrar, terminaría en la ruina del común.
borrowed or transcribed from those who wrote before them.

There is indeed a perpetual commerce between this kingdom and the great empire of Japan; and it is very probable, that the Japanese authors may have given some account of the Struldburgs; but my stay in Japan was so short, and I was so entirely a stranger to the language, that I was not qualified to make any inquiries. But I hope the Dutch, upon this notice, will be curious and able enough to supply my defects.

His majesty having often pressed me to accept some employment in his court, and finding me absolutely determined to return to my native country, was pleased to give me his license to depart; and honoured me with a letter of recommendation, under his own hand, to the Emperor of Japan. He likewise presented me with four hundred and forty-four large pieces of gold (this nation delighting in even numbers), and a red diamond, which I sold in England for eleven hundred pounds.

On the 6th of May, 1709, I took a solemn leave of his majesty, and all my friends. This prince was so gracious as to order a guard to conduct me to Glanguenstald, which is a royal port to the south-west part of the island. In six days I found a vessel ready to carry me to Japan, and spent fifteen days in the voyage.

We landed at a small port-town called Xamoschi, situated on the south-east part of Japan; the town lies on the western point, where there is a narrow strait leading northward into along arm of the sea, upon the north-west part of which, Yedo, the metropolis, stands. At landing, I showed the custom-house officers my letter from the king of Luggnagg to his imperial majesty. They knew the seal perfectly well; it was as broad as the palm of my hand. The impression was, A KING LIFTING UP A LAME BEGGAR FROM THE EARTH. The magistrates of the town, hearing of my letter, received me as a public minister. They provided me with carriages and servants, and bore my charges to Yedo; where I was admitted

*gracious*: amiable, cortés, gentil, benevolente, indulgente [lenient] 2 elegante, de buen gusto, grato

*gracious*: 1 kind; indulgent and beneficent to inferiors. 2 (of God) merciful, benign. 3 poet. kindly, courteous. 4 a polite epithet used of royal persons or their acts (the gracious speech from the throne). Amable, cordial.

*benign*: 1 gentle, mild, kindly. 2 fortunate, salutary. 3 (of the climate, soil, etc.) mild, favourable. 4 a polite epithet used of inferiors. 2 (of God) merciful, kindly, courteous. 4 to, grato

*gentil*: Idólatra o pagano. 2. fig. A cable, benévolo, piadoso. 2 elegante, de buen gusto, grato

*Strauldburg*: 1. adj. Afable, benévolo, piadoso. 2. fig. Afable, benévolo, piadoso. 2 elegante, de buen gusto, grato

*handsome*: 1. adj. Idólatra o pagano. Gentile (En) 2. Brios, galán, gracioso. GENTIL mozo; GENTIL donaire. 3. notable. GENTIL desvergüenza; GENTIL disparate. 4. Amable, cortés. kind, pleasant, charming, obliging, comely

*gentle*: dulce tierno, dócil, suave, cortés, ligero, cuidadoso, pasado moderado

Swift's Gulliver's

In the year 1701, as the English and Dutch had then the greatest trade in the East Indies, I set sail upon this voyage. I had been a lieutenant in the Royal Navy, was forty years of age, and had served in several engagements; but the last was the most signal. I had taken part in the battle of the red diamond, which I sold in England for five hundred pounds.

Hay, ciertamente, constante comercio entre aquel reino y el gran imperio del Japón, y es muy probable que los autores japoneses hayan dado a conocer en algún modo a los struldburgs; pero mi estancia en el Japón fue tan corta y yo desconocía el lenguaje tan por completo, que no estaba capacitado para hacer investigación ninguna. Confío, sin embargo, en que los holandeses, noticiosos de esto, tendrán curiosidad y méritos suficientes para suplir mis faltas.

Su Majestad, que muchas veces me había instado para que aceptase un empleo en la corte, viéndome absolutamente decidido a volverme a mi país natal, se dignó concederme licencia para partir y me honró recomendándome en una carta de su propia mano al emperador del Japón. Asimismo me hizo un presente de cuatrocientas monedas grandes de oro —esta nación se perece por los números que se leen igual cualquiera que sea el lado por que se comience— y un diamante rojo que vendí en Inglaterra por mil cien libras.

El 6 de mayo de 1709 me despedí solemnemente de Su Majestad y de todos mis amigos. Este príncipe me dispensó la gracia de mandar que una guardia me condujese a Glanguenstald, puesto real situado en la parte Sudoeste de la isla. A los seis días encontré náu-vio que me llevase al Japón, y tardé en el viaje quince días.

Desembarcamos en el pequeño puerto llamado Jamoshi, situado en la parte Sudeste del Japón; la ciudad cae al Oeste, donde hay un estrecho angosto que conduce por el Norte a un largo brazo de mar en cuya parte Noroeste se asienta Yedo, la metrópoli. Al desembarcar mostré a los oficiales de la aduana la carta del rey de Luggnagg para Su Majestad Imperial. Conocían perfectamente el sello, que era de gran
de como la palma de mi mano, y cuya impresión representaba a un rey levantando del suelo a un mendigo liado. Los magistrados de la ciudad, sabedores de que llevaba tal carta sobre mí, me recibieron como a un mi-nistro público; pusieron a mi disposición carruajes y servidumbre y paga-

"LAME BEGGAR FROM THE EARTH""
to an audience, and delivered my letter, which was opened with great ceremony, and explained to the Emperor by an interpreter, who then gave me notice, by his majesty’s order, “that I should signify my request, and, whatever it were, it should be granted, for the sake of his royal brother of Luggnagg.” This interpreter was a person employed to transact affairs with the Hollanders. He soon conjectured, by my countenance, that I was a European, and therefore repeated his majesty’s commands in Low Dutch, which he spoke perfectly well. I answered, as I had before determined, “that I was a Dutch merchant, shipwrecked in a very remote country, whence I had travelled by sea and land to Luggnagg, and then took shipping for Japan; where I knew my countrymen often traded, and with some of these I hoped to get an opportunity of returning into Europe: I therefore most humbly entreated [besought] his royal favour, to give order that I should be conducted in safety to Nangasac.” To this I added another petition, “that for the sake of my patron the king of Luggnagg, his majesty would condescend to excuse my performing the ceremony imposed on my countrymen, of trampling upon the crucifix: because I had been thrown into his kingdom by my misfortunes, without any intention of trading.” When this latter petition was interpreted to the Emperor, he seemed a little surprised; and said, “he believed I was the first of my countrymen who ever made any scruple in this point; and that he began to doubt, whether I was a real Hollander, or not; but rather suspected I must be a Christian. However, for the reasons I had offered, but chiefly to gratify the king of Luggnagg by an uncommon mark of his favour, he would comply with the singularity of my humour; but the affair must be managed with dexterity, and his officers should be commanded to let me pass, as it were by forgetfulness. For he assured me, that if the secret should be discovered by my countrymen the Dutch, they would cut my throat in the voyage.” I returned my thanks, by the interpreter, for so unusual a favour; and some troops being at that time on their march to Nangasac, the commanding officer had orders to convey me safe thither, with particular instructions about the...
business of the crucifix.

On the 9th day of June, 1709, I arrived at Nangasac, after a very long and troublesome journey. I soon fell into the company of some Dutch sailors belonging to the Amboyna, of Amsterdam, a stout ship of 450 tons. I had lived long in Holland, pursuing my studies at Leyden, and I spoke Dutch well. The seamen soon knew whence I came last: they were curious to inquire into my voyages and course of life. I made up a story as short and probable as I could, but concealed the greatest part. I knew many persons in Holland. I was able to invent names for my parents, whom I pretended to be obscure people in the province of Gelderland. I would have given the captain (one Theodorus Vangrult) what he pleased to ask for my voyage to Holland; but understanding I was a surgeon, he was contented to take half the usual rate, on condition that I would serve him in the way of my calling. Before we took shipping, I was often asked by some of the crew, whether I had performed the ceremony above mentioned? I evaded the question by general answers; “that I had satisfied the Emperor and court in all particulars.” However, a malicious rogue of a skipper went to an officer, and pointing to me, told him, “I had not yet trampled on the crucifix;” but the other, who had received instructions to let me pass, gave the rascal twenty strokes on the shoulders with a bamboo; after which I was no more troubled with such questions.

Nothing happened worth mentioning in this voyage. We sailed with a fair wind to the Cape of Good Hope, where we staid only to take in fresh water. On the 10th of April, 1710, we arrived safe at Amsterdam, having lost only three men by sickness in the voyage, and a fourth, who fell from the foremast into the sea, not far from the coast of Guinea. From Amsterdam I soon after set sail for England, in a small vessel belonging to that city.

On the 16th of April we put in at the Downs. I landed next morning, and saw once more my native country, after an absence of five years and six months complete. I went straight to Redriff, where I arrived the same day at two in to del negocio del crucifijo.

El 9 de junio de 1709 llegué a Nangasac, después de muy larga y molestia travesía. Pronto caí en la compañía de unos marineros holandeses pertenecientes al Amboyna, de Amsterdam, sólido barco de cuatrocientas cincuenta toneladas. Yo había vivido mucho tiempo en Holanda, con ocasión de hallarme estudiando en Leyden y hablaba bien el holandés. Los marineros supieron pronto de dónde llegaba y mostraron curiosidad por averiguar mis viajes y mi vida. Les conté una historia tan corta y verosímil como pude, pero ocultando la mayor parte. Conocía muchas personas en Holanda y pude inventarme nombres para mis padres, de quienes dije que eran gente obscura de la provincia de Gelderland. Hubiera podido pagar al capitán —un tal Teodoro Vangrult— lo que me hubiese pedido por el viaje a Holanda; pero enterado él de que yo era cirujano, se conformó con la mitad del precio corriente a cambio de que le prestase los servicios de mi profesión. Antes de embarcar me preguntaron muchas veces algunos de los tripulantes si había cumplido la ceremonia a que ya he hecho referencia. Evadi la respuesta diciendo en términos vagos que había satisfecho al emperador y a la corte en todo lo preciso. Sin embargo, un brinobazo paje de escoba se acercó a un oficial y, apuntándome con el dedo, dijo que yo no había aún hollado el crucifijo; pero el otro, ya advertido para dejarme pasar, dio al tunante veinte latigazos en las espaldas con un bambú; después de lo cual no volvió a molestarme nadie con tales preguntas.

No me sucedió en esta travesía nada digno de mención. Navegamos con buen viento hasta el Cabo de Buena Esperanza, donde sólo nos detuvimos para hacer aguada. El 16 de abril llegamos salvos a Amsterdam, sin más pérdidas que tres hombres por enfermedad durante el viaje y otro que cayó al mar desde el palo de trinquete, no lejos de la costa de Guinea. En Amsterdam embarqué poco después para Inglaterra en un pequeño navío perteneciente a este país.
the afternoon, and found my wife and family in good health.

I continued at home with my wife and children about five months, in a very happy condition, if I could have learned the lesson of knowing when I was well. I left my poor wife big with child, and accepted an advantageous offer made me to be captain of the Adventurer, a stout merchantman of 350 tons: for I understood navigation well, and being grown weary of a surgeon’s employment at sea, which, however, I could exercise upon occasion, I took a skilful young man of that calling, one Robert Purefoy, into my ship. We set sail from Portsmouth upon the 7th day of September, 1710; on the 14th we met with Captain Pocock, of Bristol, at Teneriffe, who was going to the bay of Campechy to cut logwood. On the 16th, he was parted from us by a storm; I heard since my return, that his ship foundered, and none escaped but one cabin boy. He was an honest man, and a good sailor, but a little too positive in his own opinions, which was the cause of his destruction, as it has been with several others; for if he had followed my advice, he might have been safe at home with his family at this time, as well as myself.

I had several men who died in my ship of calentures, so that I was forced to get recruits out of Barbadoes and

founder 1 fundador 2. ir a pique, fallar, fracasar, hundirse, sumergirse, naufragar
founder — v. 1 a intr. (of a ship) fill with water and sink. b tr. cause (a ship) to founder. 2 intr. (of a plan etc.) fail. 3 intr. (of earth, a building, etc.) fall down or in, give way. 4 a intr. (of a horse or its rider) fall to the ground, fall from lameness, stick fast in mud etc. b tr. cause (a horse) to break down, esp. with founder.

the afternoon, and found my wife and family in good health.

la tarde, y encontré a mi mujer y familia en buena salud.

FIN DE LA TERCERA PARTE
Upon the 9th day of May, 1711, one James Welch came down to my cabin, and said, “he had orders from the captain to set me ashore.” I expostulated with him, but in vain; neither would he so much as tell me who their new captain was. They forced me into the long-boat, letting me put on my best suit of clothes, which were as good as new, and take a small bundle of linen, but no arms, except my hanger; and they were so civil as not to search my pockets, into which I conveyed what money I had, with some other little necessaries. They rowed about a league, and then set me down on a strand. I desired them to tell me what country it was. They all swore, “that the captain” (as they called him, but in vain; neither would he so much as tell me who their new captain was. They forced me into the long-boat, letting me put on my best suit of clothes, which were as good as new, and take a small bundle of linen, but no arms, except my hanger; and they were so civil as not to search my pockets, into which I conveyed what money I had, with some other little necessaries. They rowed about a league, and then set me down on a strand. I desired them to tell me what country it was. They all swore, “that the captain” (as they called him, but in vain; neither would he so much as tell me who their new captain was. They forced me into the long-boat, letting me put on my best suit of clothes, which were as good as new, and take a small bundle of linen, but no arms, except my hanger; and they were so civil as not to search my pockets, into which I conveyed what money I had, with some other little necessaries. They rowed about a league, and then set me down on a strand. I desired them to tell me what country it was. They all swore, “that the captain” (as they called

the Leeward Islands, where I touched, by the direction of the merchants who employed me; which I had soon too much cause to repent: for I found afterwards, that most of them had been buccaneers. I had fifty hands onboard; and my orders were, that I should trade with the Indians in the South-Sea, and make what discoveries I could. These rogues, whom I had picked up, debauched my other men, and they all formed a conspiracy to seize the ship, and secure me; which they did one morning, rushing into my cabin, and binding me hand and foot, threatening to throw me overboard, if I offered to stir. I told them, “I was their prisoner, and would submit.” This they made me swear to do, and then they unbound me, only fastening one of my legs with a chain, near my bed, and placed a sentry at my door with his piece charged, who was commanded to shoot me dead if I attempted my liberty. They sent me own victuals and drink, and took the government of the ship to themselves. Their design was to turn pirates and, plunder the Spaniards, which they could not do till they got more men. But first they resolved to sell the goods the ship, and then go to Madagascar for recruits, several among them having died since my confinement. They sailed many weeks, and traded with the Indians; but I knew not what course they took, being kept a close prisoner in my cabin, and expecting nothing less than to be murdered, as they often threatened me.

El día 9 de mayo de 1711, un tal James Welch bajó a mi camarote y me dijo que había recibido del capitán orden de desembarcarme. Discuti con él, pero en vano; ni siquiera quiso decírmelo quién era su nuevo capitán. Me forzó a entrar en la lancha, después de permitirme ponerme mi traje mejor, que estaba nuevo, y coger un atado de ropa blanca; pero no armas, salvo mi alfanje. Y fueron tan amables, que no me registraron los bolsillos, donde yo me había guardado todo el dinero que tenía y algunas cosillas de mi uso. Remaron obra de una legua y me desembarcaron en una playa. Les supliqué que me dijera qué país era aquél; todos me juraron que lo ignoraban tanto como yo; sólo sabían que su capitán —como ellos de-
Swift’s Gulliver’s
t. sin acreditar en eBook.net

In this desolate condition I advanced forward, and soon got upon firm ground, where I sat down on a bank to rest myself, and consider what I had best do. When I was a little refreshed, I went up into the country, resolving to deliver myself to the first savages I should meet, and purchase my life from them by some bracelets, glass rings, and other toys, which sailors usually provide themselves with in those voyages, and whereof I had some about me. The land was divided by long rows of trees, not regularly planted, but naturally growing; there was great plenty of grass, and several fields of oats. I walked very circumspectly, for fear of being surprised, or suddenly shot with an arrow from behind, or on either side. I fell into a beaten road, where I saw many tracts of human feet, and some of cows, but most of horses. At last I beheld several animals in a field, and one or two of the same kind sitting in trees. Their shape was very singular and deformed, which a little discomposed me, so that I lay down behind a thicket to observe them better. Some of them coming forward near the place where I lay, gave me an opportunity of distinctly marking their form. Their heads and breasts were covered with a thick hair, some frizzled, and others lank; they had beards like goats, and a long ridge of hair down their backs, and the fore parts of their legs and feet; but the rest of their bodies was bare, so that I might see their skins, which were of a brown buff colour. They had no tails, nor any hair at all on their buttocks, except about the anus, which, I presume, nature had placed there to defend them as they sat on the ground, for this posture they used, as well as lying down, and often stood on their hind feet.

They climbed high trees as nimbly as a squirrel, for they had strong extended claws before and behind, terminating in sharp points, and hooked. They would often spring, and bound, and leap, with prodigious agility. The females were not so large as the males; they had long lank
hair on their heads, but none on their faces, nor any thing more than a sort of down on the rest of their bodies, except about the anus and pudenda. The dusps hung between their fore feet, and often reached almost to the ground as they walked. The hair of both sexes was of several colours, brown, red, black, and yellow. Upon the whole, I never beheld, in all my travels, so disagreeable an animal, or one against which I naturally conceived so strong an antipathy. So that, thinking I had seen enough, full of contempt and aversion, I got up, and pursued the beaten road, hoping it might direct me to the cabin of some Indian. I had not got far, when I met one of these creatures full in my way, and coming up directly to me. The ugly monster, when he saw me, distorted several ways, every feature of his visage, and stared, as at an object he had never seen before; then approaching nearer, lifted up his fore-paw, whether out of curiosity or mischief I could not tell; but I drew my hanger, and gave him a good blow with the flat side of it, for I durst not strike with the edge, fearing the inhabitants might be provoked against me, if they should come to know that I had killed or maimed any of their cattle. When the beast felt the smart, he drew back, and roared so loud, that a herd of at least forty came flocking about me from the next field, howling and making odious faces; but I ran to the body of a tree, and leaning my back against it, kept them off by waving my hanger. Several of this cursed brood, getting hold of the branches behind, leaped up into the tree, whence they began to discharge their excrements about me from the face with manifest tokens of wonder; he

In the midst of this distress, I observed them all to run away on a sudden as fast as they could; at which I ventured to leave the tree and pursue the road, wondering what it was that could put them into this fright. But looking on my left hand, I saw a horse walking softly in the field; which my persecutors having sooner discovered, was the cause of their flight. The horse started a little, when he came near me, but soon recovering himself, looked full in my face with manifest tokens of wonder; he

En medio de este apuro, vi que todos echaban a correr de repente con la mayor velocidad de que eran capaces; con lo cual yo me arriesgué a separarme del árbol y seguir el camino, admirado de qué podría haber sido lo que los asustase de tal modo. Pero mirando hacia mi siniestra mano vi un caballo que marchaba por el campo reposadamente, y que, visto antes—que por mí por mis perseguidores, era la causa de su huida. El caballo se extremeceó un poco cuando llegó cerca de mí, pero se recobró pronto y me miró cara a cara con manifes-
viewed my hands and feet, walking round me several times. I would have pursued my journey, but he placed himself directly in the way, yet looking with a very mild aspect, never offering the least violence. We stood gazing at each other for some time; at last I took the boldness to reach my hand towards his neck with a design to stroke it, using the common style and whistle of jockeys, when they are going to handle a strange horse. But this animal seemed to receive my civilities with disdain, shook his head, and bent his brows, softly raising up his right fore-foot to remove my hand. Then he neighed three or four times, but in so different a cadence, that I almost began to think he was speaking to himself, in some language of his own.

While he and I were thus employed, another horse came up; who applying himself to the first in a very formal manner, they gently struck each other’s right hoof before, neighing several times by turns, and varying the sound, which seemed to be almost articulate. They went some paces off, as if it were to confer together, walking side by side, backward and forward, like persons deliberating upon some affair of weight, but often turning their eyes towards me, as it were to watch that I might not escape. I was amazed to see such actions and behaviour in brute beasts; and concluded with myself, that if the inhabitants of this country were endued with a proportionable degree of reason, they must needs be the wisest people upon earth. This thought gave me so much comfort, that I resolved to go forward, until I could discover some house or village, or meet with any of the natives, leaving the two horses to discourse together as they pleased. But the first, who was a dapple gray, observing me to steal off, neighed after me in so expressive a tone, that I fancied myself to understand what he meant; whereupon I turned back, and came near to him to expect his farther commands; but concealing my fear as much as I could, for I began to be in some pain how this adventure might terminate; and the reader will easily believe I did not much like my present situation.

The two horses came up close to me, looking with great earnestness upon my

tos signos de asombro; me inspeccionó las manos y los pies dando varias vueltas a mi alrededor. Quise continuar mi marcha; pero él se atravesó en mi camino, aunque con actitud muy apacible y sin intención alguna de violencia en ningún momento. Permanecimos un rato mirándonos con atención; por fin, me atreví a alargar la mano hacia su cuello con propósito de acariciarle, empleando el sistema y el silbido de los jockeys cuando se preparan a montar un caballo que no conocen. Pero este animal pareció recibir con desdén mis atenciones; movió la cabeza y arqueó las cejas, al tiempo que levantaba suavemente la mano derecha como si quisiera desviar la mía. Después relinchó tres o cuatro veces, pero con cadencias tan distintas, que casi empecé a pensar que estaba hablándose a sí mismo en algún idioma propio.

Los dos caballos se me aproximaron y me miraron la cara y las manos con gran
face and hands. The gray steed rubbed my hat all round with his right fore-hoof, and discomposed it so much that I was forced to adjust it better by taking it off and settling it again; whereat, both he and his companion (who was a brown bay) appeared to be much surprised: the latter felt the lappet of my coat, and finding it to hang loose about me, they both looked with new signs of wonder. He stroked my right hand, seeming to admire the softness and colour; but he squeezed it so hard between his hoof and his pastern, that I was forced to roar; after which they both touched me with all possible tenderness. They were under great perplexity about my shoes and stockings, which they felt very often, neighing to each other, and using various gestures, not unlike those of a philosopher, when he would attempt to solve some new and difficult phenomenon.

Upon the whole, the behaviour of these animals was so orderly and rational, so acute and judicious, that I at last concluded they must needs be magicians, who had thus metamorphosed themselves upon some design, and seeing a stranger in the way, resolved to divert themselves with him; or, perhaps, were really amazed at the sight of a man so very different, in habit, feature, and complexion [tez/cariz], from those who might probably live in so remote a climate. Upon the strength of this reasoning, I ventured to address them in the following manner:

"Gentlemen, if you be conjurers, as I have good cause to believe, you can understand my language; therefore I make bold to let your worships know that I am a poor distressed Englishman, driven by his misfortunes upon your coast; and I entreat one of you to let me ride upon his back, as if he were a real horse, to some house or village where I can be relieved. In return of which favour, I will make you a present of this knife and bracelet," taking them out of my pocket. The two creatures stood silent while I spoke, seeming to listen with great attention, and when I had ended, they neighed frequently towards each other, as if they were engaged in serious conversation. I plainly observed that their language expressed the passions very well, and the words might, with little interés. El rucio restregó mi sombrero todo alrededor con el casco derecho y lo descompuso de tal modo, que tuve que arreglarlo, para lo cual me lo quité, volviendo a ponérmelo luego. A él y a su compañero —que era bayo obscuro— pareció causarles esto gran sorpresa; él último tocó la vuelta de mi casaca, y al encontrarse con que me colgaban suelta por encima, hicieron los dos grandes extremos de asombro. Me acarició la mano de recha con señales de admirar la suavidad y el color, pero me la apretó tan fuertemente entre el casco y la cuartilla, que me arrancó un grito; desde entonces me tocaron con toda la dulzura posible. Les producían perplejidad enorme mis zapatos y medias, que palparon muchas veces, relinchándose uno a otro y haciendo diversos gestros no desemejantes de los que hiciera un filósofo que intentara explicarse algún fenómeno nuevo y difícil de entender.

En suma: el proceder de aquellos animales era tan ordenado y racional, tan agudo y discreto, que, por último, concluí que habían de ser mágicos que con ciertos fines se hubieran metamorfoseado y que, encontrando a un extranjero en su camino, hubiesen querido holgarse con él, o quizá que realmente se sorprendieran a la vista de un hombre tan diferente, por su traje, su semblante y su tez, de los que era probable que hubiese en clima tan remoto. Tomando fundamento de estas razones, me aventuré a dirigirme a ellos en la manera siguiente: «Caballeros: si sois encantadores, como tengo serios motivos para suponer, entenderéis todos los idiomas; de consiguiente, me permito comunicar a vuestras señorías que yo soy un pobre inglés afligido, lanzado por mis desventuras a su lomo, como si fuese un caballo verdadero, hasta alguna casa o aldea donde pueda ser remediado. Y en pago de este favor yo os regalaré este cuchillo y este brazalete.» Y los saqué del bolsillo al mismo tiempo.Los dos animales guardaron silencio mientras yo hablaba, con muestra de escucharme muy atentamente; y cuando hubo terminado relincharon repetidamente cada uno, dirigiéndose al otro, como si mantuviensen una seria conversación. Observé con toda claridad que su lenguaje expresaba muy bien las pasiones, y las palabras hubiesen podido re-
I could frequently distinguish the word YAHOO, which was repeated by each of them several times: and although it was impossible for me to conjecture what it meant, yet while the two horses were busy in conversation, I endeavoured to practise this word upon my tongue; and as soon as they were silent, I boldly pronounced YAHOO in a loud voice, imitating at the same time, as near as I could, the neighing of a horse; at which they were both visibly surprised; and the gray repeated the same word twice, as if he meant to teach me the right accent; wherein I spoke after him as well as I could, and found myself perceptibly to improve every time, though very far from any degree of perfection. Then the bay tried me with a second word, much harder to be pronounced; but reducing it to the English orthography, may be spelt thus, HOUYHNHM. I did not succeed in this so well as in the former; but after two or three farther trials, I had better fortune; and they both appeared amazed at my capacity.

After some further discourse, which I then conjectured might relate to me, the two friends took their leaves, with the same compliment of striking each other’s hoof; and the gray made me signs that I should walk before him; wherein I thought it prudent to comply, till I could find a better director. When I offered to slacken my pace, he would cry HHUUN HHUUN: I guessed his meaning, and gave him to understand, as well as I could, “that I was weary, and not able to walk faster;” upon which he would stand awhile to let me rest.

Pains, be resolved into an alphabet more easily than the Chinese.

Capítulo II

[The author conducted by a Houyhnhnm to his house. The house described. The author’s reception. The food of the Houyhnhnms. The author in distress for want of meat. Is at last relieved. His manner of feeding in this country.]

Luego de cambiar nuevos discursos, que yo calculé referirse a mí, los dos amigos se despidieron con el mismo cumplimiento de chocar los cascos, y el rucio me hizo señas de que marchase delante de él, lo que juzgué prudente hacer en tanto que encontraba un más conveniente director. Se me ocurrió aflojar el paso, y él me gritó: Hhusun, hhusun; adiviné el sentido, y dile a entender como pude que estaba cansado y no podía andar más de prisa, con lo cual se paró un rato para dejarme descansar.
Having travelled about three miles, we came to a long kind of building, made of timber stuck in the ground, and waddled across; the roof was low and covered with straw. I now began to be a little encouraged; and took out some toys, which travellers usually carry for presents to the savage Indians of America, and other parts, in hopes the people of the house would be thereby encouraged to receive me kindly. The horse made me a sign to go in first; it was a large room with a smooth clay floor, and a rack and manger, extending the whole length on one side. There were three nags and two mares, not eating, but some of them sitting down upon their hams, which I very much wondered at; but wondered more to see the rest employed in domestic business; these seemed but ordinary cattle. However, this confirmed my first opinion, that a people who could so far civilise brute animals, must needs excel in wisdom all the nations of the world.

Beyond this room there were three others, reaching the length of the house, to which you passed through three doors, opposite to each other, in the manner of a vista. We went through the second room towards the third. Here the gray walked in first, beckoning me to attend: I waited in the second room, and got ready my presents for the master and mistress of the house; they were two knives, three bracelets of false pearls, a small looking-glass, and a bead necklace. The horse neighed three or four times, and I waited to hear some answers in a human voice, but I heard no other returns than in the same dialect, only one or two a little shriller than his. I began to think that this house must belong to some person of great note among them, because there appeared so much ceremony before I could gain admittance. But, that a man of quality should be served all by horses, was

El rucio entró detrás de mí y evitó así cualquier mal trato de que los otros hubieran podido hacerme víctima. Les relinchió varias veces con tono autoritario y fue respondido.

Más allá de esta habitación había otras tres que comprendían todo el largo de la casa, a las cuales se pasaba por tres puertas, dispuestas una enfrente de otra, como en un rompimiento. Atravesamos la segunda con dirección a la tercera; aquí el rucio entró delante, haciéndome con la cabeza señas de que esperara. Aguardé en la segunda estancia y dispuse mis presentes para el dueño y la dueña de la casa; consistían en dos cuchillos, tres brazaletes de perlas falsas, un pequeño anteojito Y un collar de cuentas. El caballo relinchió tres o cuatro veces, y yo esperaba oír en respuesta una voz humana; pero no advertí más que contestaciones en el mismo dialecto, diferentes sólo en ser una o dos, algo mas agudas y penetrantes. Comenzaba yo a pensar que aquella casa debía pertenecer a alguna persona de mucha nota en el país, ya que tanta ceremonia había que usar antes de que se me concebiera audiencia. Pero iba más allá de mis alcances que un hombre de calidad estu-
beyond my comprehension. I feared my brain was disturbed by my sufferings and misfortunes. I roused myself, and looked about me in the room where I was left alone: this was furnished like the first, only after a more elegant manner. I rubbed my eyes often, but the same objects still occurred. I pinched my arms and sides to awake myself, hoping I might be in a dream. I then absolutely concluded, that all these appearances could be nothing else but necromancy and magic. But I had no time to pursue these reflections; for the gray horse came to the door, and made me a sign to follow him into the third room where I saw a very comely [pleasant to look at] mare, together with a colt and a foal, sitting on their haunches upon mats of straw, not unartfully made, and perfectly neat and clean.

The mare soon after my entrance rose from her mat, and coming up close, after having nicely observed my hands and face, gave me a most contemptuous look; and turning to the horse, I heard the word YAHOO often repeated betwixt them; the meaning of which word I could not then comprehend, although it was the first I had learned to pronounce. But I was soon better informed, to my everlasting mortification; for the horse, beckoning to me with his head, and repeating the HHUUN, HHUUN, as he did upon the road, which I understood was to attend him, led me out into a kind of court, where was another building, at some distance from the house. Here we entered, and I saw three of those detestable creatures, which I first met after my landing, feeding upon roots, and the flesh of some animals, which I afterwards found to be that of asses and dogs, and now and then a cow, dead by accident or disease. They were all tied by the neck with strong withes fastened to a beam; they held their food between the claws of their fore feet, and tore it with their teeth.

The master horse ordered a sorrel nag, one of his servants, to untie the largest of these animals, and take him into the yard. The beast and I were brought close together, and by our countenances diligently compared both viese servido solamente por caballos. Lle-gué a temer que se me hubiera turbado el juicio a fuerza de sufrimientos y desdichas; hice por serenarme y miré en torno mío por la estancia en que me habían dejado solo. Estaba amueblada como la primera, aunque de modo más elegante. Me froté los ojos, pero persistían los mismos objetos. Me pellizqué los brazos y los costados para despertarme, creyendo que todo era un sueño. Por fin deduje, sin lugar a duda, que todas aquellas apariciones no podían ser otra cosa que obra de magia y nigromancia. Pero no tuvo tiempo de llevar más adelante mis reflexiones, porque el caballo rucio apareció en la puerta y me hizo señas de que le siguiese al tercer aposento, donde vi una muy hermosa yegua en compañía de un potro y de una cria pequeña, sentados todos sobre las ancas en esteras de paja no desmañadamente hechas y perfectamente limpias y aseadas.

A poco de entrar yo, se levantó la yegua de su estera, acercóse a mí y, luego de haberme examinado muy cuidadosamente las manos y la cara, me dirigió una mirada de desprecio; volvióse luego al caballo y oí que entrambos repitían la palabra yahoo frecuentemente, palabra cuyo significado no comprendía yo aún, a pesar de ser la primera que había aprendido a pronunciar. Pero pronto quedé mejor enterado, para eterna mortificación mía; pues el caballo, haciéndome signo con la cabeza y repitiendo la palabra hhuun, hhuun, como había hecho en el camino, y yo comprendía significar que le acompañase, me sacó a una especie de patio, donde se levantaba otro edificio, a alguna distancia de la casa. En él entramos, y vi tres de aquellos detestables animales que habían sido mi primer encuentro después de tomar tierra, comiendo raíces y carne de algunos animales: asno y perros, según supe después, y a las veces una vaca muerta por accidente o enfermedad. Estaban atados por el cuello a una viga con fuertes mimbres; sujetaban la comida entre las garras de las patas delanteras y la destrozaban con los dientes.

El caballo amo mandó a una jaca alazana, que era uno de los criados, que desatase al mayor de aquellos animales y lo sacase al patio. Nos pusieron juntos a la bestia y a mí, y amo y criado compararon diligentemente nuestra fiso-
by master and servant, who thereupon repeated several times the word YAHOO. My horror and astonishment are not to be described, when I observed in this abominable animal, a perfect human figure: the face of it indeed was flat and broad, the nose depressed, the lips large, and the mouth wide; but these differences are common to all savage nations, where the lineaments of the countenance are distorted, by the natives suffering their infants to lie grovelling on the earth, or by carrying them on their backs, nuzzling with their face against the mothers’ shoulders. The fore-feet of the YAHOO differed from my hands in nothing else but the length of the nails, the coarseness and brownness of the palms, and the hairiness on the backs. There was the same resemblance between our feet, with the same differences; which I knew very well, though the horses did not, because of my shoes and stockings; the same in every part of our bodies except as to hairiness and colour, which I have already described.

The great difficulty that seemed to stick with the two horses, was to see the rest of my body so very different from that of a YAHOO, for which I was obliged to my clothes, whereof they had no conception. The sorrel nag offered me a root, which he held (after their manner, as we shall describe in its proper place) between his hoof and pastern; I took it in my hand, and, having smelt it, returned it to him again as civilly as I could. He brought out of the YAHOOs’ kennel a piece of ass’s flesh; but it smelt so offensively that I turned from it with loathing: he then threw it to the YAHOO, by whom it was greedily devoured. He afterwards showed me a wisp of hay, and a fetlock full of oats; but I shook my head, to signify that neither of these were food for me. And indeed I now apprehended that I must absolutely starve, if I did not get to some of my own species; for as to those filthy YAHOOs, although there were few greater lovers of mankind at that time than myself, yet I confess I never saw any sensitive being so detestable on all accounts; and the more I came near them the more hateful they grew, while I stayed in that nomia, repitiendo muchas veces, confor-me lo hacían, la palabra yahoo. Es im-posible pintar el horror y el asombro que sentí cuando aprecié en aquel animal abominable una perfecta figura huma-na. Cierto que el rostro era ancho y achatado, la nariz hundida, los labios gruesos y la boca grande; pero estas diferencias son comunes a todas las naciones salvajes, donde las facciones de la cara se desfiguran por dejar los naturales a sus hijos que se arrastren contra el suelo o por llevarlos a la espalda con las caras aplastadas contra los hombros de la madre. Las patas delanteras del yahoo no se diferenciaban de mis manos sino en la longitud de las uñas; la aspereza y obscuridad de las palmas y lo peludo de los dorsos. Las mismas se-mejanzas con las mismas diferencias había entre nuestros pies, cosa que yo sabía perfectamente, pero no los caballos, a causa de mis zapatos y medias; las mismas entre todas las partes de nuestros cuerpos, excepto por lo que toca al pelambre y el color que ya he descrito anteriormente.
country. This the master horse observed by my behaviour, and therefore sent the YAHOO back to his kennel. He then put his fore-hoof to his mouth, at which I was much surprised, although he did it with ease, and with a motion that appeared perfectly natural, and made other signs, to know what I would eat; but I could not return him such an answer as he was able to apprehend; and if he had understood me, I did not see how it was possible to contrive any way for finding myself nourishment. While we were thus engaged, I observed a cow passing by, whereupon I pointed to her, and expressed a desire to go and milk her. This had its effect; for he led me back into the house, and ordered a mare-servant to open a room, where a good store of milk lay in earthen and wooden vessels, after a very orderly and cleanly manner. She gave me a large bowlful, of which I drank very heartily, and found myself well refreshed.

About noon, I saw coming towards the house a kind of vehicle drawn like a sledge by four YAHOOs. There was in it an old steed, who seemed to be of quality; he alighted with his hind-feet forward, having by accident got a hurt in his left fore-foot. He came to dine with our horse, who received him with great civility. They dined in the best room, and had oats boiled in milk for the second course, which the old horse ate warm, but the rest cold. Their mangers were placed circular in the middle of the room, and divided into several partitions, round which they sat on their haunches, upon bosses of straw. In the middle was a large rack, with angles answering to every partition of the manger; so that each horse and mare ate their own hay, and their own mash of oats and milk, with much decency and regularity. The behaviour of the young colt and foal appeared very modest, and that of the master and mistress extremely cheerful and complaisant to their guest. The gray ordered me to stand by him; and much discourse passed between him and his friend concerning me, as I found by the stranger’s often looking on me, and the frequent repetition of the word YAHOO.

I happened to wear my gloves,
which the master gray observing, seemed perplexed, discovering signs of wonder what I had done to my fore-feet. He put his hoof three or four times to them, as if he would signify, that I should reduce them to their former shape, which I presently did, pulling off both my gloves, and putting them into my pocket. This occasioned farther talk; and I saw the company was pleased with my behaviour, whereof I soon found the good effects. I was ordered to speak the few words I understood; and while they were at dinner, the master taught me the names for oats, milk, fire, water, and some others, which I could readily pronounce after him, having from my youth a great facility in learning languages.

When dinner was done, the master horse took me aside, and by signs and words made me understand the concern he was in that I had nothing to eat. Oats in their tongue are called HLUUNH. This word I pronounced two or three times; for although I had refused them at first, yet, upon second thoughts, I considered that I could contrive to make of them a kind of bread, which might be sufficient, with milk, to keep me alive, till I could make my escape to some other country, and to creatures of my own species. The horse immediately ordered a white mare servant of his family to bring me a good quantity of oats in a sort of wooden tray. These I heated before the fire, as well as I could, and rubbed them till the husks came off, which I made a shift to winnow from the grain. I ground and beat them between two stones; then took water, and made them into a paste or cake, which I toasted at the fire and eat warm with milk. It was at first a very insipid diet, though common enough in many parts of Europe, but grew tolerable by time; and having been often reduced to hard fare in my life, this was not the first experiment I had made how easily nature is satisfied. And I cannot but observe, that I never had one hour of sickness while I stayed in this island. It is true, I sometimes made a shift to catch a rabbit, or bird, by springs made of YAHOO’S hairs; and I often gathered wholesome herbs, which I boiled, and ate as salads with my
bread; and now and then, for a rarity, I made a little butter, and drank the whey. I was at first at a great loss for salt, but custom soon reconciled me to the want of it; and I am confident that the frequent use of salt among us is an effect of luxury, and was first introduced only as a provocative to drink, except where it is necessary for preserving flesh in long voyages, or in places remote from great markets; for we observe no animal to be fond of it but man, and as to myself, when I left this country, it was a great while before I could endure the taste of it in anything that I ate.

This is enough to say upon the subject of my diet, wherewith other travellers fill their books, as if the readers were personally concerned whether we fare well or ill. However, it was necessary to mention this matter, lest the world should think it impossible that I could find sustenance for three years in such a country, and among such inhabitants.

When it grew towards evening, the master horse ordered a place for me to lodge in; it was but six yards from the house and separated from the stable of the YAHOOs. Here I got some straw, and covering myself with my own clothes, slept very sound. But I was in a short time better accommodated, as the reader shall know hereafter, when I come to treat more particularly about my way of living.

CHAPTER III.

[The author studies to learn the language. The Houyhnhnm, his master, assists in teaching him. The language described. Several Houyhnhnms of quality come out of curiosity to see the author. He gives his master a short account of his voyage.]

My principal endeavour was to learn the language, which my master (for so I shall henceforth call him), and his children, and every servant of his house, were desirous to teach me; for they exceptión, hacía un poco de manteca y bebía el suero. Al principio sufría mucho por la falta de sal, pero pronto me hizo a ella la costumbre, y estoy seguro de que el uso frecuente de la sal entre nosotros es un efecto de la sensualidad, y se introdujo en un principio como excitante para beber, menos cuando es preciso para la preservación de carnes en largos viajes o en sitios apartados de los grandes mercados. Porque yo no he observado en animal ninguno, salvo en el hombre, tal afición; y por lo que a mí se refiere, cuando salí de aquel país, pasó bastante tiempo primero que pudiese sufrir el gusto de la sal en nada de lo que comía.

Capítulo III

Aplicación del autor para aprender el idioma. —El houyhnhnm su amo le ayuda a enseñarle. —Cómo es el lenguaje. —Varios houyhnhnms de calidad acuden, movidos por la curiosidad, a ver al autor. —Éste hace a su amo un corto relato de su viaje.

Mi principal tarea consistía en aprender el idioma, que mi amo —y así le llamaré de aquí en adelante— y sus hijos y todos los criados de la casa tenían gran interés en enseñarme, pues consi-
looked upon it as a prodigy, that a brute animal should discover such marks of a rational creature. I pointed to every thing, and inquired the name of it, which I wrote down in my journal-book when I was alone, and corrected my bad accent by desiring those of the family to pronounce it often. In this employment, a sorrel nag, one of the under-servants, was very ready to assist me.

In speaking, they pronounced through the nose and throat, and their language approaches nearest to the High-Dutch, or German, of any I know in Europe; but is much more graceful and significant. The emperor Charles V. made almost the same observation, when he said “that if he were to speak to his horse, it should be in High-Dutch.”

The curiosity and impatience of my master were so great, that he spent many hours of his leisure to instruct me. He was convinced (as he afterwards told me) that I must be a YAHOO; but my teachableness, civility, and cleanliness, astonished him; which were qualities altogether opposite to those animals. He was most perplexed about my clothes, reasoning sometimes with himself, whether they were a part of my body: for I never pulled them off till the family were asleep, and got them on before they waked in the morning. My master was eager to learn “whence I came; how I acquired those appearances of reason, which I discovered in all my actions; and to know my story from my own mouth, which he hoped he should soon do by the great proficiency I made in learning and pronouncing their words and sentences.” To help my memory, I formed all I learned into the English alphabet, and writ the words down, with the translations. This last, after some time, I ventured to do in my master’s presence. It cost me much trouble to explain to him what I was doing; for the inhabitants have not the least idea of books or literature.

In about ten weeks time, I was able to understand most of his questions; and in three months, could give him some tolerable answers. He was extremely curious to know “from what part of the country I came, and how I was taught to

In speaking, they pronounced through the nose and throat, and their language approaches nearest to the High-Dutch, or German, of any I know in Europe; but is much more graceful and significant. The emperor Charles V. made almost the same observation, when he said “that if he were to speak to his horse, it should be in High-Dutch.”

La curiosidad y la impaciencia de mi amo eran tales, que dedicaba muchas de sus horas de ocio a instruirme. Estaba convencido, según más tarde me dijo, de que yo era un Yahoo; pero mi facilidad de aprender, mi cortesía y mi limpieza le asombraban, como cualidades opuestas por entero a la condición de aquellos animales. Mis ropas le sumían en la mayor perplexidad, y muchas veces se preguntaba a sí mismo si serían parte de mi cuerpo; mas yo no me las quitaba nunca hasta que la familia se había dormido y me las ponía antes de que se despertase por la mañana. Mi amo tenía vehementes deseos de saber de dónde procedía yo, cómo había adquirido aquellas apariencias de razón que descubría en todas mis acciones, y, en fin, de oír mi historia de mis propios labios, lo que él esperaba que podría hacer pronto, gracias a mis grandes progresos en la pronunciación de sus palabras y frases. Para ayudar a mi memoria, buscaba la equivalencia de lo que aprendía en el alfabeto inglés y escribía las palabras con sus traducciones. Después de algún tiempo me atreví a hacer esto en presencia de mi amo. Me costó gran trabajo explicarle lo que hacía, pues los habitantes de aquel país no tienen la menor idea de libros ni literaturas.

Al cabo de unas diez semanas podía entender la mayor parte de las preguntas, y en tres meses darle pasaderas respuestas. Mi amo tenía curiosidad extrema por saber de qué parte del país había llegado y cómo me habían enseñado a imitar a un
imitate a rational creature; because the YAHOOs (whom he saw I exactly resembled in my head, hands, and face, that were only visible), with some appearance of cunning, and the strongest disposition to mischief, were observed to be the most unteachable of all brutes.” I answered, “that I came over the sea, from a far place, with many others of my own kind, in a great hollow vessel made of the bodies of trees: that my companions forced me to land on this coast, and then left me to shift for myself.” It was with some difficulty, and by the help of many signs, that I brought him to understand me. He replied, “that I must needs be mistaken, or that I said the thing which was not;” for they have no word in their language to express lying or falsehood. “He knew it was impossible that there could be a country beyond the sea, or that a parcel of brutes could move a wooden vessel whither they pleased upon water. He was sure no HOUYHNHNM alive could make such a vessel, nor would trust YAHOOs to manage it.”

The word HOUYHNHNM, in their tongue, signifies a HORSE, and, in its etymology, the PERFECTION OF NATURE. I told my master, “that I was at a loss for expression, but would improve as fast as I could; and hoped, in a short time, I should be able to tell him wonders.” He was pleased to direct his own mare, his colt, and foal, and the servants of the family, to take all opportunities of instructing me; and every day, for two or three hours, he was at the same pains himself. Several horses and mares of quality in the neighbourhood came often to our house, upon the report spread of “a wonderful YAHOO, that could speak like a HOUYHNHNM, and seemed, in his words and actions, to discover some glimmerings of reason.” These delighted to converse with me: they put many questions, and received such answers as I was able to return. By all these advantages I made so great a progress, that, in five months from my arrival I understood whatever was spoken, and could express myself tolerably well.

The HOUYHNHNMS, who came to visit my master out of a design of seeing and talking with me, could hardly ser racional, pues se había observado que los yahoos —a quienes veía que me asemejaba exactamente en la cabeza, las manos y la cara, que eran lo solo visible—, que presentaban alguna apariencia de astucia y la más decidida inclinación al mal, eran los animales más difíciles de educar. Le contesté que había llegado, a través de los mares, de un sitio lejano, con muchos otros de mí misma especie, en una como gran artesa, hecha de troncos de árboles; que mis compañeros me habían forzado a desembarcar en aquella costa y luego abandonándome a mi suerte. No sin dificultad, y ayudándome con señas, pude lograr que me entendiese. Me contestó que por fuerza estaba equivocado, o decía la cosa que no era —pues en su idioma no tiene palabra para expresar la mentira o la falsedad—. Sabía muy bien él que era imposible que hubiese un país más allá del mar, así como que un grupo de animales pudiera mover una artesa de madera sobre el mar según les viniese en gana. Tenía la seguridad de que ningún houyhnhnm existente podría hacer tal artesa ni confiar en que yahos lo hicieran.

La palabra houyhnhnm, en su lengua, significa caballo, y por su etimología, la perfección de la Naturaleza. Dije a mi amo que me encontraba en gran apuro para expresarme; pero adelantaría lo más de prisa que pudiera, y esperaba poder decirle maravillas en breve plazo. Se dignó encargar a su propia yegua, sus potros, sus crias y los criados de la casa que aprovecharan todas las ocasiones de enseñarme, y todos los días se imponía él igual trabajo durante dos o tres horas. Varios caballos y yeguas de calidad del vecindario veían con frecuencia a nuestra casa, atraídos por la fama de un yaho maravilloso que hablaba como un houyhnhnm y parecía descubrir en sus palabras y actos ciertos destellos de razón. Se encantaban de hablar conmigo; me hacían preguntas, a las que yo daba las respuestas que me era posible. Con circunstancias tan favorables, hice tales progresos, que a los cinco meses de mi llegada entendía todo lo que decían y me expresaba bastante bien.
believe me to be a right YAHOO, because my body had a different covering from others of my kind. They were astonished to observe me without the usual hair or skin, except on my head, face, and hands; but I discovered that secret to my master upon an accident which happened about a fortnight before.

I have already told the reader, that every night, when the family were gone to bed, it was my custom to strip, and cover myself with my clothes. It happened, one morning early, that my master sent for me by the sorrel nag, who was his valet. When he came I was fast asleep, my clothes fallen off on one side, and my shirt above my waist. I awaked at the noise he made, and observed him to deliver his message in some disorder; after which he went to my master, and in a great fright gave him a very confused account of what he had seen. This I presently discovered, for, going as soon as I was dressed to pay my attendance upon his honour, he asked me “the meaning of what his servant had reported, that I was not the same thing when I slept, as I appeared to be at other times; that his valet assured him, some part of me was white, some yellow, at least not so white, and some brown.”

I had hitherto concealed the secret of my dress, in order to distinguish myself, as much as possible, from that cursed race of YAHOOES; but now I found it in vain to do so any longer. Besides, I considered that my clothes and shoes would soon wear out, which already were in a declining condition, and must be supplied by some contrivance from the hides of YAHOOES, or other brutes; whereby the whole secret would be known. I therefore told my master, “that in the country whence I came, those of my kind always covered their bodies with the hairs of certain animals prepared by art, as well for decency as to avoid the inclemencies of air, both hot and cold; of which, as to my own person, I would give him immediate conviction, if he pleased to command me: only desiring his excuse, if I did not expose those parts that nature taught us to conceal.” He said, “my discourse was all very strange, but especially the last part; for he could not understand, why nature should teach us determinaban a creer que yo fuese un yahoo verdadero, porque veían cubierto mi cuerpo de manera distinta que el de los demás de mi clase. Se asombraban de verme sin los pelos y la piel que eran naturales, salvo en la cabeza, la cara y las manos; pero un accidente ocurrido quince días antes me había obligado a descubrir a mi amo este secreto.

Ya he dicho al lector que por las noches, cuando la familia se había ido a la cama, era mi costumbre desnudarme y taparme con las ropas. Ocurrió que una mañana temprano mi amo envió a buscarme al potro alazán que era su ayuda de cámara; cuando entró, yo dormía profundamente, con las ropas caídas por un lado y la camisa más arriba de la cintura. Me desperté al ruido que produjo y observé que me daba el recado con alguna turbación, después de lo cual se volvió con mi amo, a quien, con gran susto, dio confusa cuenta de lo que había visto. Así lo comprendí, pues al acudir tan pronto como estuve vestido a ponerme al servicio de su señoría, me preguntó qué significaba lo que su criado acababa de decirle, y añadió que yo no era cuando dormía la misma cosa que parecía en las demás ocasiones, y que su ayuda de cámara le aseguraba que yo era en parte blanco, en parte amarillo, o al menos no tan blanco, y en parte moreno.

Hasta entonces yo había guardado el secreto de mi vestido para distinguirme todo lo posible de la maldita raza de los yahoos; pero en adelante era inútil querer hacerlo. Además, pensaba yo que mis zapatos y mis ropas, que estaban ya en medio uso, quedarían pronto inservibles y tendrían que ser sustituidos por algún invento a base de piel de yahoo o de otros animales, por donde el secreto vendría a ser conocido. Dije a mi amo, en consecuencia, que, en el país de donde yo procedía, los de mi especie llevaban siempre cubierto el cuerpo con el pelo de ciertos animales, preparado con arreglo a determinado arte, así por decencia como por guardarse de las inclemencias del aire caliente o frío, de lo cual podría convencerle inmediatamente por lo que a mí tocaba si tenía a bien mandármelo.
to conceal what nature had given; that neither himself nor family were ashamed of any parts of their bodies; but, however, I might do as I pleased.”

Whereupon I first unbuttoned my coat, and pulled it off. I did the same with my waistcoat. I drew off my shoes, stockings, and breeches. I let my shirt down to my waist, and drew up the bottom; fastening it like a girdle about my middle, to hide my nakedness.

My master observed the whole performance with great signs of curiosity and admiration. He took up all my clothes in his pastern, one piece after another, and examined them diligently; he then stroked my body very gently, and looked round me several times; after which, he said, it was plain I must be a perfect YAHOO; but that I differed very much from the rest of my species in the softness, whiteness, and smoothness of my skin; my want of hair in several parts of my body; the shape and shortness of my claws behind and before; and my affection of walking continually on my two hinder feet. He desired to see no more; and gave me leave to put on my clothes again, for I was shuddering with cold.

I expressed my uneasiness at his giving me so often the appellation of YAHOO, an odious animal, for which I had so utter a hatred and contempt: I begged he would forbear applying that word to me, and make the same order in his family and among his friends whom he suffered to see me. I requested likewise, “that the secret of my having a false covering to my body, might be known to none but himself, at least as long as my present clothing should last; for as to what the sorrel nag, his valet, had observed, his honour might command him to conceal it.”

All this my master very graciously consented to; and thus the secret was kept till my clothes began to wear out, which I was forced to supply by several contrivances that shall hereafter be mentioned. In the meantime, he desired “I would go on with my utmost diligence to learn their language, because he was more astonished at my capacity for speech and reason, than at the figure of my body, whether it were covered or not;” adding, “that he waited with some
Thenceforward he doubled the pains he had been at to instruct me: he brought me into all company, and made them treat me with civility; “because,” as he told them, privately, “this would put me into good humour, and make me more diverting.”

Every day, when I waited on him, beside the trouble he was at in teaching, he would ask me several questions concerning myself, which I answered as well as I could, and by these means he had already received some general ideas, though very imperfect. It would be tedious to relate the several steps by which I advanced to a more regular conversation; but the first account I gave of myself in any order and length was to this purpose:

“That I came from a very far country, as I already had attempted to tell him, with about fifty more of my own species; that we travelled upon the seas in a great hollow vessel made of wood, and larger than his honour’s house. I described the ship to him in the best terms I could, and explained, by the help of my handkerchief displayed, how it was driven forward by the wind. That upon a quarrel among us, I was set on shore on this coast, where I walked forward, without knowing whither, till he delivered me from the persecution of those execrable YAHOOs.” He asked me, “who made the ship, and how it was possible that the HOUYHNHNMS of my country would leave it to the management of brutes?” My answer was, “that I durst proceed no further in my relation, unless he would give me his word and honour that he would not be offended, and then I would tell him the wonders I had so often promised.” He agreed; and I went on by assuring him, that the ship was made by creatures like myself; who, in all the countries I had travelled, as well as in my own, were the only governing rational animals; and that upon my arrival hither, I was as much astonished to see the HOUYHNHNMS act like rational beings, as he, or his friends, could be, in finding some marks of reason in a creature he was pleased to call a YAHOO; to which I owned my

impatience to hear the wonders which I promised to tell him.”

En adelante duplicó el trabajo que se tomaba para instruirme; me hacia estar presente en todas las reuniones, y exigía que los reunidos me tratasen con amabilidad; pues, según les dijo privadamente, eso me pondría de buen humor y me haría aún más divertido.

Dije que había llegado de un muy lejano país, como ya había intentado decirle, con unos cincuenta de mi misma especie; que viajábamos sobre los mares en un gran cacharro hueco hecho de madera y mayor que la casa de su señoría; y aquí le describí el barco en los términos más precisos que pude, y le expliqué, ayudándome con el pañuelo extendido, cómo el viento le hacía andar. Continué que, a consecuencia de una rìña que habíamos tenido, me desembarcaron en aquella costa, por donde avancé, sin saber hacia dónde, hasta que él vino a liberarme de la persecución de aquellos execrables yahos. Me preguntó quién había hecho el barco y como era posible que los houyhnhnms de mi país encomendaran su manejo a animales. Mi respuesta fue que no me aventuraría a seguir adelante en mi relación si antes no me daba palabra de honor de que no se ofendería, y en este caso le contaría las maravillas que tantas veces le había prometido. Consintió, y yo continué, asegurándole que el barco lo habían hecho seres como yo, los cuales, en todos los países que había recorrido, eran los únicos animales racionales y dominadores, y que al llegar a la tierra en que nos hallábamos me había asombrado tanto que los houyhnhnms se condujesen como seres racionales cuanto podría haberles asombrado a él y a sus amigos descubrir señales de razón en una criatura que ellos tenían a bien llamar un yaho; animal éste...
resemblance in every part, but could not account for their degenerate and brutal nature. I said farther, “that if good fortune ever restored me to my native country, to relate my travels hither, as I resolved to do, everybody would believe, that I said the thing that was not, that I invented the story out of my own head; and (with all possible respect to himself, his family, and friends, and under his promise of not being offended) our countrymen would hardly think it probable that a HOUYHNHNHM should be the presiding creature of a nation, and a YAHOO the brute.”

CHAPTER IV.

[The Houyhnhnm’s notion of truth and falsehood. The author’s discourse disapproved by his master. The author gives a more particular account of himself, and the accidents of his voyage.]

My master heard me with great appearances of uneasiness in his countenance; because doubting, or not believing, are so little known in this country, that the inhabitants cannot tell how to behave themselves under such circumstances. And I remember, in frequent discourses with my master concerning the nature of manhood in other parts of the world, having occasion to talk of lying and false representation, it was with much difficulty that he comprehended what I meant, although he had otherwise a most acute judgment. For he argued thus: “that the use of speech was to make us understand one another, and to receive information of facts; now, if any one said the thing which was not, these ends were defeated, because I cannot properly be said to understand him; and I am so far from receiving information, that he leaves me worse than in ignorance; for I am led to believe a thing black, when it is white, and short, when it is long.” And these were all the notions he had concerning that faculty of lying, so perfectly well understood, and so universally practised, among human creatures.

Capítulo IV

La noción de los houyhnhnms acerca de la mentira. —El discurso del autor, desaprobado por su amo. —El autor da una más detallada cuenta de sí mismo y de los incidentes de su viaje.

Me oyó mi amo con grandes muestras de inquietud en el semblante, pues dudar o no creer son cosas tan poco conocidas en aquel país, que los habitantes no saben cómo conducirse en tales circunstancias. Y recuerdo que en frecuentes conversaciones que tuve con mi amo respecto de la naturaleza humana en otras partes del mundo, como se me ofreciese hablar de la mentira y el falso testimonio, no comprendió sino con gran dificultad lo que quería decirle, aunque fuera de esto mostraba grandísima agudeza de juicio. Me argúía que si el uso de la palabra tenía por fin hacer que nos comprendiésemos unos a otros, este fin fracasaba desde el instante en que alguno decía la cosa que no era; porque entonces ya no podía decir que nadie le comprendiese, y estaba tanto más lejos de quedar informado, cuanto que le dejaba peor que en la ignorancia, ya que le llevaba a creer que una cosa era negra cuando era blanca, o larga cuando era corta. Éstas eran todas las nociones que tenía acerca de la facultad de mentir, tan perfectamente bien comprendida y tan universalmente practicada entre los humanos.
To return from this digression. When I asserted that the YAHOOs were the only governing animals in my country, which my master said was altogether past his conception, he desired to know, “whether we had HOUYNHNMS among us, and what was their employment?” I told him, “we had great numbers; that in summer they grazed in the fields, and in winter were kept in houses with hay and oats, where YAHOO servants were employed to rub their skins smooth, comb their manes, pick their feet, serve them with food, and make their beds.” “I understand you well,” said my master: “it is now very plain, from all you have spoken, that whatever share of reason the YAHOOs pretend to, the HOUYNHNMS are your masters; I heartily wish our YAHOOs would be so tractable.” I begged “his honour would please to excuse me from proceeding any further, because I was very certain that the account he expected from me would be highly displeasing.” But he insisted in commanding me to let him know the best and the worst.

I told him “he should be obeyed.” I owned “that the HOUYNHNMS among us, whom we called horses, were the most generous and comely [pleasant to look at] animals we had; that they excelled in strength and swiftness; and when they belonged to persons of quality, were employed in travelling, racing, or drawing chariots; they were treated with much kindness and care, till they fell into diseases, or became foundered in the feet; but then they were sold, and used to all kind of drudgery till they died; after which their skins were stripped, and sold for what they were worth, and their bodies left to be devoured by dogs and birds of prey. But the common race of horses had not so good fortune, being kept by farmers and carriers, and other mean people, who put them to greater labour, and fed them worse.” I described, as well as I could, our way of riding; the shape and use of a bridle, a saddle, a spur, and a whip; of harness and wheels. I added, “that we fastened plates of a certain hard substance, called iron, at the bottom of their feet, to preserve their hoofs from being broken by the stony ways, on which we often travelled.”

My master, after some expressions of
great indignation, wondered “how we dared to venture upon a HOUYHNHM’S back; for he was sure, that the weakest servant in his house would be able to shake off the strongest YAHOO; or by lying down and rolling on his back, squeeze the brute to death.” I answered “that our horses were trained up, from three or four years old, to the several uses we intended them for; that if any of them proved intolerably vicious, they were employed for carriages; that they were severely beaten, while they were young, for any mischievous tricks; that the males, designed for the common use of riding or draught, were generally castrated about two years after their birth, to take down their spirits, and make them more tame and gentle; that they were indeed sensible of rewards and punishments; but his honour would please to consider, that they had not the least tincture of reason, any more than the YAHOOs in this country.”

Me costó recurrir a numerosas circunlocuciones, el dar a mi amo idea exacta de lo que decía, pues su idioma no es abundante en variedad de palabras, porque las necesidades y pasiones de ellos son menos que las nuestras. Pero es imposible pintar su noble resentimiento por el trato salvaje que dábamos a la raza houyhnhnm. Dijo que si era posible que hubiese un país donde solamente los yahoos estuvieran dotados de razón, sin duda deberían ser el animal dominador, porque, a la larga, siempre la razón prevalecerá sobre la fuerza bruta. Pero considerando la hechura de nuestro cuerpo, y particularmente del mío, pensaba que no existía un ser de parecida corpulencia tan mal conformado para emplear el tal raciocinio en los fines corrientes de la vida; por lo cual me preguntó si aquellos entre quienes yo vivía se parecían a mí o a los yahoos de su tierra. Le aseguré que yo estaba formado como la mayor parte de los de mi edad, pero que los jóvenes y las hembras eran mucho más tiernos y delicados, y la piel de las últimas tan blanca como la leche, por regla general. Dijome que, sin duda, yo me diferenciaba de los otros yahoos en ser mucho más limpio y no tan extremadamente feo; pero en
altogether so deformed; but, in point of real advantage, he thought I differed for the worse: that my nails were of no use either to my fore or hinder feet; as to my fore feet, he could not properly call them by that name, for he never observed me to walk upon them; that they were too soft to bear the ground; that I generally went uncovered; neither was the covering I sometimes wore on them of the same shape, or so strong as that on my feet behind: that I could not walk with any security, for if either of my hinder feet slipped, I must inevitably fail."

He then began to find fault with other parts of my body: "the flatness of my face, the prominence of my nose, mine eyes placed directly in front, so that I could not look on either side without turning my head: that I was not able to feed myself, without lifting one of my fore-feet to my mouth: and therefore nature had placed those joints to answer that necessity. He knew not what could be the use of those several clefts and divisions in my feet behind; that these were too soft to bear the hardness and sharpness of stones, without a covering made from the skin of some other brute; that my whole body wanted a fence against heat and cold, which I was forced to put on and off every day, with tediousness and trouble: and lastly, that he observed every animal in this country naturally to abhor the YAHOOs, whom the weaker avoided, and the stronger drove from them. So that, supposing us to have the gift of reason, he could not see how it were possible to cure that natural antipathy, which every creature discovered against us; nor consequently how we could tame and render them serviceable. However, he would," as he said, "debate the matter no farther, because he was more desirous to know my own story, the country where I was born, and the several actions and events of my life, before I came hither."
strive to express myself by similitudes, humbly desiring his assistance when I wanted proper words;” which he was pleased to promise me.

I said, “my birth was of honest parents, in an island called England; which was remote from his country, as many days’ journey as the strongest of his honour’s servants could travel in the annual course of the sun; that I was bred a surgeon, whose trade it is to cure wounds and hurts in the body, gotten by accident or violence; that my country was governed by a female man, whom we called queen; that I left it to get riches, whereby I might maintain myself and family, when I should return; that, in my last voyage, I was commander of the ship, and had about fifty Yahoos under me, many of which died at sea, and I was forced to supply them by others picked out from several nations; that our ship was twice in danger of being sunk, the first time by a great storm, and the second by striking against a rock.” Here my master interposed, by asking me, “how I could persuade strangers, out of different countries, to venture with me, after the losses I had sustained, and the hazards I had run?” I said, “they were fellows of desperate fortunes, forced to fly from the places of their birth on account of their poverty or their crimes. Some were undone by lawsuits; others spent all they had in drinking, whoring, and gaming; others fled for treason; many for murder, theft, poisoning, robbery, perjury, forgery, coinage false money, for committing rapes, or sodomy; for flying from their colours, or deserting to the enemy; and most of them had broken prison; none of these durst return to their native countries, for fear of being hanged, or of starving in a jail; and therefore they were under the necessity of seeking a livelihood in other places.”

During this discourse, my master was pleased to interrupt me several times. I had made use of many circumlocutions in describing to him the nature of the several crimes for which most of our crew had been forced to fly their country. This labour took up several days’ conversation, before he was able to comprehend me. He was wholly at a loss to know what could be the use or necessity of practising those vices. To expresarme con símiles, y le suplicaba humildemente su ayuda para cuando me faltase la palabra propia, asistencia que se dignó prometerme.

Le dije que había nacido de padres honrados, en una isla llamada Inglaterra, muy apartada de su país, a tantas jornadas como el criado más robusto de su señoría pudiese hacer durante el curso anual del sol. Que me hicieron cirujano, oficio que consistía en curar heridas y daños del cuerpo recibidos por azar o por violencia. Que mi país estaba gobernado por una hembra del hombre, llamada reina. Que yo salí de él para obtener riquezas con que mantenerme y mantener a mi familia cuando regresara. Que en mi último viaje yo era capitán del barco y llevaba cincuenta yahoos a mis órdenes, muchos de los cuales murieron en el mar, por lo que tuve que substituirlos con otros recogidos en diferentes naciones. Que nuestro barco estuvo dos veces en riesgo de irse a pique: la primera, a causa de una tempestad, y la segunda, por haberse estrellado contra una roca. Al llegar aquí me interrumpió mi amo preguntándome cómo había podido persuadir a extranjeros de otras naciones a aventurarse conmigo, después de las pérdidas que ya había sufrido y los peligros en que me había encontrado. Le dije que eran gentes de suerte desesperada, forzada a huir de los lugares en que habían nacido a causa de su pobreza o de sus crímenes. Unos estaban arruinados por pleitos; a otros fuéseles cuanto tenían tras la bebida, el lupanar y el juego; otros escapaban por traición; muchos, por asesinato, hurto, envenenamiento, robo, perjurio, falsedad, acuñación de moneda falsa, prófugos de su bandera o desertores al campo enemigo, y la mayor parte habían quebrantado prisión. Ninguno de los tales se atrevía a volver a su país natural por miedo de morir ahorrado o de hambre en una cárcel; y de consiguiente, se veían en la necesidad de buscar medio de vida en otros sitios.
clear up which, I endeavoured to give some ideas of the desire of power and riches; of the terrible effects of lust, intemperance, malice, and envy. All this I was forced to define and describe by putting cases and making suppositions. After which, like one whose imagination was struck with something never seen or heard of before, he would lift up his eyes with amazement and indignation. Power, government, war, law, punishment, and a thousand other things, had no terms wherein that language could express them, which made the difficulty almost insuperable, to give my master any conception of what I meant. But being of an excellent understanding, much improved by contemplation and converse, he at last arrived at a competent knowledge of what human nature, in our parts of the world, is capable to perform, and desired I would give him some particular account of that land which we call Europe, but especially of my own country.

CHAPTER V.

The reader may please to observe, that the following extract of many conversations I had with my master, contains a summary of the most material points which were discoursed at several times for above two years; his honour often desiring fuller satisfaction, as I farther improved in the HOUYHNHNM tongue. I laid before him, as well as I could, the whole state of Europe; I discoursed of trade and manufactures, of arts and sciences; and the answers I gave to all the questions he made, as they arose upon several subjects, were a fund of conversation not to be exhausted. But I shall here only set down the substance of what passed between us concerning my own country, reducing it in order as well as I can, without any regard to time or other vicios, lo que yo intenté aclararle dándole alguna idea de los deseos de pobres y ricos, de los efectos terribles de la juria, la intemperancia, la maldad y la envidia. Tuve que definirlo y describirlo todo poniendo ejemplos y haciendo suposiciones; después de lo cual, como si su imaginación hubiera recibido el choque de algo jamás visto ni oído, alzó los ojos con asombro e indignación. El poder, el gobierno, la guerra, la ley, el castigo y mil cosas más no tenían en aquel idioma palabra que los expresara, por lo que encontré dificultades casi insuperables para dar a mi amo idea de lo que quería decirle. Pero como tenía excelente entendimiento, desarrollado por la observación y la plática, llegó, por fin, a un conocimiento suficiente de lo que es capaz de hacer la naturaleza humana en las partes del mundo que habitamos nosotros, y me pidió que le diese cuenta en particular de esa tierra que llamamos Europa, y especialmente de mi país.

Capítulo V

El autor, obedeciendo órdenes de su amo, informa a éste del estado de Inglaterra. —Las causas de guerra entre los príncipes de Europa. —El autor comienza a exponer la Constitución inglesa.

Me permito advertir al lector que el siguiente extracto de muchas conversaciones que con mi amo sostuve contiene un sumario de los extremos de más consecuencia, sobre los cuales discutimos en varias veces durante el transcurso de más de dos años, pues su señoría me iba pidiendo nuevas explicaciones conforme yo iba progresando en la lengua houyhnhnm. Le expuse lo mejor que pude el completo estado de Europa; diénté sobre comercio e industria, sobre artes y ciencias; y las respuestas que yo daba a todas sus preguntas sobre las diversas materias venían a ser un fondo inagotable de conversación. Pero sólo voy a trasladar la substancia de lo que tratamos respecto de mi país, ordenándolo como pueda, sin atención al tiempo ni a otras circunstancias, con tal de
circumstances, while I strictly adhere to truth. My only concern is, that I shall hardly be able to do justice to my master’s arguments and expressions, which must needs suffer by my want of capacity, as well as by a translation into our barbarous English.

In obedience, therefore, to his honour’s commands, I related to him the Revolution under the Prince of Orange; the long war with France, entered into by the said prince, and renewed by his successor, the present queen, wherein the greatest powers of Christendom were engaged, and which still continued: I computed, at his request, “that about a million of Yahoos might have been killed in the whole progress of it; and perhaps a hundred or more cities taken, and five times as many ships burnt or sunk.”

He asked me, “what were the usual causes or motives that made one country go to war with another?” I answered “they were innumerable; but I should only mention a few of the chief. Sometimes the ambition of princes, who never think they have land or people enough to govern; sometimes the corruption of ministers, who engage their master in a war, in order to stifle or divert the clamour of the subjects against their evil administration. Difference in opinions has cost many millions of lives: for instance, whether flesh be bread, or bread be flesh; whether the juice of a certain berry be blood or wine; whether whistling be a vice or a virtue; whether it be better to kiss a post, or throw it into the fire; what is the best colour for a coat, whether black, white, red, or gray; and whether it should be long or short, narrow or wide, dirty or clean; with many more.

Neither are any wars so furious and bloody, or of so long a continuance, as those occasioned by difference in opinion, especially if it be in things indifferent.

“Sometimes the quarrel between two princes is to decide which of them shall dispossess a third of his dominions, where neither of them pretend to any right. Sometimes one prince quarrels with another for fear
the other should quarrel with him. Sometimes a war is entered upon, because the enemy is too strong; and sometimes, because he is too weak. Sometimes our neighbours want the things which we have, or have the things which we want, and we both fight, till they take ours, or give us theirs. It is a very justifiable cause of a war, to invade a country after the people have been wasted by famine, destroyed by pestilence, or embroiled by factions among themselves. It is justifiable to enter into war against our nearest ally, when one of his towns lies convenient for us, or a territory of land, that would render our dominions round and complete. If a prince sends forces into a nation, where the people are poor and ignorant, he may lawfully put half of them to death, and make slaves of the rest, in order to civilize and reduce them from their barbarous way of living. It is a very kingly, honourable, and frequent practice, when one prince desires the assistance of another, to secure him against an invasion, that the assistant, when he has driven out the invader, should seize on the dominions himself, and kill, imprison, or banish, the prince he came to relieve. Alliance by blood, or marriage, is a frequent cause of war between princes; and the nearer the kindred is, the greater their disposition to quarrel; poor nations are hungry, and rich nations are proud; and pride and hunger will ever be at variance. For these reasons, the trade of a soldier is held the most honourable of all others; because a soldier is a Yahoo hired to kill, in cold blood, as many of his own species, who have never offended him, as possibly he can.

“There is likewise a kind of beggarly princes in Europe, not able to make war by themselves, who hire out their troops to richer nations, for so much a day to each man; of which they keep three-fourths to themselves, and it is the best part of their maintenance: such are those in many northern parts of Europe.”

“What you have told me,” said my master, “upon the subject of war, does indeed discover most admirably the effects of that reason you pretend to: miedo de que el otro riña con él. A veces se entra en una guerra porque el enemigo es demasiado fuerte, y a veces porque es demasiado débil. A veces nuestros vecinos carecen de las cosas que tenemos nosotros o tienen las cosas de que nosotros carecemos, y contenemos hasta que ellos se llevan nuestras o nos dan las suyas. Es causa muy justificable para una guerra el propósito de invadir un país cuyos habitantes acaban de ser diezmados por el hambre, o destruidos por la peste, o desnudos por las banderías. Es justificable mover guerra a nuestro más íntimo aliado cuando una de sus ciudades está enclavada en punto conveniente para nosotros, o una región o territorio suyo haría nuestros dominios más redondos y completos. Si un príncipe envía fuerzas a una nación donde las gentes son pobres e ignorantes, puede legítimamente matar a la mitad de ellas y esclavizar a las restantes para civilizarlas y redimirlas de su bárbaro sistema de vida. Es muy regia, honorable y frecuente práctica cuando un príncipe pide la asistencia de otro para defenderse de una invasión, que el favorecedor, cuando ha expulsado a los invasores, se apodere de los dominios por su cuenta, y mate, encarcele o destierre al príncipe a quien fue a remediar. Los vínculos de sangre o matrimoniales son una frecuente causa de guerra entre principes, y cuanto más próximo es el parentesco, más firme es la disposición para refir. Las naciones pobres están hambrientas, y las naciones ricas son orgullosas, y el orgullo y el hambre estarán en discordia siempre. Por estas razones, el oficio de soldado se considera como el más honorable de todos; pues un soldado es un yahoo asalariado para matar a sangre fría, en el mayor número que le sea posible, individuos de su propia especie que no le han ofendido nunca.

Asimismo existe en Europa una clase de miserables principes, incapaces de hacer la guerra por su cuenta, que alquilan sus tropas a naciones más ricas por un tanto al día cada hombre; de esto guardan para sí los tres cuartos y sacan la parte mejor de su sustento. Tales son los principes de Alemania y otras regiones del norte de Europa.

“Lo que me has contado —dijo mi amo— sobre la cuestión de las guerras, sin duda revela muy admirablemente los efectos de esa razón que os atribuís; sin
however, it is happy that the shame is
greater than the danger; and that nature
has left you utterly incapable of doing
much mischief. For, your mouths lying
flat with your faces, you can hardly bite
each other to any purpose, unless by
consent. Then as to the claws upon your
feet before and behind, they are so short
tender, that one of our YAHOOs
would drive a dozen of yours before
him. And therefore, in recounting the
numbers of those who have been killed
in battle, I cannot but think you have
said the thing which is not.”

I could not
forbear [abstain]
shaking my head, and smiling a little
at his ignorance. And being no
stranger to the art of war, I gave him a
description of cannons, culverins,
muskets, carabines, pistols, bullets,
powder, swords, bayonets, battles,
sieges, retreats, attacks, undermines,
countermines, bombardments, sea
fights, ships sunk with a thousand men,
twenty thousand killed on each side,
dying groans, limbs flying in the air,
smoke, noise, confusion, trampling to
death under horses’ feet, flight,
pursuit, victory; fields strewn with
carcasses, left for food to dogs and
wolves and birds of prey; plundering,
stripping, ravishing, burning, and
destroying. And to set forth the valour
of my own dear countrymen, I assured
him, “that I had seen them blow up a
hundred enemies at once in a siege,
and as many in a ship, and beheld the
dead bodies drop down in pieces from
the clouds, to the great diversion of the
spectators.”

I was going on to more particulars,
when my master commanded me silence.
He said, “whoever understood the nature
of YAHOOs, might easily believe it
possible for so vile an animal to be
capable of every action I had named, if
their strength and cunning equalled their
malice. But as my discourse had
increased his abhorrence of the whole
species, so he found it gave him a
disturbance in his mind to which he was
wholly a stranger before.

He thought his ears, being used to
such abominable words, might, by
degrees, admit them with less
detestation: that although he hated the
YAHOOs of this country, yet he no

embargo, es fortuna que resulte mayor la
vergüenza que el peligro, ya que la Na-
turaleza os ha hecho incapaces de causar
gran daño. Con vuestras bocas, al nivel
mismo de la cara, no podéis morder uno a otro con resultado, a menos que os
dejéis; y en cuanto a las garras de las
patas delanteras y traseras, son tan cor-
tas y blandas, que uno sólo de nuestros
yahoos se llevaría por delante a una do-
cena de los vuestros. Por lo tanto, no
puedo por menos de pensar que al refe-
rirse al número de los muertos en batalla
has dicho la cosa que no es.”

No pude contener un movimiento de
cabeza y una ligera sonrisa ante su ig-
norancia. Y, como no me era ajeno el
arte de la guerra, le hablé de cañones,
culebrinas, mosquetes, carabinas, pisto-
las, balas, pólvoras, espadas, bayonetas,
batallas, sitios, retiradas, ataques, mi-
nas, contraminas, bombardeos, comba-
tes navales, buques hundidos con un
millar de hombros, veinte mil muertos
de cada parte, gemidos de moribundos,
miembros volando por el aire, humo,
ruido, confusión, muertes por aplasta-
miento bajo las patas de los caballos,
huidas, persecución, victoria, campos
cubiertos de cadáveres que sirven de ali-
mento a perros, lobos y aves de rapiña;
pillajes, despojos, estupros, incendios y
destrucciones. Y para enaltecer el valor
de mis queridos compatriotas, le asegu-
ré que yo les había visto volar cien ene-
migos de una vez en un sitio y otros tan-
tos en un buque, y había contemplado
cómo caían de las nubes hechos trizas
los cuerpos muertos, con gran diversión
de los espectadores.

Iba a pasar a nuevos detalles, cuando
mi amo me ordenó silencio. Dije que
cualquiera que conociese el natural de los
yahoos podía fácilmente creer posible en
un animal tan vil todas las acciones a que
yo me había referido, si su fuerza y su
astucia igualaran a su maldad. Pero ad-
vertía que mi discurso, al tiempo que au-
mentaba su aborrecimiento por la espe-
cie entera, había llevado a su inteligen-
cia una confusión que hasta allí le era
desconocida totalmente.

Pensaba que sus oídos, hechos a tan
abominables palabras, pudieran, por gra-
dos, recibirlas con menos execración. Aña-
dió que, aunque él odiaba a los yahoos de
su país, nunca los había culpado de sus-de-
more blamed them for their odious qualities, than he did a GNNAYH (a bird of prey) for its cruelty, or a sharp stone for cutting his hoof. But when a creature pretending to reason could be capable of such enormities, he dreaded lest the corruption of that faculty might be worse than brutality itself. He seemed therefore confident, that, instead of reason we were only possessed of some quality fitted to increase our natural vices; as the reflection from a troubled stream returns the image of an ill shapen body, not only larger but more distorted.”

He added, “that he had heard too much upon the subject of war, both in this and some former discourses. There was another point, which a little perplexed him at present. I had informed him, that some of our crew left their country on account of being ruined by law; that I had already explained the meaning of the word; but he was at a loss how it should come to pass, that the law, which was intended for every man’s preservation, should be any man’s ruin. Therefore he desired to be further satisfied what I meant by law, and the dispensers thereof, according to the present practice in my own country; because he thought nature and reason were sufficient guides for a reasonable animal, as we pretended to be, in showing us what he ought to do, and what to avoid.”

I assured his honour, “that the law was a science in which I had not much conversed, further than by employing advocates, in vain, upon some injustices that had been done me: however, I would give him all the satisfaction I was able.”

I said, “there was a society of men among us, bred up from their youth in the art of proving, by words multiplied for the purpose, that white is black, and black is white, according as they are paid. To this society all the rest of the people are slaves. For example, if my neighbour has a mind to my cow, he has a lawyer to prove that he ought to have my cow from me. I must then hire another to defend my right, it being against all rules of law that any man should be allowed to speak for himself. Now, in this case, I, who am the right testables cualidades de modo distinto que culpaba a una gnnayh (ave de rapiña) de su crueldad, o a una piedra afilada de cortarle el casco; pero cuando un ser que se atribuía razón se sentía capaz de tales enormidades, le asaltaba el temor de que la corrupción de esta facultad fuese peor que la brutalidad misma. Con todo, confiaba en que no era razón lo que poseíamos, sino solamente alguna cierta cualidad apropiada para aumentar nuestros defectos naturales; de igual modo que en un río de agitada corriente se refleja la imagen de un cuerpo disforme, no sólo mayor, sino también mucho más desfigurada.

Añadió que ya había oído hablar demasiado de guerras tanto en aquella como en anteriores pláticas, y había otro extremo que le tenía en la actualidad un poco perplejo. Le había yo dicho que algunos hombres de nuestra tripulación habían salido de su país a causa de haberles arruinado la ley, palabra ésta cuyo significado le había explicado ya; pero no podía comprender cómo era posible que la ley, creada para la protección de todos los hombres, pudiera ser la ruina de ninguno. Por consiguiente, me rogaba que le enterase mejor de lo que quería decirle cuando le hablaba de ley y de los dispensadores de ella, con arreglo a la práctica de mi país, porque él suponía que la Naturaleza y la razón eran guías suficientes para indicar a un animal razonable, como nosotros imaginábamos ser, qué debía hacer y qué debía evitar.

Aseguré a su señoría que la ley no era ciencia en que yo fuese muy perito, pues no había ido más allá de emplear abogados inútilmente con ocasión de algunas injusticias que se me habían hecho; sin embargo, le informaría hasta donde mis alcances llegaran.

Dijele que entre nosotros existía una sociedad de hombres educados desde su juventud en el arte de probar con palabras multiplicadas al efecto que lo blanco es negro y lo negro es blanco, según para lo que se les paga. «El resto de las gentes son esclavas de esta sociedad. Por ejemplo: si mi vecino quiere mi vaca, asalaría un abogado que pruebe que debe quitarme la vaca. Entonces yo tengo que asalarir otro para que defienda mi derecho, pues va contra todas las reglas de la ley que se permita a nadie hablar por sí mismo. Ahora bien; en este caso, yo, que
owner, lie under two great disadvantages: first, my lawyer, being practised almost from his cradle in defending falsehood, is quite out of his element when he would be an advocate for justice, which is an unnatural office he always attempts with great awkwardness, if not with ill-will. The second disadvantage is, that my lawyer must proceed with great caution, or else he will be reprimanded by the judges, and abhorred by his brethren, as one that would lessen the practice of the law. And therefore I have but two methods to preserve my cow. The first is, to gain over my adversary’s lawyer with a double fee, who will then betray his client by insinuating that he hath justice on his side. The second way is for my lawyer to make my cause appear as unjust as he can, by allowing the cow to belong to my adversary: and this, if it be skilfully done, will certainly bespeak the favour of the bench. Now your honour is to know, that these judges are persons appointed to decide all controversies of property, as well as for the trial of criminals, and picked out from the most dexterous lawyers, who are grown old or lazy; and having been biased all their lives against truth and equity, lie under such a fatal necessity of favouring fraud, perjury, and oppression, that I have known some of them refuse a large bribe from the side where justice lay, rather than injure the faculty, by doing any thing unbecoming their nature or their office.

4) “It is a maxim among these lawyers that whatever has been done before, may legally be done again: and therefore they take special care to record all the decisions formerly made against common justice, and the general reason of mankind. These, under the name of precedents, they produce as authorities to justify the most iniquitous opinions; and the judges never fail of directing accordingly.

“In pleading, they studiously avoid entering into the merits of the cause; but are loud, violent, and tedious, in dwelling upon all circumstances which are not to the purpose. For instance, in the case already mentioned; they never desire to know what claim or title my

sob is el propietario legítimo, tengo dos desventajas. La primera es que, como mi abogado se ha ejercitado casi desde su cuna en defender la falsedad, cuando quiere abogar por la justicia —oficio que no le es natural— lo hace siempre con gran torpeza, si no con mala fe. La segunda desventaja es que mi abogado debe proceder con gran precaución, pues de otro modo le reprenderán los jueces y le aborrecerán sus colegas, como a quien degrada el ejercicio de la ley. No tengo, pues, sino dos medios para defender mi vaca. El primero es ganarme al abogado de mi adversario con un estipendio doble, que le haga traicionar a su cliente insinuando que la vaca pertenece a mi adversario; y esto, si se hace diestramente, conquistará sin duda, el favor del tribunal. Ahora debe saber su señoría que estos jueces son las personas designadas para decidir en todos los litigios sobre propiedad, así como para entender en todas las acusaciones contra criminales, y que se los saca de entre los abogados más hábiles cuando se han hecho viejos o pezozos; y como durante toda su vida se han inclinado en contra de la verdad y de la equidad, es para ellos tan necesario favorecer el fraude, el perjurio y la vejación, que yo he sabido de varios que prefirieron rechazar un pingüe soborno de la parte a que asistía la justicia a injuriar a la Facultad haciendo cosa impura de la naturaleza de su oficio.

»Es máxima entre estos abogados que cualquier cosa que se haya hecho ya antes puede volver a hacerse legalmente, y, por lo tanto, tienen cuidado especial en guardar memoria de todas las determinaciones anteriormente tomadas contra la justicia común y contra la razón corriente de la Humanidad. Las exhiben, bajo el nombre de precedentes, como autoridades para justificar las opiniones más inicuas, y los jueces no dejan nunca de fallar de conformidad con ellas.

»Cuando defienden una causa evitan diligentemente todo lo que sea entrar en los fundamentos de ella; pero se detienen, alborotadores, violentos y fatigosos, sobre todas las circunstancias que no hacen al caso. En el antes mencionado, por ejemplo, no procurarán nunca averiguar qué derechos o títulos tiene mi adversario sobre
adversary has to my cow; but whether the said cow were red or black; her horns long or short; whether the field I graze her in be round or square; whether she was milked at home or abroad; what diseases she is subject to, and the like; after which they consult precedents, adjourn the cause from time to time, and in ten, twenty, or thirty years, come to an issue.

"It is likewise to be observed, that this society has a peculiar cant and jargon of their own, that no other mortal can understand, and wherein all their laws are written, which they take special care to multiply; whereby they have wholly confounded the very essence of truth and falsehood, of right and wrong; so that it will take thirty years to decide, whether the field left me by my ancestors for six generations belongs to me, or to a stranger three hundred miles off.

“In the trial of persons accused for crimes against the state, the method is much more short and commendable: the judge first sends to sound the disposition of those in power, after which he can easily hang or save a criminal, strictly preserving all due forms of law.”

Here my master interposing, said, “it was a pity, that creatures endowed with such prodigious abilities of mind, as these lawyers, by the description I gave of them, must certainly be, were not rather encouraged to be instructors of others in wisdom and knowledge.” In answer to which I assured his honour, “that in all points out of their own trade, they were usually the most ignorant and stupid generation among us, the most despicable in common conversation, avowed enemies to all knowledge and learning, and equally disposed to pervert the general reason of mankind in every other subject of discourse as in that of their own profession.”
CHAPTER VI.

[A continuation of the state of England under Queen Anne. The character of a first minister of state in European courts.]

My master was yet wholly at a loss to understand what motives could incite this race of lawyers to perplex, disquiet, and weary themselves, and engage in a confederacy of injustice, merely for the sake of injuring their fellow-animals; neither could he comprehend what I meant in saying, they did it for hire. Whereupon I was at much pains to describe to him the use of money, the materials it was made of, and the value of the metals; “that when a YAHOO had got a great store of this precious substance, he was able to purchase whatever he had a mind to; the finest clothing, the noblest houses, great tracts of land, the most costly meats and drinks, and have his choice of the most beautiful females. Therefore since money alone was able to perform all these feats, our YAHOOOS thought they could never have enough of it to spend, or to save, as they found themselves inclined, from their natural bent either to profusion or avarice; that the rich man enjoyed the fruit of the poor man’s labour, and the latter were a thousand to one in proportion to the former; that the bulk of our people were forced to live miserably, by labouring every day for small wages, to make a few live plentifully.”

Me extendí en estos y otros muchos detalles encaminados al mismo fin; pero su señoría seguía sin entenderme, pues partía del supuesto de que todos los animales tienen derecho a los productos de la tierra, y mucho más aquellos que dominan sobre todos los otros. De consiguiente, me pidió que le diese a conocer cuáles eran aquellas costosas viandas y cómo se nos ocurría desearlas a ninguno. Le enumeré cuantas se me vinieron a la memoria, con los diversos métodos para aderezarlas, cosa ésta que no podía hacerse sin enviar embarcaciones por mar a todas las partes de la tierra, así como para buscar licores que beber y sales y otros innumerables ingredientes. Le aseguré que había que dar tres vueltas por lo menos a toda la redondez del mundo para que uno de nuestros yahoos hembras escogidos pudiera tomar el desayuno o tener una taza...
her breakfast, or a cup to put it in.” He said “that must needs be a miserable country which cannot furnish food for its own inhabitants. But what he chiefly wondered at was, how such vast tracts of ground as I described should be wholly without fresh water, and the people put to the necessity of sending over the sea for drink.” I replied “that England (the dear place of my nativity) was computed to produce three times the quantity of food more than its inhabitants are able to consume, as well as liquors extracted from grain, or pressed out of the fruit of certain trees, which made excellent drink, and the same proportion in every other convenience of life. But, in order to feed the luxury and intemperance of the males, and the vanity of the females, we sent away the greatest part of our necessary things to other countries, whence, in return, we brought the materials of diseases, folly, and vice, to spend among ourselves. Hence it follows of necessity, that vast numbers of our people are compelled to seek their livelihood by begging, robbing, stealing, cheating, pimping, flattering, suborning, forswearing, forging, gaming, lying, fawning, hectoring, voting, scribbling, star-gazing, poisoning, whoring, canting, libelling, freethinking, and the like occupations:” every one of which terms I was at much pains to make him understand.

“That wine was not imported among us from foreign countries to supply the want of water or other drinks, but because it was a sort of liquid which made us merry by putting us out of our senses, diverted all melancholy thoughts, begat wild extravagant imaginations in the brain, raised our hopes and banished our fears, suspended every office of reason for a time, and deprived us of the use of our limbs, till we fell into a profound sleep; although it must be confessed, that we always awaked sick and dispirited; and that the use of this liquor filled us with diseases which made our lives uncomfortable and short.

“But beside all this, the bulk of our people supported themselves by furnishing the necessities or conveniences of life to the rich and to each other. For instance, when I am at en que verterlo. Dijome que había de ser aquél un país bien pobre cuando no producía alimento para sus habitantes; pero lo que le asombraba principalmente era que en aquellas vastas extensiones de terreno que yo pintaba faltase tan por completo el agua dulce, que la gente tuviese precisión de ir a buscar que beber más allá del mar. Le repliqué que Inglaterra —el lugar amado en que yo había nacido— se calculaba que producía tres veces la cantidad de alimento que podrían consumir sus habitantes, así como líquidos extraídos de semillas o sacados, por presión, de los frutos de ciertos árboles, que son excelentes bebidas, y que la misma proporción existe por lo que hace a las demás necesidades de la vida. Mas para alimentar la lascivia y la intemperancia de los machos y la vanidad de las hembras, enviábamos a otros países la mayor parte de nuestras cosas precisas, y recibíamos a cambio los elementos de enfermedades, extravagancias y vicios para consumirlos nosotros. De aquí se sigue necesariamente que nuestras gentes, en gran número, se ven empujadas a buscar su medio de vida en la mendicidad, el robo, la estafa, el fraude, el perjuicio, la adulación, el soborno, la falsificación, el juego, la mentira, la bajez, la baladronada, el voto, el garrapateo, la vista gorda, el envenenamiento, la hipocresía, el libelo, el filosofismo y otras ocupaciones análogas; términos todos éstos que me costó grandes trabajos hacerle prender.

Añadí que el vino no lo importábamos de países extranjeros para suplir la falta de agua y otras bebidas, sino porque era una clase de licor que nos ponía alegres por el sistema de hacernos perder el juicio; divirtió los pensamientos melancólicos, engendraba en nuestro cerebro disparatadas y extravagantes ideas, realizaba nuestras esperanzas y desterraba nuestros temores; durante algún tiempo suspendía todas las funciones de la razón y nos privaba del uso de nuestros miembros, hasta que caíamos en un sueño profundo. Aunque debía recono- cerse que no despertábamos siempre indispuestos y abatidos y que el uso de este licor nos llenaba de enfermedades que nos hacían la vida desagradable y corta.

«Pero además de todo esto —agregué—, la mayoría de las personas se mantienen en nuestra tierra satisfaciendo las necesidades o los caprichos de los ricos y viendo los suyos satisfechos mutuamente.
Por ejemplo: cuando yo estoy en mi casa y vestido como tengo que estar, llevo sobre mi cuerpo el trabajo de cien menestrales; la edificación y el moblaje de mi casa suponen el empleo de otros tantos, y cinco veces ese número el adorno de mi mujer.

I was going on to tell him of another sort of people, who get their livelihood by attending the sick, having, upon some occasions, informed his honour that many of my crew had died of diseases. But here it was with the utmost difficulty that I brought him to apprehend what I meant. “He could easily conceive, that a HOUYHNHM, grew weak and heavy a few days before his death, or by some accident might hurt a limb; but that nature, who works all things to perfection, should suffer any pains to breed in our bodies, he thought impossible, and desired to know the reason of so unaccountable an evil.”

I told him “we fed on a thousand things which operated contrary to each other; that we ate when we were not hungry, and drank without the provocation of thirst; that we sat whole nights drinking strong liquors, without eating a bit, which disposed us to sloth, inflamed our bodies, and precipitated or prevented digestion; that prostitute female YAHOOS acquired a certain malady, which bred rottenness in the bones of those who fell into their embraces; that this, and many other diseases, were propagated from father to son; so that great numbers came into the world with complicated maladies upon them; that it would be endless to give him a catalogue of all diseases incident to human bodies, for they would not be fewer than five or six hundred, spread over every limb and joint - in short, every part, external and intestine, having diseases appropriated to itself. To remedy which, there was a sort of people bred up among us in the profession, or pretence, of curing the sick. And because I had some skill in the faculty, I would, in gratitude to his honour, let him know the whole mystery and method by which they proceed.

“Ther fundamental is, that all diseases arise from repletion; whence they conclude, that a great evacuation
of the body is necessary, either through the natural passage or upwards at the mouth. Their next business is from herbs, minerals, gums, oils, shells, salts, juices, seaweed, excrements, barks of trees, serpents, toads, frogs, spiders, dead men’s flesh and bones, birds, beasts, and fishes, to form a composition, for smell and taste, the most abominable, nauseous, and detestable, they can possibly contrive, which the stomach immediately rejects with loathing, and this they call a vomit; or else, from the same store-house, with some other poisonous additions, they command us to take in at the orifice above or below (just as the physician then happens to be disposed) a medicine equally annoying and disgusting to the bowels; which, relaxing the belly, drives down all before it; and this they call a purge, or a clyster. For nature (as the physicians allege) having intended the superior anterior orifice only for the intromission of solids and liquids, and the inferior posterior for ejection, these artists ingeniously considering that in all diseases nature is forced out of her seat, therefore, to replace her in it, the body must be treated in a manner directly contrary, by interchanging the use of each orifice; forcing solids and liquids in at the anus, and making evacuations at the mouth.

“But, besides real diseases, we are subject to many that are only imaginary, for which the physicians have invented imaginary cures; these have their several names, and so have the drugs that are proper for them; and with these our female YAHOOs are always infested.

“One great excellency in this tribe, is their skill at prognostics, wherein they seldom fail; their predictions in real diseases, when they rise to any degree of malignity, generally portending death, which is always in their power, when recovery is not; and therefore, upon any unexpected signs of amendment, after they have pronounced their sentence, rather than be accused as false prophets, they know how to approve their sagacity to the world, by aseasonable dose.

“They are likewise of special use...
to husbands and wives who are grown weary of their mates; to eldest sons, to great ministers of state, and often to princes."

I had formerly, upon occasion, discoursed with my master upon the nature of government in general, and particularly of our own excellent constitution, deservedly the wonder and envy of the whole world. But having here accidentally mentioned a minister of state, he commanded me, some time after, to inform him, “what species of YAHOO I particularly meant by that appellation.”

I told him, “that a first or chief minister of state, who was the person I intended to describe, was the creature wholly exempt from joy and grief, love and hatred, pity and anger; at least, makes use of no other passions, but a violent desire of wealth, power, and titles; that he applies his words to all uses, except to the indication of his mind; that he never tells a truth but with an intent that you should take it for a lie; nor a lie, but with a design that you should take it for a truth; that those he speaks worst of behind their backs are in the surest way of preferment; and whenever he begins to praise you to others, or to yourself, you are from that day forlorn. The worst mark you can receive is a promise, especially when it is confirmed with an oath; after which, every wise man retires, and gives over all hopes.

“There are three methods, by which a man may rise to be chief minister. The first is, by knowing how, with prudence, to dispose of a wife, a daughter, or a sister; the second, by betraying or undermining his predecessor; and the third is, by a furious zeal, in public assemblies, against the corruption’s of the court. But a wise prince would rather choose to employ those who practise the last of these methods; because such zealots prove always the most obsequious and subservient to the will and passions of their master. That these ministers, having all employments at their disposal, preserve themselves in power, by bribing the majority of a senate or great council; and at last, by an expedient, called an act of indemnity” (whereof I described the nature to him),

para maridos y mujeres que están aburridos de su pareja, para los hijos mayores, para los grandes ministros de Estado, y a menudo para los principes.

Había yo tenido ya ocasión de discorrir con mi amo sobre la naturaleza del gobierno en general, y particularmente sobre nuestra magnífica Constitución, legítima maravilla y envidia del mundo entero. Pero como acabase de nombrar incidentalmente a un ministro de Estado, me mandó al poco tiempo que le informase de qué especie de yahoos era lo que yo designaba con tal nombre en particular.

Le dije que un primer ministro, o ministro presidente, que era la persona que iba a pintarle, era un ser exento de alegría y dolor, amor y odio, piedad y cólera, o, por lo menos, que no hace uso de otra pasión que un violento deseo de riquezas, poder y títulos. Emplea sus palabras para todos los usos, menos para indicar cuál es su opinión; nunca dice la verdad sino con la intención de que se tome por una mentira, ni una mentira sino con el propósito de que se tome por una verdad. Aquellos de quienes peor habla en su ausencia son los que están en camino seguro de predicamento, y si empieza a hacer vuestra alabanza a otros o a vosotros mismos, podréis consideraros en el abandono desde aquel instante. Lo peor de él se puede recibir es una promesa, especialmente cuando va confirmada por un juramento; después de esta prueba, todo hombre prudente se retira y renuncia a todas las esperanzas.

Tres son los métodos por que un hombre puede elevarse a primer ministro: el primero es saber usar con prudencia de una esposa, una hija o una hermana; el segundo, traicionar y minar el terreno al predecesor, y el tercero, mostrar en asambleas públicas furioso celo contra las corrupciones de la corte. Pero un principe preferirá siempre a los que practican el último de estos métodos; porque tales celosos resultan siempre los más rendidos y subordinados a la voluntad y a las pasiones de su señor. Estos ministros, como tienen todos los empleos a su disposición, se mantienen en el Poder corrompiendo a la mayoría de un Senado o un gran Consejo; y, por último, por medio de un expediente llamado Acta de Indemnidad —cuya naturaleza expliqué a mi amo—, se
"they secure themselves from after-reckonings, and retire from the public laden with the spoils of the nation.

The palace of a chief minister is a seminary to breed up others in his own trade: the pages, lackeys, and porters, by imitating their master, become ministers of state in their several districts, and learn to excel in the three principal ingredients, of insolence, lying, and bribery. Accordingly, they have a subaltern court paid to them by persons of the best rank; and sometimes by the force of dexterity and impudence, arrive, through several gradations, to be successors to their lord.

"He is usually governed by a decayed wench, or favourite footman, who are the tunnels through which all graces are conveyed, and may properly be called, in the last resort, the governors of the kingdom."

One day, in discourse, my master, having heard me mention the nobility of my country, was pleased to make me a compliment which I could not pretend to deserve: "that he was sure I must have been born of some noble family, because I far exceeded in shape, colour, and cleanliness, all the YAHOOS of his nation, although I seemed to fail in strength and agility, which must be imputed to my different way of living from those other brutes; and besides I was not only endowed with the faculty of speech, but likewise with some rudiments of reason, to a degree that, with all his acquaintance, I passed for a prodigy."

He made me observe, "that among the HOUYHNHNMS, the white, the sorrel, and the iron-gray, were not so exactly shaped as the bay, the dapple-gray, and the black; nor born with equal talents of mind, or a capacity to improve them; and therefore continued always in the condition of servants, without ever aspiring to match out of their own race, which in that country would be reckoned monstrous and unnatural."

I made his honour my most humble acknowledgments for the good opinion he was pleased to conceive of me, but aseguran contra cualquier ajuste de cuentas que pudiera sobrevenir y se retiran de la vida pública cargados con los despojos de la nación.

El palacio de un primer ministro es un seminario donde otros se educan en el mismo oficio. Pajes, lacayos y porteros, por imitación de su señor, se convierten en ministros de Estado de sus jurisdicciones respectivas y cuidan de sobresalir en los tres principales componentes de insolencia, embuste y soborno. De este modo tienen cortes subalternas que les pagan personas del más alto rango, y, a veces, por la fuerza de la habilidad y de la desvergüenza, llegan, después de diversas gradaciones, a sucesores del señor.

El primer ministro está gobernado ordinariamente por una mujerzuela degenerada o por un lacayo favorito, que son los túneles por donde se conduce toda gracia y que, a fin de cuentas, pueden ser propiamente los calificados de verdaderos gobernadores del reino.

Conversando un día, mi amo, que me había oído hablar de la nobleza de mi país, se dignó tener conmigo una galantería que yo no hubiera soñado merecer, y consistió en decirme que estaba seguro de que yo había de proceder de alguna familia noble, pues aventajaba con mucho a todos los yahoos de una nación en forma, color y limpieza, aunque pareciera cederles en fuerza y agilidad, lo que debía achacarse a mi modo de vivir, diferente del de aquellos otros animales; y, además, no sólo estaba yo dotado del uso de la palabra, sino también con algunos rudimentos de razón; a tal grado, que pasaba por un prodigio entre todos sus conocimientos.

Hizome observar que, entre los houyhnhnms, el blanco, el alazán y el rucio obscuro no estaban tan bien formados como el bayo, el rucio rogado y el negro; ni tampoco nacían con iguales talentos ni capacidad de cultivarlos. De consiguiente, vivían siempre como criados, sin aspirar nunca a salirse de su casta, lo que se consideraría monstruoso y absurdo en el país.

Di a su señoría las gracias más rendidas por la buena opinión que se había dignado formar.
assured him at the same time, “that my birth was of the lower sort, having been born of plain honest parents, who were just able to give me a tolerable education; that nobility, among us, was altogether a different thing from the idea he had of it; that our young noblemen are bred from their childhood in idleness and luxury; that, as soon as years will permit, they consume their vigour, and contract odious diseases among lewd females; and when their fortunes are almost ruined, they marry some woman of mean birth, disagreeable person, and unsound constitution (merely for the sake of money), whom they hate and despise. That the productions of such marriages are generally scrofulous, rickety, or deformed children; and which means the family seldom continues above three generations, unless the wife takes care to provide a healthy father, among her neighbours or domestics, in order to improve and continue the breed. That a weak diseased body, a meagre countenance, and a sallow complexion, are the true marks of noble blood; and a healthy robust appearance is so disgraceful in a man of quality, that the world concludes his real father to have been a groom or a coachman. The imperfections of his mind run parallel with those of his body, being a composition of spleen, dullness, ignorance, caprice, sensuality, and pride.

“Without the consent of this illustrious body, no law can be enacted, repealed, or altered: and these nobles have likewise the decision of all our possessions, without appeal.” (6)

CHAPTER VII.

[The author’s great love of his native country. His master’s observations upon the constitution and administration of England, as described by the author, with parallel cases and comparisons. His master’s observations upon human nature.]

The reader may be disposed to wonder how I could prevail on myself to give so free a representation of my de mi; pero le dije al mismo tiempo que mi extracción era modestísima, pues mis padres eran honradas gentes, sencillas, que gracias que hubiesen podido darme una mediana educación. Añadi que la nobleza entre nosotros era cosa por completo diferente de la que él entendía como tal; que nuestros jóvenes nobles se educan en la pereza y en el lujo, y cuando casi han arruinado su fortuna se casan por el dinero con alguna mujer de principal nacimiento, desagradable y enfermiza, a quien odian y desprecian. Los frutos de tales matrimonios son, por regla general, niños escrofulosos, raquíticos o deformados; y en virtud de esto, la familia casi nunca pasa de tres generaciones, a menos que la esposa se cuide de buscar un padre saludable entre sus vecinos o sus criados para mejorar y perpetuar la estirpe. Un cuerpo enfermo y flaco, un rostro delgado y un cutis descolorido son las señales verdaderas de sangre noble; y una apariencia sana y robusta es una desgracia enorme en una persona de calidad, porque la gente deduce en seguida que el verdadero padre debió de ser un mozo de cuadra o un cochero. Las imperfecciones de la inteligencia corren parejas con las del cuerpo, y se concretan en una composición de melancolia, estupidez, ignorancia, capricho, sensualidad y orgullo.

Sin el consentimiento de esta ilustre clase no puede hacerse, rechazarse ni alterarse ninguna ley; y de estas leyes dependen los fallos sobre todas nuestras propiedades, sin apelación.

Capítulo VII

El gran cariño del autor hacia su país natal. —Observaciones de su amo sobre la constitución y administración de Inglaterra, según los pinta el autor, en casos paralelos y comparaciones. —Observaciones de su amo sobre la naturaleza humana.

Quizá el lector está a punto de maravillarse de cómo podía yo decidirme a hacer una tan franca pintura de mi pro-
own species, among a race of mortals who are already too apt to conceive the vilest opinion of humankind, from that entire congruity between me and their YAHOOSS. But I must freely confess, that the many virtues of those excellent quadrupeds, placed in opposite view to human corruptions, had so far opened my eyes and enlarged my understanding, that I began to view the actions and passions of man in a very different light, and to think the honour of my own kind not worth managing; which, besides, it was impossible for me to do, before a person of so acute a judgment as my master, who daily convinced me of a thousand faults in myself, whereof I had not the least perception before, and which, with us, would never be numbered even among human infirmities. I had likewise learned, from his example, an utter detestation of all falsehood or disguise; and truth appeared so amiable to me, that I determined upon sacrificing every thing to it.

Let me deal so candidly with the reader as to confess that there was yet a much stronger motive for the freedom I took in my representation of things. I had not yet been a year in this country before I contracted such a love and veneration for the inhabitants, that I entered on a firm resolution never to return to humankind, but to pass the rest of my life among these admirable HOUYHNHNMS, in the contemplation and practice of every virtue, where I could have no example or incitement to vice. But it was decreed [ordained] by fortune, my perpetual enemy, that so great a felicity should not fall to my share. However, it is now some comfort to reflect, that in what I said of my countrymen, I extenuated their faults as much as I durst before so strict an examiner; and upon every article gave as favourable a turn as the matter would bear. For, indeed, who is there alive that will not be swayed by his bias and partiality to the place of his birth?

I have related the substance of several conversations I had with my master during the greatest part of the time I had the honour to be in his service; but have, indeed, for brevity sake, omitted much more than is here set pia especie entre una raza de mortales ya demasiado puesta a concebir la más baja opinión del género humano, dada la completa identidad entre sus yahoos y yo. Pero debo confesar sinceramente que las muchas virtudes de aquellos excelentes cuadrupedos, puestas en parangón con las corrupciones humanas, de tal manera me habían abierto los ojos y avivado el entendimiento, que comenzaba a considerar las acciones y las pasiones del hombre con criterio muy distinto y a creer que el honor de mi raza no merece la pena de que se discurren arbitrios en su apoyo; lo que, además no me hubiera servido de nada ante personas de tan agudo entendimiento como mi amo, que a diario me llamaba la atención sobre mil faltas mías de que yo jamás me había dado la menor cuenta, y que entre nosotros nunca se hubiesen considerado en el número de las flaquezas humanas. Asimismo había aprendido en su ejemplo la enemiga más absoluta a la mentira y el disimulo; y la verdad me parecía tan digna de ser amada, que resolví sacrificarlo todo a ella.

Voy a tener con el lector la ingenuidad de confesar que aún había un motivo mucho más poderoso para la franqueza que puse en mi descripción de las cosas. Todavía no llevaba un año en aquel país, y ya había concebido tal amor y veneración por los habitantes, que tomé la resolución firme de no volver jamás a sumarme a la especie humana y de pasar el resto de mi vida entre aquellos admirables houyhnnms, en la contemplación y la práctica de todas las virtudes, donde no se me ofreciera ejemplo ni excitación para el vicio. Pero había previsto la fortuna, mi constante enemiga, que no fuera para mí tan gran felicidad. Sin embargo, me sirve ahora de consuelo pensar que en lo que dije de mis compatriotas atenué sus faltas todo lo que me atreví ante examinador tan riguroso, y di a todos los asuntos el giro más favorable que permitían. Porque ¿habrá en el mundo quien no se deje llevar de la parcialidad y la inclinación por el sitio de su nacimiento?

He referido la esencia de las varias conversaciones que tuve con mi amo durante la mayor parte del tiempo que me cupo el honor de estar a su servicio; pero, en gracia a la brevedad, he omitido mucho más de lo que he consignado. Cuan-
When I had answered all his questions, and his curiosity seemed to be fully satisfied, he sent for me one morning early, and commanded me to sit down at some distance (an honour which he had never before conferred upon me). He said, “he had been very seriously considering my whole story, as far as it related both to myself and my country; that he looked upon us as a sort of animals, to whose share, by what accident he could not conjecture, some small pittance of reason had fallen, whereof we made no other use, than by its assistance, to aggravate our natural corruptions, and to acquire new ones, which nature had not given us; that we disarmed ourselves of the few abilities she had bestowed; had been very successful in multiplying our original wants, and seemed to spend our whole lives in vain endeavours to supply them by our own inventions; that, as to myself, it was manifest I had neither the strength nor agility of a common YAHOO; that I walked infirmly on my hinder feet; had found out a contrivance to make my claws of no use or defence, and to remove the hair from my chin, which was intended as a shelter from the sun and the weather: lastly, that I could neither run with speed, nor climb trees like my brethren,” as he called them, “the YAHOOs in his country.

“That our institutions of government and law were plainly owing to our gross defects in reason, and by consequence in virtue; because reason alone is sufficient to govern a rational creature; which was, therefore, a character we had no pretence to challenge, even from the account I had given of my own people; although he manifestly perceived, that, in order to favour them, I had concealed many particulars, and often said the thing which was not.

“He was the more confirmed in this opinion, because, he observed, that as I agreed in every feature of my body with other YAHOOs, except where it was to my real disadvantage in point of strength, speed, and activity, the shortness of my claws, and some other particulars where
nature had no part; so from the representation I had given him of our lives, our manners, and our actions, he found as near a resemblance in the disposition of our minds.” He said, “the YAHOOs were known to hate one another, more than they did any different species of animals; and the reason usually assigned was, the odiousness of their own shapes, which all could see in the rest, but not in themselves. He had therefore begun to think it not unwise in us to cover our bodies, and by that invention conceal many of our deformities from each other, which would else be hardly supportable. But he now found he had been mistaken, and that the dissensions of those brutes in his country were owing to the same cause with ours, as I had described them.

For if,” said he, “you throw among five YAHOOs as much food as would be sufficient for fifty, they will, instead of eating peaceably, fall together by the ears, each single one impatient to have all to itself; and therefore a servant was usually employed to stand by while they were feeding abroad, and those kept at home were tied at a distance from each other: that if a cow died of age or accident, before a HOUYHNHNMM could secure it for his own YAHOOs, those in the neighbourhood would come in herds to seize it, and then would ensue such a battle as I had described, with terrible wounds made by their claws on both sides, although they seldom were able to kill one another, for want of such convenient instruments of death as we had invented. At other times, the like battles have been fought between the YAHOOs of several neighbourhoods, without any visible cause; those of one district watching all opportunities to surprise the next, before they are prepared. But if they find their project has miscarried, they return home, and, for want of enemies, engage in what I call a civil war among themselves.

“That in some fields of his country there are certain shining stones of several colours, whereof the YAHOOs are violently fond: and when part of these stones is fixed in the earth, as it sometimes happens, they will dig with
their claws for whole days to get them out; then carry them away, and hide them by heaps in their kennels; but still looking round with great caution, for fear their comrades should find out their treasure.” My master said, “he could never discover the reason of this unnatural appetite, or how these stones could be of any use to a YAHOO; but now he believed it might proceed from the same principle of avarice which I had ascribed to mankind. That he had once, by way of experiment, privately removed a heap of these stones from the place where one of his YAHOOS had buried it; whereupon the sordid animal, missing his treasure, by his loud lamenting brought the whole herd to the place, there miserably howled, then fell to biting and tearing the rest, began to pine away, would neither eat, nor sleep, nor work, till he ordered a servant privately to convey the stones into the same hole, and hide them as before; which, when his YAHOO had found, he presently recovered his spirits and good humour, but took good care to remove them to a better hiding place, and has ever since been a very serviceable brute.”

My master further assured me, which I also observed myself, “that in the fields where the shining stones abound, the fiercest and most frequent battles are fought, occasioned by perpetual inroads of the neighbouring YAHOOSS.”

He said, “it was common, when two YAHOOS discovered such a stone in a field, and were contending which of them should be the proprietor, a third would take the advantage, and carry it away from them both;” which my master would needs contend to have some kind of resemblance with our suits at law; wherein I thought it for our credit not to undeceive him; since the decision he mentioned was much more equitable than many decrees among us; because the plaintiff and defendant there lost nothing beside the stone they contended for: whereas our courts of equity would never have dismissed the cause, while either of them had any thing left.

My master, continuing his discourse, said, “there was nothing that rendered the YAHOOS more odious, than their undistinguishing appetite to devour yahoos con las garras días enteros hasta lograr sacarlas, y luego se las llevaban y las ocultaban en sus covachas, formando montón; todo ello mirando con grandes precauciones para impedir que los compa-

deros descubriesen el tesoro. Dijo mi amo que nunca había podido comprender la ra-

zón de este apetito, contrario a las leyes naturales, ni para qué podrían servir a un yahoo aquellas piedras; pero ahora supo-


1 to pine (away), languidecer  
2 to pine for, suspirar por, añorar
every thing that came in their way, whether herds, roots, berries, the 
corrupted flesh of animals, or all mingled together: and it was peculiar 
in their temper, that they were fonder of what they could get by rapine or stealth, 
at a greater distance, than much better food provided for them at home. If their 
prey held out, they would eat till they 
were ready to burst; after which, nature 
had pointed out to them a certain root 
that gave them a general evacuation.

“There was also another kind of root, 
very juicy, but somewhat rare and difficult to be found, which the YAHOOs 
sought for with much eagerness, and 
suck it with a great delight; it 
produced in them the same effects that 
wine has upon us. It would make them 
sometimes hug, and sometimes tear one 
another; they would howl, and grin, and 
chatter, and reel, and tumble, and then 
fall asleep in the mud.”

I did indeed observe that the 
YAHOOs were the only animals in this 
country subject to any diseases; which, however, were much fewer than horses 
have among us, and contracted, not by 
any ill-treatment they meet with, but by 
the nastiness and greediness of that 
sordid brute. Neither has their language 
any more than a general appellation for 
those maladies, which is borrowed from 
the name of the beast, and called HNEA-
YAHOO, or YAHOO’S EVIL; and the 
cure prescribed is a mixture of their own 
dung and urine, forcibly put down the 
YAHOO’S throat. This I have since 
often known to have been taken with 
success, and do here freely recommend 
its to my countrymen for the public good, 
as an admirable specific against all 
diseases produced by repletion.

“As to learning, government, arts, 
manufactures, and the like,” my master 
confessed, “he could find little or no 
resemblance between the YAHOOs of 
that country and those in ours; for he 
only meant to observe what parity there 
was in our natures. He had heard, 
indeed, some curious HOUYHNHMS 
observed, that in most herds there was a 
species of Yahoo, or Yahoo’s evil; and the 
name of the beast, and called HNEA-
yahoo, or sea the mal del yahoo.

En cuanto a las ciencias, el gobierno, 
las artes, las manufacturas y cosas parecidas, 
confesó mi amo que encontraba poca 
or ninguna semejanza entre los yahoos de 
seu país y entre los de suyo; pues, por otra 
parte, sólo se había propuesto indicar la 
paridad de nuestras naturalezas. Cierta que 
había oído decir a algunos houyhnhnms 
curiosos que en la mayor parte de las 
mániadas había una especie de yahoo 
director—ígual que en nuestros parques suele 
haber un ciervo que es como el jefe o 
conductor de los otros—. que siempre era más 
feo de cuerpo y más perverso de condición.
the rest; that this leader had usually a
favourite as like himself as he could get,
whose employment was to lick his
master’s feet and posteriors, and drive
the female YAHOOs to his kennel; for
which he was now and then rewarded
with a piece of ass’s flesh. This favourite
is hated by the whole herd, and
therefore, to protect himself, keeps
always near the person of his leader. He
usually continues in office till a worse
can be found; but the very moment he is
discarded, his successor, at the head of
all the YAHOOs in that district, young
and old, male and female, come in a
body, and discharge their excrements
upon him from head to foot. But how
far this might be applicable to our
courts, and favourites, and ministers of
state, my master said I could best deter-
mine."

I

durst

make

no

return

to

this

malicious

insinuation,

which

debased

human

understanding

below

the

sagacity

of

a

common

hound, who has judgment

enough
to
distinguish

and

follow

the

cry

of

the

ablest
dog

in

the

pack,

without

being

ever

mistaken.

My master told me, “there were some
qualities remarkable in the YAHOOs,
which he had not observed me to
mention, or at least very slightly, in the
accounts I had given of humankind.” He
said, “those animals, like other brutes,
had their females in common; but in this
they differed, that the she YAHOO
would admit the males while she was
pregnant; and that the hens would quarrel
and fight with the females, as fiercely
as with each other; both which practices
were such degrees of infamous brutality,
as no other sensitive creature ever
arrived at.

“Another thing he wondered at in the
YAHOOs, was their strange disposition
to nastiness and dirt; whereas there
appears to be a natural love of
cleanliness in all other animals.” As to
the two former accusations, I was glad
to let them pass without any reply,
because I had not a word to offer upon
them in defence of my species, which
otherwise I certainly had done from my
own inclinations. But I could have
easily vindicated humankind from the
imputation of singularity upon the last
article, if there had been any swine in

que todos los demás. Este director solía te-
nener un favorito, lo más parecido a él que
pudiese encontrar,
y que era siempre odiado por la manada;
asi que, para protegerse, se mantenía siem-
pre cerca del individuo director. Por regla
general, continúa en su oficio hasta que se
encuentra otro peor; pero en el momento
en que queda descartado, su sucesor, a la
cabeza de todos los yahoos de la región,
jóvenes y viejos, machos y hembras, for-
mmando un solo cuerpo, acude a atacarle.

vindicate justificar, reivindicar, quedar satisfecho,
vindicar, lograr reconocimiento, dar la razón, des-
quitar
that country (as unluckily for me there were not), which, although it may be a sweeter quadruped than a Yahoo, cannot, I humbly conceive, in justice, pretend to more cleanliness; and so his honour himself must have owned, if he had seen their filthy way of feeding, and their custom of wallowing and sleeping in the mud.

My master likewise mentioned another quality which his servants had discovered in several Yahoos, and to him was wholly unaccountable. He said, “a fancy would sometimes take a Yahoo to retire into a corner, to lie down, and howl, and groan, and spurn away all that came near him, although he were young and fat, wanted neither food nor water, nor did the servant imagine what could possibly ail him. And the only remedy they found was, to set him to hard work, after which he would infallibly come to himself.” To this I was silent out of partiality to my own kind; yet here I could plainly discover the true seeds of spleen, which only seizes on the lazy, the luxurious, and the rich; who, if they were forced to undergo the same regimen, I would undertake for the cure.

His honour had further observed, “that a female Yahoo would often stand behind a bank or a bush, to gaze on the young males passing by, and then appear, and hide, using many antic gestures and grimaces, at which time it was observed that she had a most offensive smell; and when any of the males advanced, would slowly retire, looking often back, and with a counterfeit show of fear, run off into some convenient place, where she knew the male would follow her.

“At other times, if a female stranger came among them, three or four of her own sex would get about her, and stare, and chatter, and grin, and smell her all over; and then turn off with gestures, that seemed to express contempt and disdain.”

Perhaps my master might refine a little in these speculations, which he had drawn from what he observed himself, or had been told him by others; however, I could not reflect without some amazement, and much sorrow, that the
rudiments of lewdness, coquetry, censure, and scandal, should have place by instinct in womankind.

I expected every moment that my master would accuse the YAHOOSS of those unnatural appetites in both sexes, so common among us. But nature, it seems, has not been so expert a schoolmistress; and these politer pleasures are entirely the productions of art and reason on our side of the globe.

CHAPTER VIII.

[The author relates several particulars of the YAHOOSS. The great virtues of the HOUYNHNMSS. The education and exercise of their youth. Their general assembly.]

As I ought to have understood human nature much better than I supposed it possible for my master to do, so it was easy to apply the character he gave of the YAHOOSS to myself and my countrymen; and I believed I could yet make further discoveries, from my own observation. I therefore often begged his honour to let me go among the herds of YAHOOSS in the neighbourhood; to which he always very graciously consented, being perfectly convinced that the hatred I bore these brutes would never suffer me to be corrupted by them; and his honour ordered one of his servants, a strong sorrel nag, very honest and good-natured, to be my guard; without whose protection I durst not undertake such adventures. For I have already told the reader how much I was pestered by these odious animals, upon my first arrival; and I afterwards failed very narrowly, three or four times, of falling into their clutches, when I happened to stray at any distance without my hanger. And I have reason to believe they had some imagination that I was of their own species, which I often assisted myself by stripping up my sleeves, and showing my naked arms and breasts in their sight, when my protector was with me. At which times they would approach as near as they durst, and imitate my actions after the manner of monkeys, but ever with great signs.

durst is past tense of dare

Capítulo VIII

El autor refiere algunos detalles de los yahos. —Las grandes virtudes de los houyhnhnms. —La educación y el ejercicio en su juventud. —Su asamblea general.

Como yo conozco la humana naturaleza mucho mejor de lo que supongo que pudiera conocerla mi amo, me era fácil aplicar las referencias que él me daba de los yahos a mí mismo y a mis compatriotas, y pensaba que podría hacer ulteriores descubrimientos por mi cuenta. A este fin, le pedía frecuentemente el favor de que me dejase ir con las manadas de yahos del vecindario, a lo que amablemente siempre accedía, en la seguridad de que la repugnancia que yo sentía hacia aquellos animales no permitiría nunca que me corrompiesen; su señoría mandaba a uno de sus criados —un fuerte potro alazán, muy honrado y complaciente— que me guardase, sin cuya protección no me hubiese atrevido a tales aventuras. Porque ya he dicho al lector en qué modo fui atacado por aquellos animales odiosos a raíz de mi llegada; y después, dos o tres veces estuve a punto de caer entre sus garras, con ocasión de andar vagando a alguna distancia sin mi alfanje. Tenía además razones para creer que ellos sospechaban que yo era de su misma especie, lo que confirmaba a menudo su biéndome las mangas y mostrando a su vista los brazos y el pecho desnudo cuando mi protector estaba conmigo. En tales ocasiones se acercaban todo lo que se atrevían y recordaban mis acciones a la manera de los monos, pero siempre con signos de
of hatred; as a tame [jackdaw] with cap and stockings is always persecuted by the wild ones, when he happens to be got among them.

They are prodigiously nimble from their infancy. However, I once caught a young male of three years old, and endeavoured, by all marks of tenderness, to make it quiet; but the little imp fell a squalling, and scratching, and biting with such violence, that I was forced to let it go; and it was high time, for a whole troop of old ones came about us at the noise, but finding the cub was safe (for away it ran), and my sorrel nag being by, they durst not venture near us. I observed the young animal’s flesh to smell very rank, and the stink was somewhat between a weasel and a fox, but much more disagreeable. I forgot another circumstance (and perhaps I might have the reader’s pardon if it were wholly omitted), that while I held the odious vermin in my hands, it voided its filthy excrements of a yellow liquid substance all over my clothes; but by good fortune there was a small brook hard by, where I washed myself as clean as I could; although I durst not come into my master’s presence until I were sufficiently aired.

By what I could discover, the YAHOOBS appear to be the most unteachable of all animals: their capacity never reaching higher than to draw or carry burdens. Yet I am of opinion, this defect arises chiefly from a perverse, restive disposition; for they are cunning, malicious, treacherous, and revengeful. They are strong and hardy, but of a cowardly spirit, and, by consequence, insolent, abject, and cruel. It is observed, that the red haired of both sexes are more libidinous and mischievous than the rest, whom yet they much exceed in strength and activity.

The HOUYHNHNMS keep the YAHOOBS for present use in huts not far from the house; but the rest are sent abroad to certain fields, where they dig up roots, eat several kinds of herbs, and search about for carrion, or sometimes catch weasels and LUHIMUHS (a sort of wild rat), which they greedily devour.

Desde su infancia son los yahoos asombrosamente ágiles; sin embargo, pude oler a un muchacho pequeño de tres años e intenté sujetarlo haciendo toda clase de caricias. Pero el endemoniado comenzó a gritar, a arañar y morder con tal violencia, que me vi precisado a soltarle; y lo hice muy a tiempo, porque al ruido había acudido, y ya nos rodeaba, un verdadero ejército de animales grandes, los cuales, viendo que la criatura estaba en salvo —pues echó en segunda a correr—, y como mi potro alazán estaba al lado, no se atrevieron a arrimarse. Advertí que la carne del pequeño exhalaba un olor muy fuerte, como entre hedor de comadreja y zorro, pero mucho más desagradable. Por lo que pude ver, los yahoos son los más indómitos de los animales; su capacidad no pasa nunca de la precisa para arrastrar o cargar pesos. Opinó, sin embargo, que este defecto nace principalmente de su condición perversa y reacia, pues son astutos, malvados, traicioneros y vengativos. Son fuertes y duros, pero de ánimo cobarde, y por consecuencia, insolentes, abyectos y crueldades. Se ha observado que los de pelo rojo son más perversos que los demás y les exceden con mucho en actividad y en fuerzas.
Nature has taught them to dig deep holes with their nails on the side of a rising ground, wherein they lie by themselves; only the kennels of the females are larger, sufficient to hold two or three cubs.

They swim from their infancy like frogs, and are able to continue long under water, where they often take fish, which the females carry home to their young. And, upon this occasion, I hope the reader will pardon my relating an odd adventure.

Being one day abroad with my protector the sorrel nag, and the weather exceeding hot, I entreated [besought] him to let me bathe in a river that was near. He consented, and I immediately stripped myself stark naked, and went down softly into the stream. It happened that a young female YAHOO, standing behind a bank, saw the whole proceeding, and inflamed by desire, as the nag and I conjectured, came running with all speed, and leaped into the water, within five yards of the place where I bathed. I was never in my life so terribly frightened. The nag was grazing at some distance, not suspecting any harm. She embraced me after a most fulsome manner. I roared as loud as I could, and the nag came galloping towards me, whereupon she quitted her grasp, with the utmost reluctancy, and leaped upon the opposite bank, where she stood gazing and howling all the time I was putting on my clothes.

This was a matter of diversion to my master and his family, as well as of mortification to myself. For now I could no longer deny that I was a real YAHOO in every limb and feature, since the females had a natural propensity to me, as one of their own species. Neither was the hair of this brute of a red colour (which might have been some excuse for an appetite a little irregular), but black as a sloe, and her countenance did not make an appearance altogether so hideous as the rest of her kind; for I think she could not be above eleven years old.

Having lived three years in this country, the reader, I suppose, will expect that I should, like other travellers, give him some account of the
manners and customs of its inhabitants, which it was indeed my principal study to learn.

As these noble Houyhnhnms are endowed by nature with a general disposition to all virtues, and have no conceptions or ideas of what is evil in a rational creature, so their grand maxim is, to cultivate reason, and to be wholly governed by it. Neither is reason among them a point problematical, as with us, where men can argue with plausibility on both sides of the question, but strikes you with immediate conviction; as it must needs do, where it is not mingled, obscured, or discoloured, by passion and interest. I remember it was with extreme difficulty that I could bring my master to understand the meaning of the word opinion, or how a point could be disputable; because reason taught us to affirm or deny only where we are certain; and beyond our knowledge we cannot do either. So that controversies, wranglings, disputes, and positiveness, in false or dubious propositions, are evils unknown among the Houyhnhnms. In the like manner, when I used to explain to him our several systems of natural philosophy, he would laugh, “that a creature pretending to reason, should value itself upon the knowledge of other people’s conjectures, and in things where that knowledge, if it were certain, could be of no use.” Wherein he agreed entirely with the sentiments of Socrates, as Plato delivers them; which I mention as the highest honour I can do that prince of philosophers—I have often since reflected, what destruction such doctrine would make in the libraries of Europe; and how many paths of fame would be then shut up in the learned world.

Friendship and benevolence are the two principal virtues among the Houyhnhnms; and these not confined to particular objects, but universal to the whole race; for a stranger from the remotest part is equally treated with the nearest neighbour, and wherever he goes, looks upon himself as at home. They preserve decency and civility in the highest degrees, but are
altogether ignorant of ceremony. They have no fondness for their colts or foals, but the care they take in educating them proceeds entirely from the dictates of reason. And I observed my master to show the same affection to his neighbour’s issue, that he had for his own. They will have it that nature teaches them to love the whole species, and it is reason only that makes a distinction of persons, where there is a superior degree of virtue.

When the matron Houyhnhnms have produced one of each sex, they no longer accompany with their consorts, except they lose one of their issue by some casualty, which very seldom happens; but in such a case they meet again; or when the like accident befalls a person whose wife is past bearing, some other couple bestow (grant) on him one of their own colts, and then go together again until the mother is pregnant. This caution is necessary, to prevent the country from being overburdened with numbers. But the race of inferior Houyhnhnms, bred up to be servants, is not so strictly limited upon this article: these are allowed to produce three of each sex, to be domestics in the noble families.

In their marriages, they are exactly careful to choose such colours as will not make any disagreeable mixture in the breed. Strength is chiefly valued in the male, and comeliness in the female; not upon the account of love, but to preserve the race from degenerating; for where a female happens to excel in strength, a consort is chosen, with regard to comeliness.

Courtship, love, presents, jointures, settlements have no place in their thoughts, or terms whereby to express them in their language. The young couple meet, and are joined, merely because it is the determination of their parents and friends; it is what they see done every day, and they look upon it as one of the necessary actions of a reasonable being. But the violation of marriage, or any other unchastity, was never heard of; and the married pair pass their lives with the same friendship and mutual benevolence, that they bear to all others of the same species who come in their way, without jealousy, complete la ceremonia. No tienen debilidades ni absurdas ternuras con sus crias y potros, pues sus cuidados al educarlos proceden enteramente de los dictados de la razón, y yo he visto a mi amo tratar con el mismo cariño a la cria de un vecino que a la suya propia. Proceden así porque la Naturaleza los enseña a amar a toda la especie, y solamente es la razón la que distingue a las personas cuando ostentan un grado superior de virtud.

Al casarse tienen cuidado grandísimo en elegir colores que no produzcan una mezcla desagradable en la progenie. En el macho se estima principalmente la fuerza, y en la hembra la hermosura. Y no por exigencia del amor, sino para impedir que la raza degene; pues cuando sucede que una hembra sobresale por su fuerza, se escoge un consorte con vistas a la belleza.

Courtship, love, presents, jointures, settlements have no place in their thoughts, or terms whereby to express them in their language. The young couple meet, and are joined, merely because it is the determination of their parents and friends; it is what they see done every day, and they look upon it as one of the necessary actions of a reasonable being. But the violation of marriage, or any other unchastity, was never heard of; and the married pair pass their lives with the same friendship and mutual benevolence, that they bear to all others of the same species who come in their way, without jealousy,
fondness, quarrelling, or discontent.

In educating the youth of both sexes, their method is admirable, and highly deserves our imitation. These are not suffered to taste a grain of oats, except upon certain days, till eighteen years old; nor milk, but very rarely; and in summer they graze two hours in the morning, and as many in the evening, which their parents likewise observe; but the servants are not allowed above half that time, and a great part of their grass is brought home, which they eat at the most convenient hours, when they can be best spared from work.

Temperance, industry, exercise, and cleanliness, are the lessons equally enjoined to the young ones of both sexes: and my master thought it monstrous in us, to give the females a different kind of education from the males, except in some articles of domestic management; whereby, as he truly observed, one half of our natives were good for nothing but bringing children into the world; and to trust the care of our children to such useless animals, he said, was yet a greater instance of brutality.

But the HOUYHNHNMS train up their youth to strength, speed, and hardiness, by exercising them in running races up and down steep hills, and over hard stony grounds; and when they are all in a sweat, they are ordered to leap over head and ears into a pond or river. Four times a year the youth of a certain district meet to show their proficiency in running and leaping, and other feats of strength and agility; where the victor is rewarded with a song in his or her praise. On this festival, the servants drive a herd of YAHOOOS into the field, laden with hay, and oats, and milk, for a repast to the HOUYHNHNMS; after which, these brutes are immediately driven back again, for fear of being noisome to the assembly.

Every fourth year, at the vernal equinox, there is a representative council of the whole nation, which meets in a plain about twenty miles from our house, and continues about five or six days. Here they inquire into the state and condition of the several districts;
CHAPTER IX.

[A grand debate at the general assembly of the HOUYHNHNMS, and how it was determined. The learning of the HOUYHNHNMS. Their buildings. Their manner of burials. The defectiveness of their language.]

One of these grand assemblies was held in my time, about three months before my departure, whither my master went as the representative of our district. In this council was resumed their old debate, and indeed the only debate that ever happened in their country; whereof my master, after his return, give me a very particular account.

The question to be debated was, “whether the YAHOOOS should be exterminated from the face of the earth?” One of the members for the affirmative offered several arguments of great strength and weight, alleging, “that as the YAHOOOS were the most filthy, noisome, and deformed animals which nature ever produced, so they were the most restive and indocible, mischievous and malicious; they would privately suck the teats of the HOUYHNHNMS’ cows, kill and devour their cats, trample down their oats and grass, if they were not continually watched, and commit a thousand other extravagancies.” He took notice of a general tradition, “that whether they abound or be deficient in hay or oats, or cows, or YAHOOOS; and wherever there is any want (which is but seldom) it is immediately supplied by unanimous consent and contribution. Here likewise the regulation of children is settled: as for instance, if a HOUYHNHNM has two males, he changes one of them with another that has two females; and when a child has been lost by any casualty, where the mother is past breeding, it is determined what family in the district shall breed another to supply the loss.

CHAPTER IX.

Gran debate en la asamblea general de los houyhnhnms y cómo se decidió. —La cultura de los houyhnhnms. —Sus edificios. —Cómo hacen sus entierros. —Lo defectuoso de su idioma.

Una de estas grandes asambleas se celebró estando yo allí, unos tres meses antes de mi partida, y a ella fue mi amo como representante de nuestro distrito. En este consejo se resumió el antiguo y, sin duda, el único debate que jamás se suscitó en aquel país; y de él me dio mi amo cuenta detallada a su regreso.

La cuestión debatida era si debía exterminarse a los yahoos de la superficie de la tierra. Uno de los partidarios de que se resolviera afirmativamente ofreció varios argumentos de gran peso y solidez. Alegaba que los yahoos no sólo eran los más sucios, dañinos y feos animales que la Naturaleza había producido nunca, sino también los más _____ indóctiles, malvados y perversos; mamaban, a escondidas, de las vacas de los houyhnhnms, mataban y devoraban sus gatos, pisoteaban la avena y la hierba si no se los vigilaba continuamente y causaban mil perjuicios más. Se hizo eco de una tradición popular, según la cual no siem-

restive 1 : marked by impatience or uneasiness : FIDGETY, impaciente 2 stubbornly resisting control : BALKY remiso, re- nuente, repropio (caballo indocil)
ooze

1. *intr.* (of fluid) pass slowly through the pores of a body. 2. *intr.* trickle or leak slowly out. 3. *intr.* (of a substance) exude moisture. 4. *intr.* exude or exhibit (a feeling) liberally (oozed sympathy).

1. A sluggish flow or exudation. 2. An infusion of oak-bark or other vegetable matter, used in tanning.

Cieno, lodo

YAHOOs had not always been in their country; but that many ages ago, two of these brutes appeared together upon a mountain; whether produced by the heat of the sun upon corrupted mud and slime, or from the ooze and froth of the sea, was never known; that these YAHOOs engendered, and their brood, in a short time, grew so numerous as to overrun and infest the whole nation; that the HOUYHNHNMS, to get rid of this evil, made a general hunting, and at last enclosed the whole herd; and destroying the elder, every HOUYHNHNHM kept two young ones in a kennel, and brought them to such a degree of tameness, as an animal, so savage by nature, can be capable of acquiring, using them for draught and carriage; that there seemed to be much truth in this tradition, and that those creatures could not be YINHNIAHSHEY (or ABORIGINES of the land), because of the violent hatred the HOUYHNHNMS, as well as all other animals, bore them, which, although their evil disposition sufficiently deserved, could never have arrived at so high a degree if they had been ABORIGINES, or else they would have long since been rooted out; that the inhabitants, taking a fancy to use the service of the YAHOOs, had, very imprudently, neglected to cultivate the breed of asses, which are a comely [pleasant to look at] animal, easily kept, more tame and orderly, without any offensive smell, strong enough for labour, although they yield to the other in agility of body, and if their braying be no agreeable sound, it is far preferable to the horrible howlings of the YAHOOs."

Several others declared their sentiments to the same purpose, when my master proposed an expedition to the assembly, whereof he had indeed borrowed the hint from me. "He approved of the tradition mentioned by the honourable member who spoke before, and affirmed, that the two YAHOOs said to be seen first among them, had been driven thither over the sea; that coming to land, and being forsaken by their companions, they retired to the mountains, and degenerating by degrees, became in process of time much more savage than those of their own species in the country whence these two originals came. The

Otros varios mostraron su conformidad con estas apreciaciones, y entonces mi amo propuso a la asamblea un expediente cuya idea inicial había encontrado, indudablemente, en su trato conmigo. Aprobó la tradición citada por el honorable miembro que había hablado y afirmó que los dos yahoos que se tenían por los dos primeros aparecidos en el país habían llegado a él por la superficie del mar, y, una vez en tierra, y abandonados por sus compañeros, se habían retirado a las montañas, y gradualmente, en el curso del tiempo, habían degenerado, hasta hacerse mucho más salvajes que los de su misma especie habitantes en el país de donde aquellos dos primitivos procedían. Daba
reason of this assertion was, that he had now in his possession a certain wonderful YAHOO (meaning myself) which most of them had heard of, and many of them had seen. He then related to them how he first found me; that my body was all covered with an artificial composure [calmness] of the skins and hairs of other animals; that I spoke in a language of my own, and had thoroughly learned theirs; that I had related to him the accidents which brought me thither; that when he saw me without my covering, I was an exact YAHOO in every part, only of a whiter colour, less hairy, and with shorter claws. He added, how I had endeavoured to persuade him, that in my own and other countries, the YAHOOs acted as the governing, rational animal, and held the HOUYHNHNMS in servitude; that he observed in me all the qualities of a YAHOO, only a little more civilized by some tincture of reason, which, however, was in a degree as far inferior to the HOUYHNHNM race, as the YAHOOs of their country were to me; that, among other things, I mentioned a custom we had of castrating HOUYHNHNMS when they were young, in order to render them tame; that the operation was easy and safe; that it was no shame to learn wisdom from brutes, as industry is taught by the ant, and building by the swallow (for so I translate the word LYHANNH, although it be a much larger fowl); that this invention might be practised upon the younger YAHOOs here, which besides rendering them tractable and fitter for use, would in an age put an end to the whole species, without destroying life; that in the mean time the HOUYHNHNMS should be exhorted to cultivate the breed of asses, which, as they are in all respects more valuable brutes, so they have this advantage, to be fit for service at five years old, which the others are not till twelve.”

This was all my master thought fit to tell me, at that time, of what passed in the grand council. But he was pleased to conceal one particular, which related personally to myself, whereof I soon felt the unhappy effect, as the reader will know in its proper place, and whence I date all the succeeding misfortunes of my life.
The HOUYHNHNMS have no letters, and consequently their knowledge is all traditional. But there happening few events of any moment among a people so well united, naturally disposed to every virtue, wholly governed by reason, and cut off from all commerce with other nations, the historical part is easily preserved without burdening their memories. I have already observed that they are subject to no diseases, and therefore can have no need of physicians. However, they have excellent medicines, composed of herbs, to cure accidental bruises and cuts in the pastern or frog of the foot, by sharp stones, as well as other maims and hurts in the several parts of the body.

They calculate the year by the revolution of the sun and moon, but use no subdivisions into weeks. They are well enough acquainted with the motions of those two luminaries, and understand the nature of eclipses; and this is the utmost progress of their astronomy.

In poetry, they must be allowed to excel all other mortals; wherein the justness of their similes, and the minuteness as well as exactness of their descriptions, are indeed inimitable. Their verses abound very much in both of these, and usually contain either some exalted notions of friendship and benevolence or the praises of those who were victors in races and other bodily exercises. Their buildings, although very rude and simple, are not inconvenient, but well contrived to defend them from all injuries of and heat. They have a kind of tree, which at forty years old loosens in the root, and falls with the first storm: it grows very straight, and being pointed like stakes with a sharp stone (for the HOUYHNHNMS know not the use of iron), they stick them erect in the ground, about ten inches asunder, and then weave in oat straw, or sometimes wattles, between them. The roof is made after the same manner, and so are the doors.

The HOUYHNHNMS use the hollow part, between the pastern and the hoof of their fore-foot, as we do our hands, and this with greater dexterity than I could at first imagi-
Si aciertan a evitar los accidentes, mueren sólo de viejos, y son enterrados en los sitios más apartados y obscuros que pueden encontrarse. Los amigos y parientes no manifiestan alegría ni dolor por el fallecimiento, ni el individuo agonizante deja ver en el punto de dejar el mundo la más pequeña inquietud; no más que si estuviese para regresar a su casa después de visitar a uno de sus vecinos. Recuerdo que una vez, estando citado mi amo en su propia casa con un amigo y su familia para tratar cierto asunto de importancia, llegaron el día señalado la señora y sus dos hijos con gran retraso. Presentó ella dos excusas: una, por la ausencia de su marido, a quien, según dijo, le había acontecido \textit{lhnuwnh} aquella misma mañana. La palabra es energicamente expresiva en su idioma, pero difícilmente traducible al inglés; viene a significar "a retirarse a su primera madre." Su excusa por no haber ido más temprano fue que su esposo había muerto avanzada la mañana, y ella había tenido que pasar un buen rato consultando con los criados acerca del sitio conveniente para depositar el cuerpo. Y pude observar que se condujo ella en nuestra casa tan alegremente como los demás. Murió unos tres meses después.

Por regla general, viven setenta o setenta y cinco años; rara vez, ochenta. Algunas semanas antes de la muerte experimentan un gradual decaimiento, pero sin dolor. Durante este plazo los visitan mucho sus amigos, pues no pueden salir con la acostumbrada facilidad y satisfacción. Sin embargo, unos diez días antes de morir, cálculo en que muy...
seldom fail in computing, they return the visits that have been made them by those who are nearest in the neighbourhood, being carried in a convenient sledge drawn by YAHOOs; which vehicle they use, not only upon this occasion, but when they grow old, upon long journeys, or when they are lamed by any accident: and therefore when the dying HOUYHNHNMS return those visits, they take a solemn leave of their friends, as if they were going to some remote part of the country, where they designed to pass the rest of their lives.

I know not whether it may be worth observing, that the HOUYHNHNMS have no word in their language to express any thing that is evil, except what they borrow from the deformities or ill qualities of the YAHOOs. Thus they denote the folly of a servant, an omission of a child, a stone that cuts their feet, a continuance of foul or unseasonable weather, and the like, by adding to each the epithet of YAHOO. For instance, HHNM YAHOO; WHNAHOLM YAHOO, YNLHMNDWIHLMA YAHOO, and an ill-contrived house YNHOLMHNMRHOHLNW YAHOO.

I could, with great pleasure, enlarge further upon the manners and virtues of this excellent people; but intending in a short time to publish a volume by itself, expressly upon that subject, I refer the reader thither; and, in the mean time, proceed to relate my own sad catastrophe.

No sé si merece la pena de consignar que los houyhnhnms no tienen en su idioma palabra ninguna para expresar nada que represente el mal, con excepción de las que derivan de las fealdades y malas condiciones de los yahoos. Así, denotan la insensatez de un criado, la omisión de un pequeño, la piedra que les ha herido la pata, una racha de tiempo enredado o impropio de la época, añadiendo a la palabra el epíteto de yaho. Por ejemplo: Hhnm yahoo, Whnaholm yahoo, Ynlhmndwihlma yahoo, y una cosa mal discurrida, Ynholmhnmtolhlnw yahoo.

Con mucho gusto me extendería más hablando de las costumbres y las virtudes de este pueblo excelente; pero como intento publicar dentro de poco un volumen dedicado exclusivamente a esta materia, a él remito al lector. Y en tanto, procederé a referir mi lastímosa catástrofe.

---

**CHAPTER X.**

[The author’s economy, and happy life, among the Houyhnhnms. His great improvement in virtue by conversing with them. Their conversations. The author has notice given him by his master, that he must depart from the country. He falls into a swoon for grief; but submits. He contrives and finishes a canoe by the help of a fellow-servant, and puts to sea at a venture.]
I had settled my little economy to my own heart’s content. My master had ordered a room to be made for me, after their manner, about six yards from the house: the sides and floors of which I plastered with clay, and covered with rush-mats of my own contriving. I had beaten hemp, which there grows wild, and made of it a sort of ticking; this I filled with the feathers of several birds I had taken with springes made of YAHOOES’ hairs, and were excellent food. I had worked two chairs with my knife, the sorrel nag helping me in the grosser and more laborious part.

When my clothes were worn to rags, I made myself others with the skins of rabbits, and of a certain beautiful animal, about the same size, called NNUHNOH, the skin of which is covered with a fine down. Of these I also made very tolerable stockings. I soled my shoes with wood, which I cut from a tree, and fitted to the upper-leather; and when this was worn out, I supplied it with the skins of YAHOOES dried in the sun. I often got honey out of hollow trees, which I mingled with water, or ate with my bread. No man could more verify the truth of these two maxims, “That nature is very easily satisfied;” and, “That necessity is the mother of invention.” I enjoyed perfect health of body, and tranquillity of mind; I did not feel the treachery or inconstancy of a friend, nor the injuries of a secret or open enemy. I had no occasion of bribing, flattering, or pimping, to procure the favour of any great man, or of his minion; I wanted no fence against fraud or oppression: here was neither physician to destroy my body, nor lawyer to ruin my fortune; no informer to watch my words and actions, or forge accusations against me for hire: here were no givers, censurers, backbiters, pickpockets, highwaymen, housebreakers, attorneys, bawds, buffoons, gamesters, politicians, wits, splenetics, tedious talkers, controvertists, ravishers, murderers, robbers, virtuosi; no leaders, or followers, of party and faction; no encouragers to vice, by seduction or examples; no dungeon, axes, gibbets, whipping- posts, or pillories; no cheating

Había yo ordenado mi pequeña economía a mi entera satisfacción. Mi amo había mandado que se me hiciera un aposento al uso del país a unas seis yardas de la casa. Yo revesti las paredes y el suelo con arcilla y los cubrí con una esterilla de junco de mi propia invención. Con cántamo, que allí se cria silvestre, hice algo como un terliz; lo llené con plumas de varios pájaros, que había cazado con lazos de cabezales de yaho y que resultaban comida excelente. Hice dos sillas con mi cuchillo, ayudado en la parte más áspera y trabajosa por el potro alazán.

Cuando mis ropas se vieron reducidas a jirones, me hice otras con pieles de conejo y de un lindo animal del mismo tamaño llamado nnuhnoh, que tiene la piel cubierta de una especie de fino plumón. Con estas últimas me hice también unas medias bastante buenas. Eché piso a mis zapatos con madera cortada de un árbol uniendo al cuero de la parte superior, y cuando se rompió el cuero lo substituí con pieles de yaho, secas al sol. Frecuentemente encontraba en los huecos de los árboles miel, que mezclaba con agua o comía con el pan. Nadie había podido confirmar mejor la verdad de aquellas dos máximas que enseñan que la Naturaleza se satisface con muy poco y que la necesidad es madre de la invención. Gozaba perfecta salud del cuerpo y tranquilidad de espíritu; no experimentaba la traición o la inconstancia de amigo ninguno, ni los agravios de un enemigo disimulado o descubierto. No tenía ocasión de sobornar ni adular para conseguir el favor de personaje ninguno ni de su valido. No necesitaba defensa contra el fraude ni la opresión; no había allí médico que destruyese mi cuerpo, ni abogado que arruinase mi fortuna, ni espía que acechase mis palabras y mis actos o forjara cargos contra mí por un salario; no había allí escarnecedores, censores, murmuradores, rateros, salteadores, escaladores, procuradores, bufones, tahúres, políticos, ingenieros, melancólicos, habladores importunos, discutidores, ase- sinos, ladrones, ni virtuosi, ni adalides, ni secuaces de partido, ni facciones, ni incitadores al vicio con la seducción o con el ejemplo, ni calabozos, hachas, horcas, columnas de azotar ni picotas, ni tenderos, tramposos, ni maquinaria, ni
shopkeepers or mechanics; no pride, vanity, or affectation; no fops, bullies, drunkards, strolling whores, or petimetres, espadachines, borrachos, ni rameras trotacalles, ni mal gálico, ni esposas caras y despepitadas, ni estúpidos pedantes orgullosos, ni compañeros importunos, cansados, quimeristas, turbulentos, alborotadores, ignorantes, vanagloriosos, juradores, ni picaros elevados del polvo en pago de sus vicios, ni nobleza arrojada a él en pago de sus virtudes, ni lores, violinistas, jueces, ni maestros de baile.

I had the favour of being admitted to several HOUYHNHNMS, who came to visit or dine with my master; where his honour graciously suffered me to wait in the room, and listen to their discourse. Both he and his company would often descend to ask me questions, and receive my answers. I had also sometimes the honour of attending my master in his visits to others. I never presumed to speak, except in answer to a question; and then I did it with inward regret, because it was a loss of so much time for improving myself; but I was infinitely delighted with the station of an humble auditor in such conversations, where nothing passed but what was useful, expressed in the fewest and most significant words; where, as I have already said, the greatest decency was observed, without the least degree of ceremony; where no person spoke without being pleased himself, and pleasing his companions; where there was no interruption, tediousness, heat, or difference of sentiments. They have a notion, that when people are met together, a short silence does much improve conversation: this I found to be true; for during those little intermissions of talk, new ideas would arise in their minds, which very much enlivened the discourse. Their subjects are, generally on friendship and benevolence, on order and economy; sometimes upon the visible operations of nature, or ancient traditions; upon the bounds and limits of virtue; upon the unerring rules of reason, or upon some determinations to be taken at the next great assembly: and often upon the various excellences of poetry. I may add, without vanity, that my presence often gave them sufficient

Disfruté la merced de ser recibido por varios houyhnhnms que acudían a visitar a mi amo o a comer con él, y su señoría me permitía graciosamente estar en la habitación y escuchar las conversaciones. Tanto él como sus amigos descendían a hacerme preguntas y oír mis respuestas. Y algunas veces también tuve el honor de acompañar a mi amo en las visitas que hacía a los otros. Yo no me permitía hablar nunca si no era para responder a una pregunta, y aun entonces lo hacía con interior descontento, porque suponía para mí una pérdida de tiempo en mi adelanto, pues me complacía infinitamente asistiendo como humilde oyente a estas conversaciones, en que no se decía nada que no fuese útil en el menor número posible de muy expresivas palabras; en que —como ya he dicho— se guardaba la más extremada cortesía, sin el menor grado de ceremonia; en que nadie hablaba sin propio gusto ni sin dárselo a sus compañeros; en que no había interrupciones, cansancio, pasión, ni criterios diferentes. Tienen allí la idea de que, cuando se reúne gente, una corta pausa es de mucho provecho a la conversación, y yo descubrí ser cierto, pues durante estas pequeñas interisiones nacían en sus cerebros nuevas ideas que animaban mucho el discurso. Los asuntos de sus pláticas son ordinariamente la amistad y la benevolencia o el orden y la economía; a veces, las operaciones visibles de la Naturaleza, o las antiguas tradiciones, los linderos y límites de la virtud, las reglas infalibles de la razón o los acuerdos que deban tomarse en la próxima gran asamblea; y muy a menudo, las diversas excelencias de la poesía. Puedo añadir, sin vanidad, que mi presencia les proporcionaba frecuentemente asunto para
matter for discourse, because it afforded my master an occasion of letting his friends into the history of me and my country, upon which they were all pleased to descant, in a manner not very advantageous to humankind: and for that reason I shall not repeat what they said; only I may be allowed to observe, that his honour, to my great admiration, appeared to understand the nature of YAHOOs much better than myself. He went through all our vices and follies, and discovered many, which I had never mentioned to him, by only supposing what qualities a YAHOO of their country, with a small proportion of reason, might be capable of exerting; and concluded, with too much probability, "how vile, as well as miserable, such a creature must be."

I freely confess, that all the little knowledge I have of any value, was acquired by the lectures I received from my master, and from hearing the discourses of him and his friends; to which I should be prouder to listen, than to dictate to the greatest and wisest assembly in Europe. I admired the strength, comeliness, and speed of the inhabitants; and such a constellation of virtues, in such amiable persons, produced in me the highest veneration. At first, indeed, I did not feel that natural awe, which the YAHOOs and all other animals bear toward them; but it grew upon me by decrees, much sooner than I imagined, and was mingled with a respectful love and gratitude, that they would condescend to distinguish me from the rest of my species.

When I thought of my family, my friends, my countrymen, or the human race in general, I considered them, as they really were, YAHOOs in shape and disposition, perhaps a little more civilized, and qualified with the gift of speech; but making no other use of reason, than to improve and multiply those vices whereof their brethren in this country had only the share that nature allotted them. When I happened to behold the reflection of my own form in a lake or fountain, I turned away my face in horror and detestation of myself, and could better endure the sight of a common YAHOO than of my own person. By conversing with the
HOUYHNHNMS, and looking upon them with delight, I fell to imitate their gait and gesture, which is now grown into a habit; and my friends often tell me, in a blunt way, “that I trot like a horse;” which, however, I take for a great compliment. Neither shall I disown, that in speaking I am apt to fall into the voice and manner of the HOUYHNHNMS, and hear myself ridiculed on that account, without the least mortification.

In the midst of all this happiness, and when I looked upon myself to be fully settled for life, my master sent for me one morning a little earlier than his usual hour. I observed by his countenance that he was in some perplexity, and at a loss how to begin what he had to speak. After a short silence, he told me, “he did not know how I would take what he was going to say: that in the last general assembly, when the affair of the YAHOOOS was entered upon, the representatives had taken offence at his keeping a YAHOO (meaning myself) in his family, more like a HOUYHNHNM than a brute animal; that he was known frequently to converse with me, as if he could receive some advantage or pleasure in my company; that such a practice was not agreeable to reason or nature, or a thing ever heard of before among them; the assembly did therefore exhort him either to employ me like the rest of my species, or command me to swim back to the place whence I came: that the first of these expedients was utterly rejected by all the HOUYHNHNMS who had ever seen me at his house or their own; for they alleged, that because I had some rudiments of reason, added to the natural pravity of those animals, it was to be feared I might be able to seduce them into the woody and mountainous parts of the country, and bring them in troops by night to destroy the HOUYHNHNMS’ cattle, as being naturally of the ravenous kind, and averse from labour.”

My master added, “that he was daily pressed by the HOUYHNHNMS of the neighbourhood to have the assembly’s exhortation executed, which he could not put off much longer. He doubted it would be impossible for me to swim to houyhnhnms y mirándolos con deleite, llegué a imitar su porte y sus movimientos, lo que actualmente es en mi una costumbre; y mis amigos me dicen frecuentemente, con descortés intención, que troto como un caballo, lo que yo tomo, sin embargo, como un delicadísimo cumplido. Y tampoco negaré que cuando hablo suelo dar en la voz y la manera de los houyhnhnms, y verme con este motivo ridiculizado, sin la menor mortificación por mi parte.

En medio de mi felicidad, y cuando ya me consideraba absolutamente establecido para toda mi vida, mi amo envió a buscarme una mañana algo más temprano de lo que tenía por costumbre. Le noté en la cara que estaba algo indeciso y sin saber cómo empezar lo que tenía que hablarme. Después de un breve silencio dijo: que no sabía cómo tomaría lo que iba a notificarle, y era que en la última asamblea general, al discutirse la cuestión de los yahoos, los representantes habían tomado a offensa que él tuviese un yaho (por mí) en su familia más como un houyhnhnm que como una bestia; que se sabía que él conversaba frecuentemente conmigo, como si recibiera con mi compañía alguna ventaja o satisfacción, y que tal práctica no era conforme con la razón ni la naturaleza, ni cosa que se hubiese oído hasta entonces en el país. En consecuencia, la asamblea le había exhortado para que me emplease como el resto de mi especie o me mandase volverme a nado al lugar de donde hubiese ido. El primero de estos expedientes fue rechazado abiertamente por todos los houyhnhnms que me habían visto alguna vez en su casa o en la de ellos, pues alegaban que, teniendo yo algunos rudimentos de razón junto con la perversidad de aquellos animales, era de temer que yo pudiese seducirlos para que se internasen en los bosques y se huyeran a las montañas del país y acudiesen de noche a destruir el ganado de los houyhnhnms, siendo, como eran por naturaleza, rapaces y contrarios al trabajo.

Agregó mi amo que diariamente le estrechaban los houyhnhnms del vecindario para que ejecutase el mandato de la asamblea, lo que no podría diferir por mucho más tiempo. Sospechaba que me sería imposible nadar hasta otro país, y,
another country; and therefore wished I would contrive some sort of vehicle, resembling those I had described to him, that might carry me on the sea; in which work I should have the assistance of his own servants, as well as those of his neighbours.” He concluded, “that for his own part, he could have been content to keep me in his service as long as I lived; because he found I had cured myself of some bad habits and dispositions, by endeavouring, as far as my inferior nature was capable, to imitate the HOUYHNMS.”

I should here observe to the reader, that a decree of the general assembly in this country is expressed by the word HNNLOAYN, which signifies an exhortation, as near as I can render it; for they have no conception how a rational creature can be compelled, but only advised, or exhorted; because no person can disobey reason, without giving up his claim to be a rational creature.

I was struck with the utmost grief and despair at my master’s discourse; and being unable to support the agonies I was under, I fell into a swoon at his feet. When I came to myself, he told me “that he concluded I had been dead;” for these people are subject to no such imbecilities of nature. I answered in a faint voice, “that death would have been too great a happiness; that although I could not blame the assembly’s exhortation, or the urgency of his friends; yet, in my weak and corrupt judgment, I thought it might consist with reason to have been less rigorous; that I could not swim a league, and probably the nearest land to theirs might be distant above a hundred: that many materials, necessary for making a small vessel to carry me off, were wholly wanting in this country; which, however, I would attempt, in obedience and gratitude to his honour, although I concluded the thing to be impossible, and therefore looked on myself as already devoted to destruction; that the certain prospect of an unnatural death was the least of my evils; for, supposing I should escape with life by some strange adventure, how could I think with temper of passing my days among YAHOOS, and relapsing into my old corruptions, for want of examples to
lead and keep me within the paths of virtue? that I knew too well upon what solid reasons all the determinations of the wise HOUYHNHNMS were founded, not to be shaken by arguments of mine, a miserable YAHOO; and therefore, after presenting him with my humble thanks for the offer of his servants' assistance in making a vessel, and desiring a reasonable time for so difficult a work, I told him I would endeavour to preserve a wretched being; and if ever I returned to England, was not without hopes of being useful to my own species, by celebrating the praises of the renowned HOUYHNHNMS, and proposing their virtues to the imitation of mankind."

My master, in a few words, made me a very gracious reply; allowed me the space of two months to finish my boat; and ordered the sorrel nag, my fellow-servant (for so, at this distance, I may presume to call him), to follow my instruction; because I told my master, "that his help would be sufficient, and I knew he had a tenderness for me."

In his company, my first business was to go to that part of the coast where my rebellious crew had ordered me to be set on shore. I got upon a height, and looking on every side into the sea; fancied I saw a small island toward the north-east. I took out my pocket glass, and could then clearly distinguish it above five leagues off, as I computed; but it appeared to the sorrel nag to be only a blue cloud: for as he had no conception of any country beside his own, so he could not be as expert in distinguishing remote objects at sea, as we who so much converse in that element.

After I had discovered this island, I considered no further; but resolved it should if possible, be the first place of my banishment, leaving the consequence to fortune.

I returned home, and consulting with the sorrel nag, we went into a copse at some distance, where I with my knife, and he with a sharp flint, fastened very artificially after their manner, to a wooden handle, cut down several oak wattles, about the thickness of a walking-staff, and some...
larger pieces. But I shall not trouble the reader with a particular description of my own mechanics; let it suffice to say, that in six weeks time with the help of the sorrel nag, who performed the parts that required most labour, I finished a sort of Indian canoe, but much larger, covering it with the skins of YAHOOs, well stitched together with hempen threads of my own making. My sail was likewise composed of the skins of the same animal; but I made use of the youngest I could get, the older being too tough and thick; and I likewise provided myself with four paddles. I laid in a stock of boiled flesh, of rabbits and fowls, and took with me two vessels, one filled with milk and the other with water.

I tried my canoe in a large pond, near my master’s house, and then corrected in it what was amiss; stopping all the chinks with YAHOOs’ tallow, till I found it staunch, and able to bear me and my freight; and, when it was as complete as I could possibly make it, I had it drawn on a carriage very gently by YAHOOs to the sea-side, under the conduct of the sorrel nag and another servant.

When all was ready, and the day came for my departure, I took leave of my master and lady and the whole family, my eyes flowing with tears, and my heart quite sunk with grief. But his honour, out of curiosity, and, perhaps, (if I may speak without vanity,) partly out of kindness, was determined to see me in my canoe, and got several of his neighbouring friends to accompany him. I was forced to wait above an hour for the tide; and then observing the wind very fortunately bearing toward the island to which I intended to steer my course, I took a second leave of my master: but as I was going to prostrate myself to kiss his hoof, he did me the honour to raise it gently to my mouth. I am not ignorant how much I have been censured for mentioning this last particular. Detractors are pleased to think it improbable, that so illustrious a person should descend to give so great a mark of distinction to a creature so inferior as I. Neither have I forgotten how apt some travellers are to boast of extraordinary favours they have received.

Probé mi canoa en un gran pantano, próximo a la casa de mi amo, y corregí los defectos que le encontré; tapé las rajas con sebo de yahoo, hasta que la dejé firme y en condiciones de resistirnos a mí y a mi carga. Y cuando estuvo tan acabada como era en mi mano hacerlo, la transportaron muy cuidadosamente a la orilla del mar en un carro tirado por yahoos, bajo la dirección del potro alazán y otro criado.

Todo listo, y llegado el día de mi partida, me despedí de mi amo y su señora y demás familia, con los ojos arrasados en lágrimas y el corazón destrozado por la pena. Pero su señorialía, llevado de la curiosidad, y quizá —si puedo decirlo sin que se me tenga por vanidoso— por cortesía, quiso asistir a mi marcha en la canoa, e invitó a algunos vecinos a que le acompañasen. Tuve que esperar más de una hora a que subiese la marea; y luego, encontrando que el viento soplaba muy prósperamente hacia la isla a que pensaba dirigir el rumbo, me despedí por segunda vez de mi amo; por cierto que cuando iba a arrodillarme a besar su casco me hizo el honor de levantarlo suavemente hasta mi boca. No ignoro cuánto se me ha censurado al referir este último detalle, pues a mis detractores les cumple suponer improbable que persona tan ilustre descendiese a dar tan gran señal de deferencia a una criatura tan inferior como yo. Tampoco he olvidado la inclinación de algunos viajeros a alabarse de haber reci-
received. But, if these censurers were better acquainted with the noble and courteous disposition of the HOUYHNHNMS, they would soon change their opinion.

I paid my respects to the rest of the HOUYHNHNMS in his honour’s company; then getting into my canoe, I pushed off from shore.

CHAPTER XI

[The author’s dangerous voyage. He arrives at New Holland, hoping to settle there. Is wounded with an arrow by one of the natives. Is seized and carried by force into a Portuguese ship. The great civilities of the captain. The author arrives at England.]

I began this desperate voyage on February 15, 1714-15, at nine o’clock in the morning. The wind was very favourable; however, I made use at first only of my paddles; but considering I should soon be weary, and that the wind might chop about, I ventured to set up my little sail; and thus, with the help of the tide, I went at the rate of a league and a half an hour, as near as I could guess. My master and his friends continued on the shore till I was almost out of sight; and I often heard the sorrel nag (who always loved me) crying out, “HNUY ILLA NYHA, MAJAH YAHOO;” “Take care of thyself, gentle YAHOO.”

My design was, if possible, to discover some small island uninhabited, yet sufficient, by my labour, to furnish me with the necessaries of life, which I would have thought a greater happiness, than to be first minister in the politest court of Europe; so horrible was the idea I conceived of returning to live in the society, and under the government of YAHOOs. For in such a solitude as I desired, I could at least enjoy my own thoughts, and reflect with delight on the virtues of those inimitable HOUYHNHNMS, without an opportunity of degenerating into the vices and corruptions of my own.
The reader may remember what I related, when my crew conspired against me, and confined me to my cabin; how I continued there several weeks without knowing what course we took; and when I was put ashore in the long-boat, how the sailors told me, with oaths, whether true or false, “that they knew not in what part of the world we were.” However, I did then believe us to be about 10 degrees southward of the Cape of Good Hope, or about 45 degrees southern latitude, as I gathered from some general words I overheard among them, being I supposed to the south-east in their intended voyage to Madagascar. And although this were little better than conjecture, yet I resolved to steer my course eastward, hoping to reach the south-west coast of New Holland, and perhaps some such island as I desired lying westward of it. The wind was full west, and by six in the evening I computed I had gone eastward at least eighteen leagues; when I spied [made out] a very small island about half a league off, which I soon reached. It was nothing but a rock, with one creek naturally arched by the force of tempests. Here I put in my canoe, and climbing a part of the rock, I could plainly discover land to the east, extending from south to north. I lay all night in my canoe; and repeating my voyage early in the morning, I arrived in seven hours to the south-east point of New Holland. This confirmed me in the opinion I have long entertained, that the maps and charts place this country at least three degrees more to the east than it really is; which thought I communicated many years ago to my worthy friend, Mr. Herman Moll, and gave him my reasons for it, although he has rather chosen to follow other authors.

I saw no inhabitants in the place where I landed, and being unarmed, I was afraid of venturing far into the country. I found some shellfish on the shore, and ate them raw, not daring to kindle a fire, for fear of being discovered by the natives. I continued three days feeding on oysters and limpets, to save my own provisions; and I fortunately found a brook of excellent water, which gave me great relief.

No vi habitantes en el sitio donde desembarqué, y, como iba desarmado, tuve miedo de internarme en el país. Encontré en la playa algunos mariscos, que comí crudos, pues temía que haciendo fuego me descubriesen los indígenas. Pasé tres días más alimentándome de ostras y lápades, a fin de ahorrarme víveres, y por ventura encontré un arroyo de agua excelente, la que me sirvió de gran alivio.
On the fourth day, venturing out early a little too far, I saw twenty or thirty natives upon a height not above five hundred yards from me. They were stark naked, men, women, and children, round a fire, as I could discover by the smoke. One of them spied [made out] me, and gave notice to the rest; five of them advanced toward me, leaving the women and children at the fire. I made what haste I could to the shore, and, getting into my canoe, shoved off: the savages, observing me retreat, ran after me: and before I could get far enough into the sea, discharged an arrow which wounded me deeply on the inside of my left knee: I shall carry the mark to my grave. I apprehended the arrow might be poisoned, and paddling out of the reach of their darts (being a calm day), I made a shift to suck the wound, and dress it as well as I could.

I was at a loss what to do, for I durst not return to the same landing-place, but stood to the north, and was forced to paddle, for the wind, though very gentle, was against me, blowing northwest. As I was looking about for a secure landing-place, I saw a sail to the north-north-east, which appearing every minute more visible, I was in some doubt whether I should wait for them or not; but at last my detestation of the YAHOO race prevailed: and turning my canoe, I sailed and paddled together to the south, and got into the same creek whence I set out in the morning, choosing rather to trust myself among these barbarians, than live with European YAHOOs. I drew up my canoe as close as I could to the shore, and hid myself behind a stone by the little brook, which, as I have already said, was excellent water.

The ship came within half a league of this creek, and sent her long boat with vessels to take in fresh water (for the place, it seems, was very well known); but I did not observe it, till the boat was almost on shore; and it was too late to seek another hiding-place. The seamen at their landing observed my canoe, and rummaging it all over, easily conjectured that the owner could not be far off. Four of them, well armed, searched every cranny and lurking-hole, till at last

El cuarto día me aventuré por la mañana temprano un poco más al interior, y vi veinte o treinta indígenas en una loma, no más de quinientas yardas de mí. Estaban por completo desnudos, hombres, mujeres y chicos, alrededor de una hoguera, según pude conocer por el humo. Uno de ellos me advirtió y dio cuenta a los demás; avanzaron hacia mi cinco, dejando a las mujeres y los chicos junto al fuego. Corri a la costa todo lo ligero que pude, y saltando a la cañoa emprendí la retirada. Los salvajes, al ver mi huida, corrieron tras de mí, y sin darme tiempo a entrarme bastante en el mar, me disparamaron una flecha que me produjo una profunda herida en la cara interna de la rodilla izquierda, de la que tendré cicatriz mientras viva. Temiendo que la flecha estuviese envenenada, una vez que a fuerza de remos —el día estaba en calma— me puse fuera del alcance de sus dardos, me hice la succión de la herida y me la curé como pude.

No sabía qué partido tomar, pues no me atrevía a volver al mismo desembarcadero, sino que me mantenía al Norte a fuerza de remo, porque el viento, aunque suave, me era contrario y me arrastraba al Noroeste. Buscabas con la vista un desembarcadero seguro, cuando vi una embarcación al Nornordeste, que se hacía más visible por minutos. Dudé si aguardarla o no; pero al fin pudo más mi aversión a la raza yahoo, y, volviendo la cañoa, hui a vela y remo hacia el Sur y entré en la misma caleta de donde había partido por la mañana, más dispuesto a aventurarme entre aquellos bárbaros que a vivir entre yahoos europeos. Acerqué la cañoa a la playa todo lo que pude y me escondí detrás de una piedra cerca del arroyuelo, que, como he dicho ya, era de agua riquísima.

El barco llegó a menos de media legua de esta ensenada y envió la lancha con vasijas para hacer agua —pues, a lo que parece, el lugar era muy conocido—; pero yo no lo advertí hasta que casi estaba el bote en la playa y ya era demasiado tarde para buscar otro escondite. Los marineros, al saltar a tierra, vieron mi cañoa, y después de registrarla minuciosamente coligieron que el propietario no debía de encontrarse lejos de allí. Cuatro de ellos, bien armados, buscaron por todas las grietas y rincones, hasta que por fin me encon-
they found me flat on my face behind the stone. They gazed awhile in admiration at my strange uncouth dress; my coat made of skins, my wooden-soled shoes, and my furred stockings; whence, however, they concluded, I was not a native of the place, who all go naked. One of the seamen, in Portuguese, bid me rise, and asked who I was. I understood that language very well, and getting upon my feet, said, “I was a poor YAHOO banished from the HOUYHNHNMS, and desired they would please to let me depart.” They admired to hear me answer them in their own tongue, and saw by my complexion [tez/cariz] I must be a European; but were at a loss to know what I meant by YAHOOOS and HOUYHNHNMS; and at the same time fell a-laughing at my strange tone in speaking, which resembled the neighing of a horse. I trembled all the while betwixt fear and hatred. I again desired leave to depart, and was gently moving to my canoe; but they laid hold of me, desiring to know, “what country I was of? whence I came?” with many other questions. I told them “I was born in England, whence I came about five years ago, and then their country and ours were at peace. I therefore hoped they would not treat me as an enemy, since I meant them no harm, but was a poor YAHOO seeking some desolate place where to pass the remainder of his unfortunate life.”

When they began to talk, I thought I never heard or saw anything more unnatural; for it appeared to me as monstrous as if a dog or a cow should speak in England, or a YAHOO in HOUYHNHNMLAND. The honest Portuguese were equally amazed at my strange dress, and the odd manner of delivering my words, which, however, they understood very well. They spoke to me with great humanity, and said, “they were sure the captain would carry me GRATIS to Lisbon, whence I might return to my own country; that two of the seamen would go back to the ship, inform the captain of what they had seen, and receive his orders; in the mean time, unless I would give my solemn oath not to fly, they would secure me by force.” I thought it best to comply with

traron acostado boca abajo detrás de la piedra. Contemplaron por buen espacio con admiración mi traje singular, mi chaqueta hecha de pieles, mis zapatos con piso de madera, mis medias forradas de piel, lo que por lo pronto les sirvió para conocer que yo no era natural de aquella tierra, en que todos van desnudos. Uno de los marineros me dijo en portugués que me levantase y me preguntó quién era. Yo sabía este idioma muy bien, y poniéndome en pie respondí que era pobre yaho desterrado del país de los houyhnhnms, y suplicaba que me permitiesen partir. Se asombraron ellos de oírme hablar en su propia lengua, y por el color de mi piel pensaron que debía de ser europeo; pero no les era posible comprender lo que yo quería decir con mis yahoos y mis houyhnhnms, y al mismo tiempo les provocaba la risa el extraño tono de mi habla, que se parecía al relincho de un caballo. Temblaba yo, en tanto, de miedo y de odio, y de nuevo pedí licencia para partir y fui a acercarme poco a poco a la canoa; mas se apoderaron de mí con la pretensión de que les contestase quién era, de dónde venía y a muchas preguntas más. Les dije que había nacido en Inglaterra, de donde había salido hacía unos cinco años, época en que su país y el nuestro vivían en paz. Y esperaba, en consecuencia, que no me tratasen como enemigo, ya que no hacía daño ninguno, pues era un pobre yaho que buscaba un lugar desolado donde pasar el resto de su infortunada vida.
their proposal. They were very curious to know my story, but I gave them very little satisfaction, and they all conjectured that my misfortunes had impaired my reason. In two hours the boat, which went laden with vessels of water, returned, with the captain’s command to fetch me on board. I fell on my knees to preserve my liberty; but all was in vain; and the men, having tied me with cords, heaved me into the boat, whence I was taken into the ship, and thence into the captain’s cabin.

15 His name was Pedro de Mendez; he was a very courteous and generous person. He entreated [besought] me to give some account of myself, and desired to know what I would eat or drink; said, “I should be used as well as himself;” and spoke so many obliging things, that I wondered to find such civilities from a YAHOO. However, I remained silent and sullen; I was ready to faint at the very smell of him and his men. At last I desired something to eat out of my own canoe; but he ordered me a chicken, and some excellent wine, and then directed that I should be put to bed in a very clean cabin. I would not undress myself, but lay on the bed-clothes, and in half an hour stole out, when I thought the crew was at dinner, and getting to the side of the ship, was going to leap into the sea, and swim for the water, returned, with the captain’s boat, which went laden with vessels of water, and getting to the side of the ship, was going to leap into the sea, and swim for the country where they set me on shore, and of my five years residence there. All was in vain; and the men, having tied me with cords, heaved me into the boat, whence I was taken into the ship, and thence into the captain’s cabin.

40 After dinner, Don Pedro came to me, and desired to know my reason for so desperate an attempt; assured me, “he only meant to do me all the service he was able;” and spoke so very movingly, that at last I descended to treat him like an animal which had some little portion of reason. I gave him a very short relation of my voyage; of the conspiracy against me by my own men; of the country where they set me on shore, and of my five years residence there. All which he looked upon as if it were a dream or a vision; whereat I took great offence; for I had quite forgot the faculty of lying, so peculiar to YAHOOs, in all countries where they preside, and, consequently, their disposition of suspecting truth in others of their own species. I asked him, “whether it were jor sería allanarme a su proposición. Mostraron gran curiosidad por saber mi historia, pero yo les di satisfacción muy escasa; por donde vinieron a pensar que las desventuras me habían vuelto el juicio. Al cabo de dos horas, el bote, que marchó cargado de vasijas de agua, volvió con orden del capitán de llevarme a bordo. Cai de rodillas implorando mi libertad; pero todo en vano; los hombres, después de amarrarme con cuerdas, me llevaron al bote, de éste al barco y luego al cuarto del capitán. Llamábame éste Pedro de Méndez. Era hombre muy amable y generoso. Me rogó le dijese quién era y qué quería comer o beber; añadió que se me trataría como a él mismo, y tantas cortesías más, que me sorprendió recibir tales atenciones de un yaho. No obstante, yo permanecía silencioso y taciturno; solamente el olor que exhalaban él y sus hombres me tenia a punto de desvanecerme. Por último, pedí que me llevaran de mi canoa algo que comer; pero el capitán hizo que me sirviesen un pollo y vino excelente, y mandó luego que me llevaran a acostar en un muy aseado camarote. No me desnudé, sino que me eché sobre las ropas de la cama, y a la media hora, cuando calculé que la tripulación estaba comiendo, me escabullí, corrí al costado del navío e iba a arrojarme al agua, más dispuesto a lucir con las olas que a seguir entre yahoes. Pero un marinero me lo impidió, e informado el capitán, me encadenaron en el camarote. Después de comer fue a verme don Pedro, y me pidió que le dijese la razón de tan desesperado intento. Me aseguró que su único propósito era prestarme servicio en todo aquello que pudiera, yabló, en suma, tan afectuosamente, que al fin descendí a tratarle como a un animal dotado de una pequeña dosis de razón. Le hice una corta relación de mi viaje, de la conjura de mi gente contra mí, del país en que me desembarcaron y de mi estancia allí durante tres años. Él consideró todo aquello un sueño o una alucinación, de lo que yo recibí gran ofensa, pues había olvidado completamente la facultad de mentir, tan peculiar en los yahoes en todos los países en que dominan, y la consiguiente predisposición a poner en duda las verdades de los de su misma especie. Le pregunté si en su país
the custom in his country to say the thing which was not?” I assured him, “I had almost forgot what he meant by falsehood, and if I had lived a thousand years in HOUYHNHNMLAND, I should never have heard a lie from the meanest servant; that I was altogether indifferent whether he believed me or not; but, however, in return for his favours, I would give so much allowance to the corruption of his nature, as to answer any objection he would please to make, and then he might easily discover the truth.”

The captain, a wise man, after many endeavours to catch me tripping in some part of my story, at last began to have a better opinion of my veracity. But he added, “that since I professed so inviolable an attachment to truth, I must give him my word and honour to bear him company in this voyage, without attempting any thing against my life; or else he would continue me a prisoner till we arrived at Lisbon.” I gave him the promise he required; but at the same time protested, “that I would suffer the greatest hardships, rather than return to live among YAHOOOS.”

Our voyage passed without any considerable accident. In gratitude to the captain, I sometimes sat with him, at his earnest request, and strove to conceal my antipathy against human kind, although it often broke out; which he suffered to pass without observation. But the greatest part of the day I confined myself to my cabin, to avoid seeing any of the crew. The captain had often entreated [besought] me to strip myself of my savage dress, and offered to lend me the best suit of clothes he had. This I would not be prevailed on to accept, abhoring to cover myself with any thing that had been on the back of a YAHOO. I only desired he would lend me two clean shirts, which, having been washed since he wore them, I believed would not so much defile me. These I changed every second day, and washed them myself.

We arrived at Lisbon, Nov. 5, 1715.

At our landing, the captain forced me to cover myself with his cloak, to prevent the rabble from crowding about me. I was conveyed to his own house; and at my earnest request he led me up habia la costumbre de decir la cosa que no era; le aseguré que casi había olvidado lo que él designaba con la palabra «falsedad», y que así hubiera vivido mil años en Houyhnhnmlandia no hubiese oído una mentira al criado más ruin; y añadí que me era por completo indiferente que me creyese o no, aunque, por corresponder a sus favores, estaba dispuesto a conceder a su naturaleza corrompida la indulgencia de contestar cualquier objeción que quisiera hacerme, y así, él mismo podría fácilmente descubrir la verdad.

El capitán, hombre de gran discreción, luego de intentar varias veces conseguir en renuncios sobre alguna parte de mi historia, empezó a concebir mejor opinión de mi veracidad. Pero me pidió, ya que profesaba a la verdad tan inviolable acatamiento, que le diese palabra de honor de acompañarle en el viaje sin atentar contra mi vida, pues de otro modo tendría que considerarme prisionero hasta que llegásemos a Lisboa. Le hice la promesa que me pedia, pero al mismo tiempo protesté que, antes de volver a vivir entre los yahoos, prefería sufrir las mayores penalidades.

La travesía transcurrió sin ningún incidente digno de referencia. A veces, por gratitud hacia el capitán y a insistente requerimiento suyo, me sentaba con él y me esforzaba en ocultar mi antipatía hacia la especie humana, que, sin embargo, estallaba a menudo a pesar mío, lo que él toleraba sin decir nada. Pero la mayor parte del día me lo pasaba encerrado en mi camarote para no ver a ninguno de la tripulación. El capitán quiso muchas veces convidarme de que me despojara de mis vestiduras salvajes y me ofreció prestarme el traje mejor que tenía, aunque no pude conseguir que lo aceptara, pues aborrecía cubrirme con nada que hubiese tenido un yaho sobre su cuerpo. Solamente le pedí que me prestara dos camisas limpias, que, lavadas después de usadas, creía yo que no me ensuciarian tanto. Me las cambiaba un día si y otro no y las lavaba yo mismo.

Llegamos a Lisboa el 5 de noviembre de 1715. Al desembarcar me obligó el capitán a cubrirme con su capa, para impedir que la gente me rodease. Me llevó a su casa, y a formal requerimiento mío me instaló en la habitación trasera
to the highest room backwards. I conjured him “to conceal from all persons what I had told him of the HOUYHNHNMS; because the least hint of such a story would not only draw numbers of people to see me, but probably put me in danger of being imprisoned, or burnt by the Inquisition.” The captain persuaded me to accept a suit of clothes newly made; but I would not suffer the tailor to take my measure; however, Don Pedro being almost of my size, they fitted me well enough. He accoutred me with other necessaries, all new, which I aired for twenty-four hours before I would use them.

The captain had no wife, nor above three servants, none of which were suffered to attend at meals; and his whole deportment was so obliging, added to very good human understanding, that I really began to tolerate his company. He gained so far upon me, that I ventured to look out of the back window. By degrees I was brought into another room, whence I peeped into the street, but drew my head back in a fright. In a week’s time he seduced me down to the door. I found my terror gradually lessened, but my hatred and contempt seemed to increase. I was at last bold enough to walk the street in his company, but kept my nose well stopped with rue, or sometimes with tobacco.

In ten days, Don Pedro, to whom I had given some account of my domestic affairs, put it upon me, as a matter of honour and conscience, “that I ought to return to my native country, and live at home with my wife and children.” He told me, “there was an English ship in the port just ready to sail, and he would furnish me with all things necessary.” It would be tedious to repeat his arguments, and my contradictions. He said, “it was altogether impossible to find such a solitary island as I desired to live in; but I might command in my own house, and pass my time in a manner as recluse as I pleased.”

I complied at last, finding I could not do better. I left Lisbon the 24th day of November, in an English merchantman, but who was the master I never inquired. Don Pedro accompanied me to the ship, and lent me twenty pounds. He took más alta. Le rogué encarecidamente que ocultase a todo el mundo lo que yo le había dicho de los houyhnhnms, pues la menor insinuación de tal historia no sólo atraería a verme gentes en gran número, sino que probablemente me pondría en riesgo de ser encarcelado o quemado por la Inquisición. El capitán me persuadió para que aceptase un traje nuevo, pero no quise consentir que el sastre me tomase medida; sin embargo, como don Pedro venía a ser de mi cuerpo, me sentó no mal el vestido hecho como para él. Me equipó de otras cosas necesarias, todas nuevas, que aireé veinticuatro horas antes de usarlas.

El capitán no tenía esposa ni más que tres criados, a los cuales no se permitía servir la mesa; y su conducta obsequiosísima, unida a un clarísimo entendimiento humano, me hicieron en verdad ir tolerando su compañía. Tanto llegó a influir en mí, que me aventuré a mirar por la ventana trasera. Poco a poco me llevó a otra habitación, desde donde me asomé a la calle; pero aparté la cabeza horrorizado. En una semana consiguió que bajase a la puerta. Noté que mi terror disminuía gradualmente, mas parecían aumentar mi odio y mi desprecio. Al fin tuve el valor de pasear por la calle en su compañía, pero tapándome bien las narices con ruda o a veces con tabaco.

A los diez días, don Pedro, a quien yo había dado cuenta de mis asuntos domésticos, me presentó como caso de honor y de conciencia la obligación de volver a mi país natal y vivir con mi mujer y mis hijos. Dijome que había en el puerto un barco inglés próximo a darse a la vela y que él me proporcionaría todo lo preciso. Sería cansado repetir sus argumentos y mis contradicciones. Me hizo observar que era de todo punto imposible encontrar islas solitarias como en la que yo quería vivir; en cambio, dueño en mi casa, podía pasar en ella mi vida tan retirado como me acomodase.
kind leave of me, and embraced me at parting, which I bore as well as I could. During this last voyage I had no commerce with the master or any of his men; but, pretending I was sick, kept close in my cabin. On the fifth of December, 1715, we cast anchor in the Downs, about nine in the morning, and at three in the afternoon I got safe to my house at Rotherhithe. (7)

My wife and family received me with great surprise and joy, because they concluded me certainly dead; but I must freely confess the sight of them filled me only with hatred, disgust, and contempt; and the more, by reflecting on the near alliance I had to them. For although, since my unfortunate exile from the Houyhnhnm country, I had compelled myself to tolerate the sight of Yahoos, and to converse with Don Pedro de Méndez, yet my memory and imagination were perpetually filled with the virtues and ideas of those exalted Houyhnhnms. And when I began to consider that, by copulating with one of the Yahoo species I had become a parent of more, it struck me with the utmost shame, confusion, and horror.

As soon as I entered the house, my wife took me in her arms, and kissed me; at which, having not been used to the touch of that odious animal for so many years, I fell into a swoon for almost an hour. At the time I am writing, it is five years since my last return to England. During the first year, I could not endure my wife or children in my presence; the very smell of them was intolerable; much less could I suffer them to eat in the same room. To this hour they dare not presume to touch my bread, or drink out of the same cup, neither was I ever able to let one of them take me by the hand. The first money I laid out was to buy two young stone-horses, which I keep in a good stable; and next to them, the groom is my greatest favourite, for I feel my spirits revived by the smell he contracts in the stable. My horses understand me tolerably well; I converse with them at least four hours every day. They are strangers to bridle or saddle; they live in great amity with me and friendship to each other.

Tan pronto como entré en mi casa, mi mujer me abrazó y me besó, y como llevaba ya tantos años sin sufrir contacto con este aborrecible animal, me tomó un desmayo por más de una hora. Cuando escribo esto hace cinco años que regresé a Inglaterra. Durante el primero no pude soportar la presencia de mi mujer ni mis hijos; su olor solamente me era insoportable, y mucho menos podía sufrir que comiesen en la misma habitación que yo. En la hora presente no osan tocar mi pan ni beber en mi copa, ni he podido permitir que me coja uno de ellos de la mano. El primer dinero que desembolsé fue para comprar dos caballos jóvenes, que tengo en una buena cuadra, y, después de ellos, el mozo es mi favorito preferido, pues noto que el olor que le comunica la cuadra reanima mi espíritu. Mis caballos me entienden bastante bien; converso con ellos por lo menos cuatro horas al día. Sin conocer freno ni silla, viven en gran amistad conmigo y en intimidad mutua.
CHAPTER XII.

[The author’s veracity. His design in publishing this work. His censure of those travellers who swerve from the truth. The author clears himself from any sinister ends in writing. An objection answered. The method of planting colonies. His native country commended. The right of the crown to those countries described by the author is justified. The difficulty of conquering them. The author takes his last leave of the reader; proposes his manner of living for the future; gives good advice, and concludes.]

Thus, gentle reader, I have given thee a faithful history of my travels for sixteen years and above seven months: wherein I have not been so studious of ornament as of truth. I could, perhaps, like others, have astonished thee with strange improbable tales; but I rather chose to relate plain matter of fact, in the simplest manner and style; because my principal design was to inform, and not to amuse thee.

It is easy for us who travel into remote countries, which are seldom visited by Englishmen or other Europeans, to form descriptions of wonderful animals both at sea and land. Whereas a traveller’s chief aim should be to make men wiser and better, and to improve their minds by the bad, as well as good, example of what they deliver concerning foreign places.

I could heartily wish a law was enacted, that every traveller, before he were permitted to publish his voyages, should be obliged to make oath before the Lord High Chancellor, that all he intended to print was absolutely true to the best of his knowledge; for then the world would no longer be deceived, as it usually is, while some writers, to make their works pass the better upon the public, impose the grossest falsities on the unwary reader. I have perused several books of travels with great delight in my younger days; but having since gone over most parts of the globe, and been able to contradict many fabulous accounts from my own observation, it has given me a great

heartily adv. 1 in a hearty manner; with goodwill, appetite, or courage. 2 very; to a great degree (esp. with ref. to personal feelings) (am heartily sick of it; disliked him heartily). (estar completamente harto) sinceramente, cordialmente, enérgicamente, fuertemente, (laugh) a carcajadas, (eat) con buen apetito, (thank) con efusión, (sing) con entusiasmo
disgust against this part of reading, and some indignation to see the credulity of mankind so impudently abused.

Therefore, since my acquaintance were pleased to think my poor endeavours might not be unacceptable to my country, I imposed on myself, as a maxim never to be swerved from, that I would strictly adhere to truth; neither indeed can I be ever under the least temptation to vary from it, while I retain in my mind the lectures and example of my noble master and the other illustrious HOUYHNHNMS of whom I had so long the honour to be an humble hearer.

-Nec si miserum Fortuna Sinonem Finxit, Vanum etiam, Mendacemque Improba finget.

I know very well, how little reputation is to be got by writings which require neither genius nor learning, nor indeed any other talent, except a good memory, or an exact journal. I know likewise, that writers of travels, like dictionary-makers, are sunk into oblivion by the weight and bulk of those who come last, and therefore lie uppermost. And it is highly probable, that such travellers, who shall hereafter visit the countries described in this work of mine, may, by detecting my errors (if there be any), and adding many new discoveries of their own, justly oust me out of vogue, and stand in my place, making the world forget that ever I was an author. This indeed would be too great a mortification, if I wrote for fame: but as my sole intention was the public good, I cannot be altogether disappointed. For who can read of the virtues I have mentioned in the glorious HOUYHNHNMS, without being ashamed of his own vices, when he considers himself as the reasoning, governing animal of his country? I shall say nothing of those remote nations where YAHOOOS preside; among which the least corrupted are the BROBDINGNAGIANS; whose wise maxims in morality and government it would be our happiness to observe. But I forbear [abstain] descanting further, and rather leave the judicious reader to his own remarks and application.

I am not a little pleased that this work of mine can possibly meet with no censurers: for what objections can de lectura y alguna indignación de ver cuán descaradamente se abusa de la credulidad humana. Así, pues que mis amistades quisieron suponer que mis engañosos esfuerzos no resultarían inaceptables para mi país, me obligué, como máxima de que no debía apartarme nunca, a sujetarme puntualmente a la verdad, aunque tampoco podría caer por lo más remoto en la tentación de separarme de ella mientras perduren en mi ánimo las lecciones y los ejemplos de mi noble amo y los otros ilustres houyhnhnms, de quienes tanto tiempo había tenido el honor de ser humilde oyente.

Nec el miserum Fortuna Sinonem Finxit; vanum etiam; inendacemque improba finget.

Demasiado conozco cuán escasa reputación puede alcanzarse con escritos que no requieren talento ni estudio ni dote alguna que no sea una buena memoria o un exacto diario. También sé que quienes escriben de viajes, como quienes hacen diccionarios, se ven sepultados en el olvido por el peso y la masa de aquellos que vienen detrás y, por más nuevos, más perfectos en la mentira. Y es más que probable que los viajeros que en adelante visiten los países que yo en este trabajo doy a conocer, logren, rectificando mis errores, si alguno hubiera, y agregando muchos nuevos descubrimientos de cosecha propia, restar me toda estima, ocupar mi puesto y hacen que el mundo olvide si yo fui autor jamás. Esto sería, sin duda, cruel mortificación si yo escribíese en busca de fama; pero como mi aspiración sólo fue el bien general, no ha de servirme en ningún modo de desengaño. Pues, ¿quién podrá leer lo que yo refiero de las virtudes de los gloriosos houyhnhnms sin sentir vergüenza de sus vicios cuando se considere el animal dominante y razonador de su país? Nadie diré de aquellas remotas naciones en que gobiernan yahoos, entre las cuales es la menos corrompida la de los brodingnagianos, cuyas sabias máximas de moral y de gobierno serían nuestra felicidad si diésemos en observarlas. Pero dejo los comentarios, y al juicioso lector, que por cuenta propia haga observaciones y establezca analogías.

Me produce no pequeña satisfacción pensar que no es posible que esta mi obra encuentre censores; pues ¿qué objeciones
be made against a writer, who relates only plain facts, that happened in such distant countries, where we have not the least interest, with respect either to trade or negotiations? I have carefully avoided every fault with which common writers of travels are often too justly charged. Besides, I meddle not the least with any party, but write without passion, prejudice, or ill-will against any man, or number of men, whatsoever. I write for the noblest end, to inform and instruct mankind; over whom I may, without breach of modesty, pretend to some superiority, from the advantages I received by conversing so long among the most accomplished HOUVYHNNMS. I write without any view to profit or praise. I never suffer a word to pass that may look like reflection, or possibly give the least offence, even to those who are most ready to take it. So that I hope I may with justice pronounce myself an author perfectly blameless; against whom the tribes of Answerers, Considerers, Observers, Reflectors, Detectors, Remarkers, will never be able to find matter for exercising their talents.

I confess, it was whispered to me, “that I was bound in duty, as a subject of England, to have given in a memorial to a secretary of state at my first coming over; because, whatever lands are discovered by a subject belong to the crown.” But I doubt whether our conquests in the countries I treat of would be as easy as those of Ferdinando Cortez over the naked Americans. The LILLIPUTIANS, I think, are hardly worth the charge of a fleet and army to reduce them; and I question whether it might be prudent or safe to attempt the BROBDINGNAGIANS; or whether an English army would be much at their ease with the Flying Island over their heads. The HOUVYHNNMS indeed appear not to be so well prepared for war, a science to which they are perfect strangers, and especially against massive weapons. However, supposing myself to be a minister of state, I could never give my advice for invading them. Their prudence, unanimity, unacquaintedness with fear, and their love of their country, would amply supply all defects in the military art. Imagine twenty thousand of
them breaking into the midst of an European army, confounding the ranks, overturning the carriages, battering the warriors’ faces into mummy by terrible yers from their hinder hoofs; for they would well deserve the character given to Augustus, RECALCITRAT UNDIQUE TUTUS. But, instead of proposals for conquering that magnanimous nation, I rather wish they were in a capacity, or disposition, to send a sufficient number of their inhabitants for civilizing Europe, by teaching us the first principles of honour, justice, temperance, public spirit, fortitude, chastity, friendship, benevolence, and fidelity. The names of all which virtues are still retained among us in most languages, and are to be met with in modern, as well as ancient authors; which I am able to assert from my own small reading.

But I had another reason, which made me less forward to enlarge his majesty’s dominions by my discoveries. To say the truth, I had conceived a few scruples with relation to the distributive justice of princes upon those occasions. For instance, a crew of pirates are driven by a storm they know not whither; at length a boy discovers land from the topmast; they go on shore to rob and plunder, they see a harmless people, are entertained with kindness; they give the country a new name; they take formal possession of it for their king; they set up a rotten plank, or a stone, for a memorial; they murder two or three dozen of the natives, bring away a couple more, by force, for a sample; return home, and get their pardon. Here commences a new dominion acquired with a title by divine right. Ships are sent with the first opportunity; the natives driven out or destroyed; their princes tortured to discover their gold; a free license given to all acts of inhumanity and lust, the earth reeking with the blood of its inhabitants: and this execrable crew of butchers, employed in so pious an expedition, is a modern colony, sent to convert and civilize an idolatrous and barbarous people!

But this description, I confess, does by no means affect the British nation, who may be an example to the whole

Imagínense veinte mil de ellos lanzándose en medio de un ejército europeo, desordenando sus filas, volcando sus carros, destrozando la cara a los guerreros con terribles sacudidas de sus patas traseras; sin duda que se harían dignos de la reputación de Augusto: Recalcitat undique tutus. Pero, en vez de proyectos para conquistar aquella nación magnánima, preferiría yo que ellos pudieran y quisieran enviar suficiente número de sus habitantes para civilizar a Europa, instruyéndonos en los elementales principios del honor, la justicia, la verdad, la templanza, el espíritu público, la fortaleza, la castidad, la amistad, la benevolencia y la fidelidad. Virtudes todas éstas cuyos nombres se conservan aún entre nosotros en la mayoría de los idiomas, y se encuentran así en los autores modernos como los antiguos, según puedo aseverar fundado en mis escasas lecturas.

Pero había otra razón que me detenía en el camino de aumentar los dominios de Su Majestad con mis descubrimientos. A decir verdad, había concebido algunos escrúpulos respecto de la justicia distributiva de los príncipes en tales ocasiones. Por ejemplo: una banda de piratas es arrastrada por la tempestad no saben adonde; por fin, un grumete descubre tierra desde el mastelero; desembarcan para robar y saquear; encuentran un pueblo sencillo, que los recibe con amabilidad; toman de él formal posesión en nombre de su rey; erigen en señal un tablón podrido o una piedra; asesinan a dos o tres docenas de indígenas; se llevan por la fuerza una pareja como muestra; regresan a su patria y alcanzan el perdón. Aquí comienza un nuevo dominio, adquirido con título de derecho divino. Se envían barcos en la primera oportunidad; se expulsa o se destruye a los naturales; se tortura a sus príncipes para obligarlos a declarar dónde tienen su oro; se concede plena autorización para todo acto de inhumanidad y lascivia, y la tierra despide vaho de la sangre de sus moradores. Y esta execrable cuadrilla de carníceros, empleada en esta piadosa expedición, es una colonia moderna, enviada para convertir y civilizar a un pueblo idólatra y bárbaro.

Pero reconozco que esta descripción en ningún modo se refiere a la nación británica, que puede servir de ejemplo a
world for their wisdom, care, and justice in planting colonies; their liberal endowments for the advancement of religion and learning; their choice of devout and able pastors to propagate Christianity; their caution in stockling their provinces with people of sober lives and conversations from this the mother kingdom; their strict regard to the distribution of justice, in supplying the civil administration through all their colonies with officers of the greatest abilities, utter strangers to corruption; and, to crown all, by sending the most vigilant and virtuous governors, who have no other views than the happiness of the people over whom they preside, and the honour of the king their master.

But as those countries which I have described do not appear to have any desire of being conquered and enslaved, murdered or driven out by colonies, nor abound either in gold, silver, sugar, or tobacco, I did humbly conceive, they were by no means proper objects of our zeal, our valour, or our interest. However, if those whom it more concerns think fit to be of another opinion, I am ready to depose, when I shall be lawfully called, that no European did ever visit those countries before me. I mean, if the inhabitants ought to be believed, unless a dispute may arise concerning the two YAHOOs, said to have been seen many years ago upon a mountain in HOUYHNHNMLAND.

But, as to the formality of taking possession in my sovereign’s name, it never came once into my thoughts; and if it had, yet, as my affairs then stood, I should perhaps, in point of prudence and self-preservation, have put it off to a better opportunity.

Having thus answered the only objection that can ever be raised against me as a traveller, I here take a final leave of all my courteous readers, and return to enjoy my own speculations in my little garden at Redriff; to apply those excellent lessons of virtue which I learned among the HOUYHNHNMS; to instruct the YAHOOs of my own family, is far as I shall find them docible
todo el mundo por su sabiduría, cuidado y justicia en establecer colonias; sus liberales consignaciones para el progreso de la religión y la cultura; su elección de pastores devotos y capaces para propagar el cristianismo; su precaución de poblar las provincias con gentes de vida y conservación moderadas, enviadas de la madre patria; su riguroso celo en la administración de justicia, designando para el ministerio civil, en todas y cada parte de sus colonias, funcionarios de la mayor competencia, totalmente inaccesibles a la corrupción, y, por coronarlo todo, su tino para enviar a los más vigilantes y virtuosos gobernadores, que no tienen más aspiración que la felicidad de los pueblos que dirigen y el honor del rey su señor.

Pero como los pueblos que yo he descrito no parecen tener el menor deseo de ser conquistados y esclavizados, asesinados ni expulsados por colonias ni abundan en oro, plata, azúcar ni tabaco, juzgué humildemente que no eran de ningún modo objeto apropiado para nuestro celo, nuestro valor y nuestro interés. No obstante, si aquellos a quienes más directamente importa encuentran de su gusto sustentar contraria opinión, estoy dispuesto a declarar, cuando se me requiera legalmente, que ningún europeo visitó aquellos países antes que yo. Es decir, si hemos de creer a los naturales.

Pero, por lo que hace a la formalidad de tomar posesión en nombre de mi soberano, jamás me pasó por las mientes; y aunque se me hubiera pasado, visto el giro que mis asuntos llevaban por entonces, quizá lo hubiera diferido, por prudencia e instinto de conservación, para mejor oportunidad.

Contestada con esto la única objeción que como viajero pudiera ponérmeme, me despido por fin en este punto de todos mis amados lectores y me vuelvo a absorberme en mis meditaciones y a mi pequeño jardín de Redriff; a poner por obra aquellas sabias lecciones de virtud que aprendí entre los houyhnhnms; a instruir a los yahoos de mi familia hasta donde llegue su condición de animal dócil; a mirar fre-
animals; to behold my figure often in a glass, and thus, if possible, habituate myself by time to tolerate the sight of a human creature; to lament the brutality to HOUYHNHNMS in my own country, but always treat their persons with respect, for the sake of my noble master, his family, his friends, and the whole HOUYHNHNMI race, whom these of ours have the honour to resemble in all their lineaments, however their intellects came to degenerate.

I began last week to permit my wife to sit at dinner with me, at the farthest end of a long table; and to answer (but with the utmost brevity) the few questions I asked her. Yet, the smell of a YAHOO continuing very offensive, I always keep my nose well stopped with rue, lavender, or tobacco leaves. And, although it be hard for a man late in life to remove old habits, I am not altogether out of hopes, in some time, to suffer a neighbour YAHOO in my company, without the apprehensions I am yet under of his teeth or his claws.

My reconcilement to the YAHOO kind in general might not be so difficult, if they would be content with those vices and follies only which nature has entitled them to. I am not in the least provoked at the sight of a lawyer, a pickpocket, a colonel, a fool, a lord, a gamester, a politician, a whoremonger, a physician, an evidence, a subornor, an attorney, a traitor, or the like; this is all according to the due course of things: but when I behold a lump of deformity and diseases, both in body and mind, smitten [hit] with pride, it immediately breaks all the measures of my patience; neither shall I be ever able to comprehend how such an animal, and such a vice, could tally together. The wise and virtuous HOUYHNHNMS, who abound in all excellences that can adorn a rational creature, have no name for this vice in their language, which has no terms to express anything that is evil, except those whereby they describe the detestable qualities of their YAHOOES, among which they were not able to distinguish this of pride, for want of thoroughly understanding human nature, as it shows itself in other countries where that animal presides. But I, who had more experience, could plainly ob-

La semana pasada empecé a permitir a mi mujer que se sentase a comer conmigo, en el extremo más apartado de una larga mesa, y me contestara, aunque con la mayor brevedad, a unas cuantas preguntas que le hice. Sin embargo, como el olor de los yahoos sigue molestandome mucho, tengo siempre la nariz bien taponada con hojas de ruda, espliego o tabaco. Y aun cuando es dificil para un hombre perder en época avanzada de la vida añejas costumbres, no dejo de tener esperanzas de poder tolerar en algún tiempo la próxima compañía de un yahoo sin el recelo que aun me inspiran sus clientes y sus garras.

Mi reconciliación con la especie yahoon en general no seria tan dificil si ellos se contentaran sólo con los vicios y las insensateces que la Naturaleza les ha otorgado. No me causa el más pequeño enojo la vista de un abogado, un ratero, un coronel, un necio, un lord, un tahúr, un politico, un médico, un de- lator, un cohechador, un procurador, un traidor y otros parecidos; todo ello está en el curso natural de las cosas. Pero cuando contemplo una masa informe de fealdades y enfermedades, así del cuerpo como del espíritu, forjada a golpes de orgullo, ello excede los limites de mi paciencia, y jamás comprenderé cómo tal animal y tal vicio pueden ajustarse. Los sabios y virtuosos houyhnhnms, que abundan en todas las excelencias que pueden adornar a un ser racional, no tienen en su idioma término para designar este vicio, como no lo tienen para expresar nada que signifique el mal, excepto aquellos con que utiliza las detestables cualidades de sus yahoos, y entre ellas no pueden distinguir ésta del orgullo por falta de completo conocimiento de la naturaleza humana, según se muestra en otros países en que este animal gobierna. Pero yo, con mi mayor experiencia pude clara-
serve some rudiments of it among the wild YAHOOOS.

But the HOUYHNHNMS, who live under the government of reason, are no more proud of the good qualities they possess, than I should be for not wanting a leg or an arm; which no man in his wits would boast of, although he must be miserable without them. I dwell the longer upon this subject from the desire I have to make the society of an English YAHOO by any means not insupportable; and therefore I here entreat those who have any tincture of this absurd vice, that they will not presume to come in my sight.

Footnotes:
(1) A stang is a pole or perch; sixteen feet and a half.
(2) An act of parliament has been since passed by which some breaches of trust have been made capital.
(3) Britannia. -SIR W. SCOTT.
(4) London. -SIR W. SCOTT.
(5) This is the revised text adopted by Dr. Hawksworth (1766). The above paragraph in the original editions (1726) takes another form, commencing:—"I told him that should I happen to live in a kingdom where lots were in vogue," &c. The names Tribnia and Langdon are not mentioned, and the "close stool" and its signification do not occur.
(6) This paragraph is not in the original editions.
(7) The original editions and Hawksworth’s have Rotherhith here, though earlier in the work, Redriff is said to have been Gulliver’s home in England.

FIN